IMT Nuremberg Archives

H – 1645

International Court of Justice

H1645 – 0002

Serie 138 !
458
485

H-1645

H1645 – 0004

H1645 - 0005

O r i g i n a l d o k u m e n t

F r i c k Exhibit Nr.: 12

F r i c k Nr.: 39

Vorgelegt von dem Verteidiger

des Angeklagten F r i c k
Rechtsanwalt

H1645 – 0006

H1645 – 0007

INSIDE EUROPE

H1645 – 0008

H1645 – 0009

INSIDE EUROPE

by

JOHN GUNTHER

Eigentümer: Ströhlin

INTERNATIONAL MILITARY TRIBUNAL
NURNBERG, GERMANY
Erick Exhibit 12
April 24 Filed 1946

HAMISH HAMILTON
90 GREAT RUSSELL STREET LONDON

First Published - - - *January 1936*
Second Impression - - - *January 1936*
Third Impression - - - *January 1936*
Fourth Impression - - - *February 1936*
Fifth Impression - - - *March 1936*
Sixth Impression - - - *March 1936*
Seventh Impression - - - *April 1936*
Eighth Impression - - - *May 1936*
Ninth Impression - - - *May 1936*
Tenth Impression - - - *June 1936*
Eleventh Impression - - - *July 1936*

PRINTED IN GUERNSEY, C.I., BRITISH
ISLES, BY THE STAR AND GAZETTE LTD.

H1645 – 0012

To

MY WIFE

In Love and Friendship

H1645 – 0013

PREFACE TO THE NINTH EDITION

EUROPE has had an agitated and exhausting four months since January 1936, when this book first appeared.

The two outstanding events were, of course, the Rhineland crisis in the middle of March and Mussolini's victory in Abyssinia in May. Muddle and alarm, bewilderment and drift, accompanied them throughout Western Europe. The obscene shadow of impending conflict darkened the paths of statesmen in almost every country. War and the fear of war dominated politics from Brussels to Vladivostock. In Moscow Stalin told the Japanese bluntly that aggression in Mongolia would mean war. In England, since the days of isolation appeared to be completely over, the National Government launched an unprecedented rearmament programme, to cost £300,000,000.

Several of the characters in this book had ups or downs early in 1936. Mr. Baldwin's prestige sank almost to the point of invisibility. Mr. Duff Cooper tilted a lance at the pacifist bishops; Sir Thomas Inskip became Minister in charge of the co-ordination of defence (an inexplicable but typically 'Baldwin' appointment); Mr. Churchill and Sir Austen Chamberlain, out of office, grew almost as powerful as ministers in office. . . . In Germany General Goering was given at least platonic precedence over Dr. Schacht. But Goering and Schacht are believed to see eye to eye against the 'radical' machinations of the little Goebbels. . . . General Zivkovitch, the Jugoslav war minister, lost his job. . . . Colonel Veltchev was sentenced to death in Bulgaria and saved from execution by the clemency of King Boris. . . . Europe learned to respect a new and powerful personality, the Belgian prime minister Van Zeeland. . . . The Abyssinian victory was a tremendous personal advertisement for Mussolini. And for poison gas.

France provided some illumination amidst the gloom, for the Front Populaire, the Left coalition, won a resounding victory in the spring election, the first France had had for four

H1645 – 0014

years. In January M. Laval had gone on, as the story had it, trying to save both his faces. He fell finally and has not been heard from since. He was succeeded by a Sarraut-Flandin government. And at Geneva it seemed that M. Flandin was simply M. Laval under a different name. On February 13 a royalist mob gave M. Léon Blum, the socialist leader, a historic bloody nose. The incident led to strong action by the government against the Fascist leagues and it improved the fighting morale of the United Left Front. The ensuing elections gave the Left a clear majority of 144. It seemed that M. Blum would be the first socialist prime minister in the history of the Third Republic, ruling with communist support. The communists increased their vote in the chamber from 10 to 72. But there remained much hard work before M. Blum, the exquisite of the Île St. Louis. Should he tamper with the precious franc, he had the regents of the Banque and the financial oligarchy to deal with.

In Spain too the Left won a stimulating victory. That unhappy tortoise Alcalá Zamora was booted out of the presidency, and was succeeded by none other than Don Manuel Azaña, whose character and accomplishments are sketched in Chapter XII hereunder. Seldom – except in politics – is it given to a man to have a second chance at the same big job. Azaña's return to the premiership and his subsequent elevation to the presidency were a remarkable phenomenon. The elections which made way for him by unseating the quasi-Fascist clerical government were also remarkable, in that a Fascist-inclined Right allowed itself to be *voted* out of power. Azaña wants to build an 'extremely left' Republic. But he must watch carefully; Spain is dangerously turbulent. And the first duty of an efficient democracy is to protect itself.

One event, in British eyes, transcended everything else that occurred early in 1936. It was, of course, the death on January 20 of King George V. This was followed by a mass expression of grief almost unprecedented in modern history. The funeral was a marvellous ritualistic pageant; more than this, it symbolised, in the behaviour of the crowds, the extraordinary community between People and Crown in England.

H1645 – 0015

The reign of King Edward VIII began on a note of sensible modernity. The new monarch broke all precedent by flying to London from Sandringham after his father's death. On March 1 he addressed millions of listeners throughout the Empire on the radio.

Kings and statesmen from all over Europe – including a great number of the *dramatis personae* of this book – assembled in London for King George's funeral. Observers were able to rub their eyes and see M. Litvinov and the Grand Duke Dimitri marching in the same parade. The chief interest in the subsequent conversations was the rivalry between the Germans and the Russians for the friendly eye of Britain. More and more it had become obvious that the overwhelmingly dominant issue of contemporary Europe was the future course of Germany. Mr. Eden listened impartially to Baron von Neurath and M. Litvinov; the Russians on the whole seemed most pleased with the reception they received.

On March 7 (the very day I finished writing the new preface to the fifth edition of this book; and I thought that I had brought it up to date very neatly!) Hitler marched into the demilitarised Rhineland. This provided, in a sense, the greatest European crisis since 1919. Again a great concourse of statesmen gathered in London. They were confronted with an ancient and honourable problem – how to lock the stable door after the horse has fled. Any attentive reader of this book will realise that the Rhineland coup was an inevitable step in German expansionist policy. For ten days the Locarno powers wrangled to find a formula for settlement; finally Herr von Ribbentrop, bringing a more potent cargo than champagne, accepted an academic rebuke by the League Council and presented Hitler's 'peace' plan. Hitler, that incredible creature, had meantime publicly told the world what he really was – a somnambulist! – and had received a 98.81 per cent vote of confidence from the German people.

A tedious and nerve-wracking period of diplomatic jockeying and bargaining ensued. Hitler's victory was complete in that he got what he wanted, the militarisation of the Rhineland. But an emphatic White Paper told him, to his annoyance, that Britain, France, and Belgium were henceforth to

H1645 – 0016

be bound by what amounts to a defensive military alliance against German aggression. Staff talks between Britain, France, and Belgium took place. Mr. Eden sent a questionnaire to Berlin, asking elucidation of some of the points of the peace plan. What was Hitler's attitude to the sanctity of *future* treaties. Could the German project for non-aggression pacts be extended to Soviet Russia. And so on. The questionnaire reached Hitler just as Europe quivered with another severe shock – the flight of Hailé Selassié from Abyssinia and the occupation of Addis Ababa by Italian troops.

This meant that the Abyssinian war, as a military campaign, was concluded. It did not necessarily mean, however, that sanctions against Italy would at once be lifted. A strong movement grew in England to maintain and even to increase sanctions, on the ground that an aggressor should not be allowed to enjoy his fruits of victory. Mussolini, in a huff, withdrew his delegation from Geneva on May 12. Should sanctions be continued – and it became increasingly difficult for Britain to take the lead in raising them – an acute deterioration in Italo-British relations was inevitable. Raising sanctions would, it was thought, entail the collapse of the whole collective system, the wreck of the League, humiliation of Britain vis-à-vis Italy in the Mediterranean, and the ignominious confession of defeat by fifty-two nations at the hands of Mussolini. But to continue sanctions, it was thought, might mean war. Pro-sanctioners and anti-sanctioners furiously argued. Mr. Baldwin drifted in between.

Meantime the perpetual Austrian crisis seemed to be coming once more to a head. The Phoenix Insurance Company scandal provoked almost the same kind of domestic and international nervousness as the Credit Anstalt scandal five years before. The time seemed perfect for a Nazi coup, since Mussolini was still busy in Ethiopia and the French and British could hardly take stronger action over Austria than they took over the Rhineland. The irony would have been celestial had Italy been forced to defend Austria from the Nazis: none other than Mussolini would become the Sir Galahad of Article XVI, the Lord High Protector of the Status Quo. As I write these lines the news comes that Dr. Schuschnigg, the Catholic

H1645 – 0017

chancellor, has eliminated young Prince Starhemberg, the Heimwehr leader, from the Austrian government.

The victory of Hitler in the Rhineland, the victory of Mussolini in Abyssinia, are branches of the same poisonous tree. Qualified as the victories may prove to be, they indubitably represent the at least temporary triumph of swift, hard-hitting Fascism against the slow motion and diffusion of power of the democracies. Hitler and Mussolini may some time come to conflict over Austria; but as things are at present they represent almost identical dynamic forces. What is going on in Europe to-day is a struggle between law and right on the one hand, and the big fist and the machine-gun on the other. The struggle is between respect for international obligations and the most villainous kind of adventurous and predatory nationalism. The adventurers have won two important skirmishes. But democracy may have the final word.

J. G.

London, May 14, 1936.

H1645 – 0018

H1645 – 0019

H1645 – 0020

NOTE

THIS book is written from a definite point of view. It is that the accidents of personality play a great role in history. As Bertrand Russell says, the Russian revolution might not have occurred without Lenin, and modern European development would have been very different if Bismarck had died as a child. The personality of Karl Marx himself has powerfully influenced the economic interpretation of history. Important political, religious, nationalist, as well as economic factors are not, I believe, neglected in this book. But its main trend is personal.

Fascism, the creation of Mussolini, has produced its first war. What will be the next one?

The fact may be an outrage to reason, but it cannot be denied: unresolved personal conflicts in the lives of various European politicians may contribute to the collapse of our civilisation. This is the age of great dictatorial leaders; millions depend for life or death on the will of Hitler, Mussolini, Stalin. Never have politics been so vital and dynamic as today, and so pervasively obtrusive in non-political affairs. The politicians usurp other fields. What fictional drama can compare with the dramatic reality of Mussolini's career? What books in the realm of art have had the sale or influence of Hitler's *Mein Kampf*? What literary craftsman ever wrote history as Trotsky both wrote and made it? Who is a greater engineer than Stalin?

These men and their lesser contemporaries – *couloir* politicians like Laval, crude and boisterous adventurers of the type of Goering, ambitious careerists like Gil Robles in Spain or Goemboes in Hungary, politician-officers like the Polish general Rydz-Smigly, anachronistic Balkan kings like Zog and Carol – are playing decisive roles in the stupendous drama of Europe between wars. It is very difficult to explore usefully the private lives of these men. This is not a peep-hole book.

It contains no gossip for gossip's sake. But it tries to tell the intimate story of these leaders, the personal sources of their power, the reasons for their impact on history. Who are these men who dominate our lives?

The book begins with Hitler, then makes a tour around him. I have tried to note the impingement of Hitler's Germany on every European country, and to include an analysis of every important European situation. We visit, in a counter-clockwise circle, France, Spain, Italy; make a detour upward to that dominant island, England; proceed through the battered countries of Central Europe and the Balkans; finish the circle around Germany with Poland; inspect what we have seen of Western Europe at Geneva; and emerge finally in the Soviet Union. This arrangement has, I hope, a logic of its own.

J. G.

London, January 1, 1936.

H1645 – 0021

H1645 – 0022

CONTENTS

CHAPTER		PAGE
I	HITLER	13
II	PSYCHO-PATHOLOGY OF DICTATORS	29
III	WHO KILLED THE GERMAN REPUBLIC?	44
IV	THE TRICK BY FIRE AND THE PURGE BY BLOOD	57
V	THE TWO G-MEN	77
VI	THE OTHER LITTLE HITLERS	89
VII	WAR, PEACE, POLICY, AND CASH	99
VIII	'LAVALUATION'	118
IX	FRENCH POLICY – AND WHY	128
X	MORE ABOUT FRENCHMEN	144
XI	FASCISM IN FRANCE?	159
XII	INTERLUDE IN SPAIN	172
XIII	MUSSOLINI	186
XIV	WHO ELSE IN ITALY?	207
XV	WAR IN ABYSSINIA	216
XVI	ENGLAND: THE RULING CLASSES	230
XVII	BALDWIN	242
XVIII	MEN OF WHITEHALL	254
XIX	LEFT AND RIGHT IN ENGLAND	274
XX	DANUBE BLUES	285
XXI	THE FEBRUARY TRAGEDY	296
XXII	DEATH OF DOLLFUSS	307
XXIII	AUSTRIA INFELIX	326

CHAPTER		PAGE
XXIV	Dr. Otto Habsburg and General Julius Goemboes	333
XXV	Masaryk and Beneš	345
XXVI	The Lupescu Comedy	355
XXVII	Jugoslavia after Alexander	372
XXVIII	Balkan Kings	390
XXIX	The Turkish Colossus	399
XXX	Poland without Pilsudski	406
XXXI	Half a League Onward	416
XXXII	Stalin	427
XXXIII	Men around Stalin	450
XXXIV	'Duranty's Inferno'	470
	Acknowledgments and Bibliography	486
	Index	491

H1645 – 0023

H1645 – 0024

INSIDE EUROPE

CHAPTER I

HITLER

'The union of theoriser, organiser, and leader in one man is the rarest phenomenon on earth; therein lies greatness.'

– ADOLF HITLER.

ADOLF HITLER, irrational, contradictory, complex, is an unpredictable character; therein lies his power and his menace. To millions of honest Germans he is sublime, a figure of adoration; he fills them with love, fear, and nationalist ecstasy. To many other Germans he is meagre and ridiculous – a charlatan, a lucky hysteric, and a lying demagogue. What are the reasons for this paradox? What are the sources of his extraordinary power?

This paunchy, Charlie-Chaplin-moustached man, given to insomnia and emotionalism, who is head of the Nazi party, commander-in-chief of the German army and navy, Leader of the German nation, creator, president, and chancellor of the Third Reich, was born in Austria in 1889. He was not a German by birth. This was a highly important point inflaming his early nationalism. He developed the implacable patriotism of the frontiersman, the exile. Only an Austrian could take Germanism so seriously.

The inside story of Hitler includes many extraordinary and bizarre episodes. Before discussing his birth and childhood and outlining his career, it may be well to present a broad detailed picture of his character and his daily routine and his attitudes and habits, his personal characteristics and limitations.

Hitler the Human Being

His imagination is purely political. I have seen his early paintings, those which he submitted to the Vienna art

academy as a boy. They are prosaic, utterly devoid of rhythm, colour, feeling, or spiritual imagination. They are architect's sketches: painful and precise draftsmanship; nothing more. No wonder the Vienna professors told him to go to an architectural school and give up pure art as hopeless.

His schooling was very brief, and by no stretch of generosity could he be called a person of genuine culture. He is not nearly so cultivated, so sophisticatedly interested in intellectual affairs as is, say, Mussolini. He reads almost nothing. The Treaty of Versailles was, probably, the most concrete single influence on his life; but it is doubtful if he ever read it in full. He dislikes intellectuals. He has never been outside Germany since his youth in Austria (if you except his War experiences in Flanders and the brief visit to Mussolini in Venice in 1934), and he speaks no foreign language, except a few words of battered French.

To many who meet him, Hitler seems awkward and ill at ease. This is because visitors, even among his subordinates, obtrude personal realities which interfere with his incessant fantasies. He has no poise. He finds it difficult to make quick decisions: capacity for quick decisions derives from inner harmony, which he lacks. He is no 'strong, silent man'.

Foreigners, especially interviewers from British or American papers, may find him cordial and even candid but they seldom have opportunity to question him, to participate in a give-and-take discussion. Hitler rants. He orates. He is extremely emotional.[1] He never answers questions. He talks to you as if you were a public meeting, and nothing can stop the gush of words.

Some time ago, before signing the friendship pact with Poland, he received a well-known American publicist and editor. He asked a question: What the American would think if, for example, Mexico were Poland and Texas were cut off from the United States by a 'corridor' in Mexico. The American replied, 'The answer to that is that Canada is not France.' Hitler had intended the question rhetorically, and he was so shocked and upset by the little interruption that it took him some time to get in full voice again – on another point.

[1] He told one astonished group of interviewers that they could 'crucify' him if he did not keep his promises.

H1645 – 0025

For a time it was said commonly that Hitler's best trait was loyalty. He would never, the joke put it, give up three things: the Jews, his friends, and Austria. Nobody would make that joke to-day, now that Captain Roehm is dead. Nor would anyone of knowledge and discernment have made it even before June 30, 1934, because the scroll of Hitler's disloyalties was written in giant words.

One after another he eliminated those who helped him to his career: Drexler, Feder, Gregor Strasser. It is true that he has been loyal to some colleagues – those who never disagreed with him, who gave him absolute obedience. This loyalty is not an unmixed virtue, considering the unsavouriness of such men as Streicher, the Nuremberg Jew-fancier. Nothing can persuade Hitler to give up Streicher and some other comrades. Unsavouriness alone is not enough to provoke his Draconian ingratitude.

His physical courage is doubtful. When his men were fired on in the Munich *Putsch* of 1923, he flung himself to the street with such violence that his shoulder was broken. Nazi explanations of this are two: (1) linked arm in arm with a man on his right who was shot and killed, he was jerked unwittingly to the pavement; (2) he behaved with the reflex action of the veteran front-line soldier, that is, sensibly fell flat when the bullets came.

Hitler has told an acquaintance his own story of the somewhat mysterious circumstances in which he won the Iron Cross. He was a dispatch bearer. He was carrying messages across a part of No-Man's-Land which was believed to be clear of enemy troops, when he heard French voices. He was alone, armed only with a revolver; so with great presence of mind he shouted imaginary orders to an imaginary column of men. The Frenchmen tumbled out of a deserted dugout, seven in all, hands up. Hitler alone delivered all seven to the German lines. Recounting this story privately, he told his interlocutor that he knew the feat would have been impossible, had the seven men been American or English instead of French.[1]

Like that of all fanatics, his capacity for self-belief, his

[1] This story is not the official version, which is more grandiloquent. Some mystery attaches to the exact circumstances. cf. *Heil*, a bright anonymous book about Germany, p. 9.

H1645 – 0026

ability to delude himself, is enormous. Thus he probably is perfectly 'sincere' – he really believes it – when in an interview with the *Daily Mail* he says that the Nazi revolution cost only twenty-six lives. He believes absolutely in what he says – at the moment.

But his lies have been notorious. Heiden[1] mentions some of the more recondite untruths, and others are known to every student. Hitler promised the authorities of Bavaria not to make a *Putsch*; and promptly made one. He promised to tolerate the Papen government; then fought it. He promised not to change the composition of the first cabinet; then changed it. He promised to kill himself if the Munich coup failed; it failed, and he is still alive.

The Man Without Habits

Hitler, at forty-six, is not in first-rate physical condition. He has gained about twelve pounds in the past year, and his neck and midriff show it. His physical presence has always been indifferent; the extreme sloppiness with which he salutes is, for instance, notorious. The forearm barely moves above the elbow. He had lung trouble as a boy, and was blinded by poison gas in the War.

In August 1935, it was suddenly revealed that the Leader had suffered a minor operation some months before to remove a polyp on his vocal cords – penalty of years of tub-thumping. The operation was successful. The next month Hitler shocked his adherents at Nuremberg by alluding, in emotional and circumlocutory terms, to the possibility of his death. 'I do not know when I shall finally close my eyes,' he said, 'but I do know that the party will continue and will rule. Leaders will come and Leaders will die, but Germany will live. . . . The army must preserve the power given to Germany and watch over it.' The speech led to rumours (quite unconfirmed) that the growth in Hitler's throat was malignant, and that he had cancer.

He takes no exercise, and his only important relaxation – though recently he began to like battleship cruises in the Baltic or North Sea – is music. He is deeply musical. Wagner is one of the cardinal influences on his life; he is obsessed by Wagner.

[1] *A History of National Socialism*, by Konrad Heiden, a book indispensable for the study of the new Germany.

H1645 – 0027

He goes to opera as often as he can, and he was attending the Beyreuth Festival when, on July 25, 1934, Nazi putschists murdered Chancellor Dollfuss of Austria. Sessions of the Reichstag, which take place in the Kroll Opera House, sometimes end with whole performances of Wagner operas – to the boredom of non-musical deputies! When he is fatigued at night, then his friend and associate Hanfstaengl may be summoned to play him to sleep, sometimes with Schumann or Verdi, more often with Beethoven and Wagner, for Hitler needs music like dope.

Hitler cares nothing for books; nothing for clothes (he seldom wears anything but an ordinary brown-shirt uniform, or a double-breasted blue serge suit, with the inevitable raincoat and slouch hat); nothing for friends; and nothing for food and drink. He neither smokes nor drinks, and he will not allow anyone to smoke near him. He is practically a vegetarian. At the banquet tendered him by Mussolini he would eat only a double portion of scrambled eggs. He drinks coffee occasionally, but not often. Once or twice a week he crosses from the Chancellery to the Kaiserhof Hotel (the G.H.Q. of the Nazi party before he came to power), and sits there and sips – chocolate.

This has led many people to speak of Hitler's 'asceticism' but asceticism is not quite the proper word. He is limited in aesthetic interests, but he is no flagellant or anchorite. There is very little of the *austere* in Hitler. He eats only vegetables – but they are prepared by an exquisitely competent chef. He lives 'simply' – but his flat in Munich is the last word in courtly sumptuousness.

He works, when in Berlin, in the palace of the Reichskanzler on the Wilhelmstrasse. He seldom uses the president's palace a hundred yards away on the same street, because when Hindenburg died he wanted to eliminate as much as possible the memory of Presidential Germany. The building is new, furnished in modern glass and metal, and Hitler helped design it. Murals of the life of Wotan adorn the walls. An improvised balcony has been built over the street, from which, on public occasions, the Leader may review his men. Beneath the hall – according to reports – is a comfortable bomb-proof cellar.

H1645 – 0028

Hitler dislikes Berlin. He leaves the capital at any opportunity, preferring Munich or Berchtesgaden, a village in southern Bavaria, where he has an alpine chalet, Haus Wachenfeld. Perched on the side of a mountain, this retreat, dear to his heart, is not far from the Austrian frontier, a psychological fact of great significance. From his front porch he can almost see the homeland which repudiated him, and for which he yearns.

Friends

By a man's friends may ye know him. But Hitler has none.

The man who is closest to Hitler at present, now that Capt. Ernst Roehm, the founder of the S.A. (*Sturm Abteilung* – Brown Shirts), is dead, is his chief bodyguard, Lieut. Brückner. The only two men who can see him at any time, without previous appointment, are Ribbentrop, his adviser in foreign affairs, and Schacht, the economics dictator. His chief permanent officials, like Dietrich, his Press secretary, may see him daily, and so may Hess, the deputy leader of the party; but even Hess is not an *intimate* friend. Neither Goering nor Goebbels may see Hitler without previous appointment.

He is almost oblivious of ordinary personal contacts. A colleague of mine travelled with him, in the same aeroplane, day after day, for two months during the 1932 electoral campaigns. Hitler never talked to a soul, not even to his secretaries, in the long hours in the air; never stirred; never smiled. My friend remembers most vividly that, in order to sneak a cigarette when the plane stopped, he had to run out of sight of the *entourage*. He says that he saw Hitler a steady five or six hours a day during this trip, but that he is perfectly sure Hitler, meeting him by chance outside the aeroplane, would not have known his name or face.

He dams profession of emotion to the bursting point, then is apt to break out in crying fits. A torrent of feminine tears compensates for the months of uneasy struggle not to give himself away. For instance, when he spent a whole night trying to persuade a dissident leader, Otto Strasser, from leaving the party, he broke into tears three times. In the early

H1645 – 0029

days he often wept, when other methods to carry a point failed.[1]

Hitler does not enjoy too great exposure of this weakness, and he tends to keep all subordinates at a distance. They worship him: but they do not know him well. They may see him every day, year in year out; but they would never dare to be familiar. A man quite close to him told me once that in all the years of their association he had never called Hitler anything except 'Herr Hitler' (or 'Herr Reichskanzler' after the Leader reached power); and that Hitler had never called him by first name or his diminutive. There is an inhumanity about the inner circle of the Nazi party that is scarcely credible.

An old-time party member, to-day, would address Hitler as 'Mein Führer'; others as 'Herr Reichskanzler'. When greeted with the Nazi salute and the words 'Heil Hitler', Hitler himself replies with 'Heil Hitler'. Speechmaking, the Leader addresses his followers as 'My' German people. In posters for the plebiscites he asks, 'Dost thou, German man, and thou, German woman – etc.' It is as if he feels closer to the German people in bulk than to any individual German, and this is indeed true. The German *people* are the chief emotional reality of his life.

Let us, now, examine Hitler's relation to the imperatives which dominate the lives of most men.

Attitude Towards Women

He is totally uninterested in women from any personal sexual point of view. He thinks of them as housewives and mothers or potential mothers, to provide sons for the battlefield – other people's sons.

'The life of our people must be freed from the asphyxiating perfume of modern eroticism,' he says in *Mein Kampf*, his autobiography.[2] His personal life embodies this precept to the fullest. He is not a woman-hater, but he avoids and evades women. His manners are those of the wary chevalier, given to hand-kissing – and nothing else. Many women are attracted

[1] Compare to Stalin, for instance. Can one imagine Stalin weeping after a hard day, or summoning Comrade Umansky to play to him?

[2] Most of my quotations from *Mein Kampf* are from the English edition. (Hurst & Blackett, Ltd., 1933.)

H1645 – 0030

to him sexually, but they have had to give up the chase. Frau Goebbels formerly had evening parties to which she asked pretty and distinguished women to meet him, but she was never able to arrange a match. The rumour was heard for a time that the coy Leader was engaged to the grand-daughter of Richard Wagner. It was nonsense. It is quite possible that Hitler has never had anything to do with a woman in his life.

Nor, as is so widely believed, is he homosexual. Several German journalists spent much time and energy, when such an investigation was possible, checking every lodging that Hitler, in Munich days, had slept in; they interviewed beer-hall proprietors, coffee-house waiters, landladies, porters. No evidence was discovered that Hitler had been intimate with anybody of any sex at any time. His sexual energies, at the beginning of his career, were obviously sublimated into oratory. The influence of his mother and childhood environment, which we shall examine in Chapter Two, contributed signally to his frustration. Most of those German writers and observers best equipped to know think that Hitler is a virgin.

Attitude Towards Money

Hitler has no use for money personally and therefore very little interest in it, except for political purposes. He has virtually no financial sophistication; his lack of knowledge of even the practical details of finance, as of economics, is profound.

Nowadays what would he need money for? The state furnishes him with servants, residences, motor-cars. One of his last personal purchases was a new raincoat for the visit to Mussolini in June 1934. Incidentally, members of his staff got into trouble over this, because on their advice he carried only civilian clothes; when he stepped from his aeroplane and saw Mussolini and all the Italians in uniform, he was ashamed of his mufti nakedness: and even suspected his advisers of purposely embarrassing him.

Hitler takes no salary from the state; rather he donates it to a fund which supports workmen who have suffered from labour accidents; but his private fortune could be considerable, if he chose to save. He announced late in 1935 that he – alone among statesmen – had no bank account or stocks or

H1645 – 0031

shares. Previous to this, it had been thought that he was part-owner of Franz Eher & Co., Munich, the publishers of the chief Nazi organs, *Völkische Beobachter, Angriff,* etc., one of the biggest publishing houses in Europe. Its director, Max Amman, was Hitler's sergeant-major in the War, and later for many years his business manager.

If Hitler has no personal fortune, he must have turned all his earnings from his autobiography, *Mein Kampf,* to the party. This book is almost obligatory reading for Germans and at a high price (RM 7.20 or about twelve shillings) it has sold 1,930,000 copies since its publication in 1925. If his royalty is fifteen per cent, a moderate estimate, Hitler's total proceeds from this source at the end of 1935 should have been about £160,000.

Nothing is more difficult in Europe than discovering the facts of the private fortunes of leading men. It is sacrosanct and thus forbidden ground to questioners in all countries. . . . Does any dictator, Hitler or Mussolini or Stalin, carry cash in his pocket, or make actual purchases in cash? It is unlikely.

Attitude Towards Religion

He was born and brought up a Roman Catholic. But he lost faith early and he attends no religious services of any kind. His catholicism means nothing to him; he is impervious even to the solace of confession. On being formed, his government almost immediately began a fierce religious war against Catholics, Protestants, and Jews alike.

Why? Perhaps the reason was not religion fundamentally, but politics. To Hitler the overwhelming first business of the Nazi revolution was the 'unification', the *Gleichschaltung* (co-ordination) of Germany. He had one driving passion, the removal from the Reich of any competition, of whatever kind. The Vatican, like Judaism, was a profoundly international (thus non-German) organism. Therefore – out with it.

The basis of much of the madness of Hitlerism was his incredibly severe and drastic desire to purge Germany of non-German elements, to create a hundred per cent Germany for one hundred per cent Germans only. He disliked bankers and department stores – as Dorothy Thompson pointed out – because they represented non-German, international, financial

H1645 – 0032

and commercial forces. He detested socialists and communists because they were affiliated with world groups aiming to internationalise labour. He loathed, above all, pacifists, because pacifists, opposing war, were internationalists.

Catholicism he considered a particularly dangerous competitive force, because it demands two allegiances of a man, and double allegiance was something Hitler could not countenance. Thus the campaign against the 'black moles', as Nazis call priests. Protestantism was – theoretically – a simpler matter to deal with, because the Lutheran Church presumably was German and nationalist. Hitler thought that by the simple installation of an army chaplain, a ferocious Nazi named Müller, as Reichbishop, he could 'co-ordinate' the Evangelical Church in Germany, and turn it to his service. The idea of a united Protestant Church appealed to his neat, architect's mind. He was wrong. The church question has been an itching pot of trouble ever since.

It was quite natural, following the confused failure to Nazify Protestantism, that some of Hitler's followers should have turned to Paganism. The Norse myths are a first-class nationalist substitute. Carried to its logical extreme, Naziism in fact demands the creation of a new and nationalist religion. Hitler has indicated this in a speech at Nuremberg in September 1935. 'Christianity,' he said, 'succeeded for a time in uniting the old Teutonic tribes, but the Reformation destroyed this unity. Germany is now a united nation. National socialism has succeeded where Christianity failed.' And Heiden has quoted Hitler's remark, 'We do not want any other God than Germany itself.' This is a vital point. *Germany* is Hitler's religion.

One of Hitler's grudges against God is the fact that Jesus was a Jew. Another is a nationalist grudge again. The basis of the Nazi revolution was the defeat of Germany in the War. Thus religion had to be Nazified because no God who permitted the French and other 'inferior' races to win the War could be a satisfactory God for Germany.

Hitler's attempt to unify religion in Germany may lead to one danger. He himself may become a God. And divinity entails difficulties. Gods have to perform miracles.

Vividly in *Mein Kampf* Hitler tells the story of his first

H1645 – 0033

encounter with a Jew. He was a boy of seventeen, alone in Vienna, and he had never seen a Jew in his life. The Jew, a visitor from Poland or the Ukraine, in native costume, outraged the tender susceptibilities of the youthful Hitler. 'Can this creature be a Jew?' he asked himself. Then, bursting on him, came a second question: 'Can he possibly be a *German*?'

This early experience had a profound influence on him, forming the emotional base of his perfervid anti-Semitism. He was provincially mortified that any such creature could be one with himself, a sharer in Teuton nationality. Later he 'rationalised' his fury on economic and political grounds. Jews, he said, took jobs away from 'Germans'; Jews controlled the Press of Berlin, the theatre, the arts; there were too many Jewish lawyers, doctors, professors; the Jews were a 'pestilence, worse than the Black Death'.

No one can properly conceive the basic depth and breadth of Hitler's anti-Semitism who has not carefully read *Mein Kampf*. This book was written ten years ago. He has changed it as edition followed edition, in minor particulars, and refuses to allow its publication – unexpurgated – abroad. Recently he sued a French publisher who tried to bring out an unabridged translation. In all editions, the implacability of his anti-Jewish prejudice remains.

Any number of incidents outside the book may be mentioned. For instance, in the winter of 1934–35 he is reported to have seen a play called *Tovarish*, recounting sympathetically the plight of aristocratic Russian *émigrés* and sneering at the Bolsheviks, four times. Before he first attended it, it is said, his secretaries telegraphed to Paris to ascertain if the author, Jacques Deval, was Aryan as far back as his grandparents. It would have been unthinkable for Hitler to have witnessed a play by even a partly Jewish author.

Long before he became chancellor, Hitler would not allow himself to speak to a Jew even on the telephone. A publicist as well known as Walter Lippmann, a statesman as eminent as Lord Reading, would not be received at the Brown House. An interesting point arises. Has Hitler, since his youth, actually ever been in the company of a Jew, ever once talked to one? Probably not.

H1645 – 0034

'Am I My Brother's Keeper?'

Lieut. Brückner, the chief bodyguard, has two assistants, with the picturesque names of Schaub and Schreck. Schaub takes care of all the details of Hitler's travel, arranges the motor-cars and aeroplanes. (Hitler, like Colonel Lindbergh, practically never takes a train.) Another member of this company, whose name is unknown, and who has fancifully been called the highest-paid man in Germany – according to the *Daily Telegraph* – is Hitler's double, a man who resembles him so startlingly that he can substitute for him, if necessary, on public occasions.

Extreme precautions are, naturally, taken to guard Hitler against assassination. Brückner, Schaub, and Schreck are supposed to be bound by a suicide pact; if, despite their vigilance, something should happen to the Fuehrer, they will kill themselves. Recently a British politician lunched *chez* Hitler at the Chancellery. Nervously, he bumped a large vase off a pedestal. Instantly from behind each curtain an SS man, armed, is said to have leapt into the room.

When Hitler rides out in Berlin, he travels in a Mercédès-Benz as big as a locomotive. Brückner usually sits beside him. Schaub and Schreck follow in another car. SS men with rifles may stand on the running-boards. If the occasion is ceremonial and large crowds are present, the route is lined with SS men (Black Shirts) alternately facing inward and outward.

Brückner is of great importance politically because he serves to block Hitler off from normal contacts. The complaint frequently is heard that Hitler is badly informed on even vital matters, because Brückner so isolates him from wide acquaintance; even advisers with the best intentions may have little chance of seeing him.

Not long ago Hitler broke his new rule against social affairs by visiting informally a diplomat and his wife who had been useful to him in earlier days. The diplomat talked to Hitler frankly and told him some honest truths. Hitler was upset. Then, the story says, Brückner descended on the diplomat, warning him under no circumstances to dare talk frankly to Hitler again.

Insurance rates on Hitler's life are quoted in London. A

H1645 – 0035

man with important business in Germany, which might be ruined by the terror and revolution which would very likely follow Hitler's assassination, paid £10 10s. per month for each £200 of insurance against Hitler's death.[1] But there was no authentic evidence of any attempt on his life up to the end of 1935.

Opposition

Essentially Hitlerism is the process of 'unifying' Germany. Yet the Nazis have struck at Protestants, Catholics, Jews; they have mortally affronted the working classes; they cannot put into serious action any programme of economic amelioration without offending the industrialists; they have alienated, by brutality and terror, the republicans, democrats, socialists, communists.

Hitler, by the end of 1935, had held two plebiscites. One asked vindication of his departure from the League, and he received a 92.3 per cent vote of confidence. The other sought acceptance of his combination of chancellorship and presidency after the death of Hindenburg; the affirmative vote was 38,362,760 out of 43,529,710 ballots cast. Of course neither was a fair vote in the Anglo-Saxon sense of the term. The plebiscite in the Saar gave him ninety per cent, but it probably would have been ninety-nine per cent under any other chancellor. The last general election in Danzig, where every effort was made to bring out the vote and which was a better indication than the Saar of public feeling on a straight for-or-against-Hitler issue, brought him 139,043 votes out of 234,956 – good enough, but not the two-thirds majority he hoped for.

The last reasonably fair German election, on March 5, 1933 – even though it took place under the shadow of the Reichstag fire – gave Hitler thirty-seven per cent. I believe in an election to-day he would better this considerably. Even so, the total Marxist (communist-cum-socialist) vote in 1933 was 11,845,000. This number has probably receded, but just the same there is still an immense opposition submerged in

[1] cf. *News Chronicle*, London, May 21, 1935. The charge for similar insurance against Mussolini's assassination were £4 on £100 for three months.

234 956 Danzig
139 043 Deutschl
95 913 Polen

H1645 – 0036

Germany. What has happened to these millions of hidden voters?

They are terrified. They are hounded by the police and by spies. They vote Yes in plebiscites because they are frightened of their skins. Some few of them have sought cover actually by joining the SA. Most simply swallow their opinions, their feelings, their inward decency – and wait. They are waiting for their Day. But are they an active political force? No.

The reason is that revolution is a profoundly difficult matter in a police state like Germany, Russia, or Fascist Italy. It is almost an axiom these days that no revolution can succeed until the equipment in arms and ammunition of the revolutionaries is equal or superior to that of the government. And this margin of superiority is transcendently difficult to achieve.

The Nazis, to their own disadvantage, discovered the *essential* necessity of arms in the Austrian civil war of July 1934. They neglected to arm their Austrian adherents, out of carelessness or over-confidence; they assumed that once the signal for the revolt was given the Austrian army and police would mutiny and turn over their arms to the Nazis; this did not happen. The army and police of Dr. Dollfuss remained, by and large, loyal. Therefore we had the spectacle of thousands upon thousands of potentially revolutionary Nazis inhibited from any decisive or direct action simply because they did not possess arms. This lesson is cardinal. You cannot fight a machine-gun by saying 'Boo' to it.

If the people riot, Hitler can simply shoot them down. He has the Reichswehr (regular army) to do this, not merely the SA and SS. The Reichswehr (the ranks are mostly peasant boys) might not shoot at a rising in the agrarian districts, but the farmers are the most tractable people in Hitler's Reich. An urban population would get short shrift. But, one may say, no man, not even Hitler, could shoot down tens of thousands of unarmed or roughly armed rebels. The answer to this is that it is not necessary to shoot down tens of thousands. A few hundreds will be enough.

What is more likely to happen than open rebellion is the slow pressure upward of mass discontent, grumbling, and passive resistance, sabotage caused by growing privation, until

H1645 – 0037

the *morale* of the government cracks, and the government, panicky, does foolish things. Discontent may corrosively simmer to the top, disorganising the headship of state, causing new rivalries between sub-leaders, creating fissures between, say, Goebbels on the left and Schacht on the right, so deep and so unbridgeable that Hitler is powerless to compose the conflict.

The government might then attempt a classic but dangerous diversion – war.

Succession to the Purple

If Hitler should die to-morrow his most likely successor would be Goering, bitterly as he is disliked and feared by many members of the party. The Leader might himself prefer Hess, his deputy, as successor, but in the rough-and-tumble that would almost certainly follow his death, Hess would have small chance against such a doughty character as Goering. The general is the logical choice. It is a terrible possibility.

Goering has force, colour, ambition; he is a figure of great popular appeal. The quality and quantity of his uniforms are highly attractive to Germans; his marriage may produce a dynasty. What is more important, the army likes him because he stands for the same thing as it stands for: a strong Germany. Moreover, in the SS and remnants of SA, Goering has a considerable armed force behind him. Finally, he has the guts to grab the job, if grabbing is necessary.

Goebbels would be impossible as successor to Hitler; he is the cleverest of the lot, but everybody hates him. Frick is important, but too colourless; Hess too unambitious; Ley and Darré out of the running as 'radicals'; Schacht is of the greatest importance in economics and finance, but impossible as a popular leader. In fact, the only alternative to Goering would seem to be a complete Reichswehr ministry formed by an army *coup d'état*, such as the one Schleicher might have headed. Or a dark horse.

Rumours, however, to the effect that Goering is *now* actively intriguing against Hitler are probably nonsense. There are many virtues that Goering lacks, but loyalty is not among them – at least not yet. Besides, Hitler could eliminate Goering to-day almost as easily as he eliminated Roehm.

H1645 – 0038

Hitler is all-powerful. Real rivals do not exist. Goering, Goebbels, and all the rest of them, as H. R. Knickerbocker once expressed it, are no more than moons to Hitler's sun. They shine – but only when the sun shines on them.

H1645 – 0039

H1645 – 0040

CHAPTER II

PSYCHO-PATHOLOGY OF DICTATORS

'The German has not the slightest notion how a people must be misled if the adherence of the masses is sought.'

– ADOLF HITLER.

NOT only Hitler but several modern leaders were born in border-zones or actually different countries from those they came to rule. Mustapha Kamal Ataturk, though you would hardly call him a Greek, was born in Salonika, Greece; Pilsudski was Lithuanian in origin; Schuschnigg, the Austrian chancellor, was born in Italy; and Stalin, as everyone knows, is not a Russian at all, but a Georgian.

I have visited Braunau, in Austria, and seen the house where Hitler was born. The legend has grown of a rustic dwelling, the Teutonic equivalent of our country cottage, where, in stern but idyllically bucolic circumstances, the Leader first saw daylight. Of course this is inaccurate. The house is a three-story structure on the main street of Braunau, and for twenty years it has been a *Gasthaus* (saloon, village pub) owned by a local worthy named Josef Pommer. Where a bronze tablet may one day mark the Leader's birth-place an enamelled metal sign now says, 'Stekl beer on draught.'

The house to-day is painted bright ochre brown, the colour of the brown-shirt uniform. It was padlocked by the Austrian authorities in July 1933, because it was the natural local headquarters of the Nazis. Hitler's parents never owned it; they lived in furnished rooms rented from the landlord. On the other hand, his father was not a poor man, and the legend that Hitler all but starved as a boy is nonsense.

The whole region around Braunau is Hitler country. Dozens of people who are still alive remember him as a young man. In the village of Spital, near Weitra, I met his mother's sister and two of his first cousins; in Leonding, near Linz, I talked to his *Vormund* (godfather), the son of his old school-

H1645 – 0041

master (who had been one of his classmates), the proprietors of the pub where his father died, and – interesting old woman! – the midwife who hauled his infant body from his mother's womb.

Family Tree

The Hitler family springs from a section of Austria known as the Waldviertel, billowing Danube country near what is now the Czechoslovak frontier. The peasants living there are humble folk, blanched by poverty and gnarled by work; honest, God-fearing, illiterate, and heavily inbred. Populations of whole villages are first and second cousins. They live by tilling the soil, working in mills, or practising some humble trade like carpentry.

In the Waldviertel village Spital a man named Johann Georg Hiedler was born in February, 1792. This was Adolf Hitler's grandfather. He was a wandering miller's helper. By him, a woman named Maria Anna Schicklgruber had a son, born in a near-by hamlet Strones in 1837. Five years later the parents were married, but the son took his mother's name – Schicklgruber – and was not legally legitimised till he was forty years old, in 1877. Then he became known as Alois Hitler – Adolf Hitler's father.

The change from 'Hiedler' to 'Hitler' is easily explained. The peasants could scarcely read and write; names were hardly ever written down, except at birth and death. Hiedler's father, in fact, called himself 'Hüttler', according to the records I saw in the village church. And Paula Hitler, Adolf's sister, to this day signs herself 'Hiedler'.

Alois Hitler, Adolf's father, was a cobbler. He married three times. His first wife, Anna Gläsl-Horer, was born in the Waldviertel town of Theresienfeld in 1823, and died in Braunau in 1883. This Anna, a moderately rich woman, treated the young cobbler, then known as Schicklgruber, as mother as well as wife and sent him to school, then purchased for him a job in the Austrian civil service. She was fourteen years older than he. Thanks to her, he became a solid citizen, and the education of his son Adolf, born years later by another wife, was made possible.

Anna died in 1883; Alois waited only six weeks to marry

again, this time to a woman named Franziska Matzelsberger. Their marriage lasted only a year. She died in 1884. Only three months after her death, Alois married once more, this time to Adolf's mother, Klara Poelzl, a distant cousin. This was on January 7, 1885. Four years later, in Braunau, on April 20, 1889, Adolf Hitler, creator of the Third Reich, was born. His father was fifty-two at his birth, his mother twenty-nine.

Klara Poelzl, Adolf's mother, was a woman of some enterprise and courage. Her father was a peasant in the village of Spital, and her mother was Johanna Hüttler, a cousin of Alois Hitler's father. When Klara was ten years old (in 1870), she got her first job – as maid in the home of Alois Hitler's first wife, Anna Gläsl-Horer. Here Alois first saw the little girl, a distant relative, whom fifteen years later he was to marry – his first wife's servant.

Presently Klara ran away to Vienna. This was an unprecedented thing to do. Few other girls in the Waldviertel had shown such initiative. No one knew the reason for her flight. I have asked her sister (living to-day) about it. She has no explanation. Klara lived in Vienna – her circumstances a complete mystery – for ten full years. Then in 1885 she returned to her native village, Spital. She was a tall, nervous girl now, not as strong as most of the peasant stock she came from. She lived with her parents in a house adjacent to the one – I have seen them both – wherein Alois was brooding over the loss of his two wives. He remembered the girl who had been his wife's servant – and married her.

By his first wife, Anna, Alois had had two children. A son, Alois Junior (Adolf's half-brother) became a waiter who died some years ago in Hamburg – and of all things he was a social democrat. A daughter, Angela, went to Vienna where she married a man named Raupel and earned a living as a cook in a Student's Charity Hall in Vienna. Some years ago Adolf brought her to Germany and installed her as housekeeper in his Berchtesgaden villa.

Klara had two children besides Adolf. Paula, born in 1897, is unmarried (another spinster in this neurotic family) and lives to-day in Vienna, an anonymous and forgotten figure. The local Nazis tried to make a heroine of her, but she was too

H1645 – 0042

retiring. Hitler apparently has nothing to do with her. The third child, Edouard, died in infancy.

Alois, a customs inspector, and Klara, with the boy Adolf growing up, lived in Braunau, an important frontier town, until 1896, when Alois retired on pension. Then he moved to a village near Linz named Leonding, bought a house, and lived in it with Klara and Adolf till he died in 1903.

Father and Mother

I have seen the tombstone of Hitler père. It reads:

HIER RUHET IN GOTT HERR
ALOIS HITLER
K.K. Zollamts Oberoffizial I.P.
und Hausbesitzer
Gest. 3 Januar 1903, in 65 Lebensjahre
Dessen Gattin Frau
KLARA HITLER
Gest. 21 Dez. 1907 i. 47 Lebj.
R.I.P.

As is common in Austria, a small photograph of the dead man is attached to the stone. A skull big and round and hairless like a melon; small, sharp, wicked little eyes; a pair of bicycle-handle moustaches, and a heavy, dominant, tyrant's chin. The mother's picture we saw later in a relative's house. A tall woman, with a narrow, sensitive face and arching eyes over sunken cheek-bones; her yellow braids now a grey mat at the back of the neck; large, luminous eyes.

Young Adolf detested his father and loved his mother. This difficult parental relationship, on which the villagers with whom I talked and the surviving relatives agreed, was obviously a cardinal point in the development of Hitler's character. He had an Oedipus complex as big as a house.

Hitler père was truculent and overbearing and a lusty object; he died over a bottle of wine in a public-house, of a sudden stroke. The father thought that Adolf was a weakling and a worthless idler and dreamer; he called him 'moonstruck', and bullied and beat him.

Young Hitler identified himself with his mother in opposition to the father. His jealousy of the father produced an

H1645 – 0043

extreme divergence in his character. Old Hitler was a drunkard; young Hitler never touched alcohol. Old Hitler married three times in quick succession; young Hitler never had any love life at all. Old Hitler was besotted with indulgence; young Hitler feared it.

Adolf loved his mother passionately. When he was about six she developed cancer, and it took her almost ten years to die. From her he got his impulse to ambition, his sense of historical mission, because she, too, wanted him to be different from his father. The mother encouraged him to be an artist. Throughout his life, Hitler has been subconsciously proving to his mother, the only woman he has loved, his right to independence, success, power.

In Spital, a country hamlet about an hour's journey from Leonding, I met several surviving members of the family, among them Hitler's aunt, Theresa Schmidt (Klara's sister) a bouncing old woman, and her two sons, Edward and Anton, Hitler's first cousins. One of them, Edward, is a hunchback with an impediment in his speech – a pitiable creature. They are miserably poor.

These people are Hitler's blood relatives. Their plaster huts seem a million miles from the shining roofs of Wilhelmstrasse, where the Leader rules. Hitler has never returned to visit the district since he left it as a boy. He sends these cousins no letters, no money, and seems totally unaware of their existence.

Authority Complex

All dictators are abnormal. This may be accepted as an axiom. No man perfectly normal can take it upon himself to rule a nation dictatorially, if only because the vanity of the normal male is not capacious enough to accept such supreme responsibility. Aside from this, most dictators are profound neurotics. Kamal Ataturk had a wildly disordered personal life; Dollfuss had a dwarf-complex; Pilsudski's breathless rages were pathological; Mussolini, as the Abyssinian war proved, is a megalomaniac. Of the lot, Stalin is probably the nearest to a normal human being, but one should not forget that he was a criminal, viz. bomb-thrower, in his youth.

The great Viennese psychiatrist Dr. Wilhelm Stekel has a

H1645 – 0044

theory which accounts handily both for the neuroticism of dictators and for the supine willingness of most people to submit to dictatorial rule. He calls it the Authority Complex.

One must begin with the child. In every child, says Stekel, there is a struggle between his own instincts and the lessons he derives from the outer world. Children like, for instance, to be dirty. But they are taught by external education to be clean. Education is largely an effort to mould a child in opposition to his original instincts. Education is effected by authority. And authority becomes the child's enemy, because it means renouncement of his own instincts.

The first authority is that of the parents. If the parents are too weak and the child is overtly defiant, then other authorities come into play. The authority of older children. The authority of the teacher. In some cases, the authority of the law. The authority, above all, of religion. The final weapon in the hands of adults teaching authority to children is the phrase, 'God will punish you.'

Since about 1914 the Authority Complex has tended to break down. It is obvious that the family is no longer the sacred unit it once was. 'Parents,' Stekel puts it, 'did not respond themselves to the moral standard which they demanded of their children.' Inevitably children revolted at this unfairness. Parents sought stupidly or blindly to impose on children the moral imperatives which they ignored, which left the children no alternative but to revenge themselves by overthrowing parental prohibitions.

As with parents, so with teachers. School and university were taken less and less seriously. The Great War undermined authority internationally, and presently law and order within national boundaries suffered: a flood of criminality deluged the world, especially America. Then too, religion had been displaced by modern science as a vital authoritarian factor. Finally, young men and women asked how they could longer believe in a God who permitted the War and the butchery therein of some ten million men. Thus the principle of authority became discredited, and the old Authority Complex collapsed.

As a result came the wave of dictators. The Hitlers and Mussolinis were essentially father-substitutes. People may

H1645 – 0045

resent authority but they cannot easily live without it in some form; children have revolted against their fathers, and Hitler, Mussolini, Pilsudski, Alexander of Jugoslavia, Dollfuss, Kamal Ataturk, Stalin, replaced them. The modern child thought his parents unworthy and thus sought an external leader. The sphere of authority had been moved outside the home.

How Dictators Rule

Fundamentally all government is a subtle combination of the forces of fear and love. Dictators increase the dynamics of this process. Alexander of Jugoslavia tried to win over the rebellious Croats, at the same time that he dragooned them to submission. Little Dollfuss murdered the socialists by artillery fire and then begged them to forgive him. Hitler is beloved by many of his followers; just the same, the St. Bartholomew of June 30 was necessary.

Why does the individual not resent the authority of the dictator, or leader, just as he resented parental authority? The reason, according to Stekel, is that individual doubt of the fallibility of the dictator is lessened as more and more people come to follow and worship him. The greater the number of followers, the less the necessity for doubt. 'A psychic epidemic of adoration' floods the country, engulfing the whole nation which prostrates itself at the dictator's feet.

Moreover, Stekel says, as more and more people join the leader, their merged inferiorities become a superiority. The people identify themselves with the leader. They partake of the flesh of his authority. They become part of his soul and substance, and he of theirs. They share in his Authority Complex. Germans, for instance, say that they don't fight for Hitler, but that Hitler fights for them. Mussolini does not want power for himself, many Italians believe, but only for the sake of Italy, viz., other Italians, viz., themselves. 'Obedience and defiance, love and hate, finally combine,' says Dr. Stekel, 'and the dictator becomes the saviour.'

In older days new leaders were usually the founders of new religions. Now they are political. Many present-day leaders are jealous of religion; they fear the implacable rivalry of the Authority of God. Thus, very often, they try to kill religion,

H1645 – 0046

their strongest competitor, by seeking to destroy the religious faith of their people: Kamal Ataturk disestablished Islam, Stalin tried to root out the Orthodox Church.

Dictators are themselves usually neurotics because they too suffered from the iron circumscription of the Authority Complex; *they* too revolted against authority in childhood. But they were persons often of superior mentality or will, and, after a miserable childhood, their revolt was successful, and they revenged themselves on their parents by imposing authority on others. They became fathers, not of a family, but a nation.

Almost all the modern dictators (Alexander of Jugoslavia was an exception) were born in poverty. Mussolini and Stalin were wretchedly poor. Moreover several dictators, like Hitler, underwent childhood experiences of the most disastrous sort; Dollfuss, for instance, was of humble origin. The dictators compensated for their bitter youth by search for power and glory afterwards. Power and glory, even achieved, may not be anodynes enough. Thus Hitler seeks refuge in music, Mussolini in speeding, Kamal Ataturk in dissipation.

Dictators reach power so easily, Stekel believes, because we, the common people, seek to blame something for every crisis, and the nearest and biggest and easiest things to blame are our institutions. So the institutions fall, to give way to dictatorship. Dictators keep power so easily because the force of arms is inherent in their systems, and we, the common people – speaking broadly – like to be afraid.

Début

Hitler entered political life as a spy. The fact is unpleasant. The story is fully told by Heiden. Hitler was a non-commissioned officer in the German army, which had just become the Reichswehr, and he was detailed early in 1919 as a sort of intelligence officer to attend labour meetings, mingle with workers groups, and report to his superiors the state of popular opinion. Fulfilling one of these missions, he heard a man named Gottfried Feder speak. He was impressed by Feder's violent economic theories, including the distinction between *raffendes* (grasping, hence Jewish) and *schaffendes* (creative, hence Aryan) capital; he came again to hear him, and joined

H1645 – 0047

excitedly the discussion following the meeting, squelching an opposition speaker.

Feder was closely in touch with an ex-locksmith, Anton Drexler, who had formed a minuscule group of riffraff called the German Workers Party. Presently, Hitler was invited to join this party. He records his two days of 'agonised meditation and questioning' before giving assent. Then he became No. 7 not in the party itself (which at the time numbered about sixty members) but in its council. This was in July 1919. Officially, however, until the next June, Hitler remained in the service of his regiment.

The rise of the party under Hitler is history. He changed its name to N.S.D.A.P. (*National Sozialistische Deutsche Arbeiter Partei*), which, usually shortened to 'Nazi' is still its official name. He spoke first to audiences of twenty, then to twenty thousand. He founded his private army, the SA, the Brown Shirts. He was ill-advised enough to attempt a revolution in Munich in 1923 and was defeated and sentenced to jail for high treason. He emerged – Germany's potential 'saviour'.

It is well to underline two subsidiary but important points. One was that Hitler began to equivocate almost from the moment he seized control of the party. Naziism began as a predominantly Left-socialist movement, and the party programme, written by Feder and pronounced unalterable by Hitler, was a formidably anti-capitalist document. Hitler began to shed the socialist parts of the programme with systematic regularity as soon as he was on the road to power. It is difficult to avoid the conclusion that Hitler never meant anything by his socialist promises: they were a lure for votes, political racketeering, nothing more.

The second point is Hitler's intimate association with army influences almost from the beginning. He, as well as anyone, knew that the Reichswehr would in time wield decisive influence in Germany. As much as he dared, cautiously, cleverly, he cultivated the Reichswehr. It is not generally known that he was enabled to purchase control of the *Völkische Beobachter*, which became the principal Nazi organ, through use of Reichswehr funds.

Hitler took over the party from Drexler and Feder, but

H1645 – 0048

essentially it was his creation. He cozened it, nurtured it, watched it grow, and controlled it. The party came out of his own blood and heart. He was helped, and not inconsiderably, by industrialists, by gangsters, by smart bureaucrats and organisers; but his was the feeding spirit, the dominating pulse. He was himself responsible for the smallest details. He designed the Swastika flag, for instance, and he shaped the general propaganda methods, the like of which were never before seen in Germany – or anywhere. The party was everything to Hitler. It was his wife, mother, mistress, and all his children – at the end thirteen million of them.

Miracle of Nationality

Hitler became a German citizen only by virtue of machinery remarkably devious. He could not run for President against von Hindenburg while still technically an Austrian subject. But the Reichs Government of the day had no intention of conferring statehood on its chief opponent. Therefore the Nazis had to resort to guile.

Dr. Frick, one of the earliest Hitlerites, the first Nazi to hold electoral office in the Reich, was minister of education and the interior in Thuringia. Citizenship would come automatically to Hitler if he became a German official, and Frick therefore decided to appoint him commander of gendarmerie in the inconspicuous hamlet of Hildburghausen. But news of this forcible 'naturalisation' leaked out and when all Germany laughed at the picture of Hitler as a Hildburghausen policeman the plan was given up.

Subsequently another Nazi who held a governmental post, Dietrich Klagges, the minister of justice in Brunswick, appointed Hitler to be Counsellor of the Brunswick Legation in Berlin. Scarcely anyone in Germany knew that such a post existed. Hitler took oath to be loyal to the constitution – which he was openly pledged to destroy – and the Austrian village boy became at long last – a German.

Personal Sources of Power

Now we may proceed to summarise what might be called Hitler's positive qualities.

First of all, consider his single-mindedness, his intent fixity

H1645 – 0049

of purpose. His tactics may change; his strategy may change; his *aim*, never. His aim is to create a strong national Germany, with himself atop it. No opportunistic device, no zigzag in polemics, is too great for him; but the aim, the goal, never varies.

Associated with his single-mindedness is the quality of stamina. All dictators have stamina; all need it. Despite Hitler's lack of vigorous gesture and essential flabbiness, his physical endurance is considerable. I know interviewers who have talked to him on the eve of an election, after he has made several speeches a day, all over Germany, week on end; they found him fresh and even calm. 'When I have a mission to fulfil, I will have the strength for it,' he said.

Unlike most dictators, he has no great capacity for hard work, for industry; he is not the sloghorse that, for instance, Stalin is. He is not a good executive; his desk is usually high with documents requiring his decision which he neglects. He hates to make up his mind. His orders are often vague and contradictory.

Yet he gets a good deal of work done. 'Industry' in a dictator or head of a state means, as a rule, ability to read and listen. The major part of the work of Hitler or Mussolini is perusal of reports and attention to the advice of experts and subordinates. Half their working time they spend in receiving information. Therefore it is necessary for a dictator (*a*) to choose men intelligently – many of Hitler's best men he inherited from the old civil service (*b*), to instil faith in himself in them. Hitler has succeeded in this double task amply. And when his men fail him, he murders them.

Hitler's political sense is highly developed and acute. His calculations are shrewd and penetrating to the smallest detail. For instance, his two major decisions on foreign policy, Germany's departure from the League of Nations and the introduction of conscription, were deliberately announced on Saturday afternoon, to ease the shock to opinion abroad. When he has something unpleasant to explain, the events of June 30 for instance, he usually speaks well after eight p.m., so that foreign newspapers can carry only a hurried and perhaps garbled account of his words.

He made good practical use of his anti-Semitism. The

H1645 – 0050

Jewish terror was, indeed, an excellent campaign manœuvre. The Nazis surged into power in March 1933 with an immense and unrealisable series of electoral pledges. They promised to end unemployment, rescind the Versailles Treaty, regain the Polish corridor, assimilate Austria, abolish department stores, socialise industry, eliminate interest on capital, give the people land. These aims were more easily talked about than achieved. One thing the Nazis could do. One pledge they could redeem – beat the Jews.

Hitler bases most decisions on intuition. Twice, on supreme occasions, it served him well. In the spring of 1932 his most powerful supporters, chiefly Roehm, pressed him to make a *Putsch*. Hitler refused, *feeling* absolute surety that he could come to power legally. Again, in the autumn of 1932, after the Nazis had lost heavily in the November elections, a strong section of the party, led by Gregor Strasser, urged him to admit defeat and enter a coalition government on disadvantageous terms. Hitler, with consummate perspicacity, refused. And within three months he reached power such as the maddest of his followers had not dreamed of.

Another source of Hitler's power is his impersonality, as Frances Gunther has pointed out. His vanity is extreme, but in an odd way it is not personal. He has no peacockery. Mussolini must have given autographs, photographs, to at least several thousand admirers since 1922. Those which Hitler has bestowed on friends may be counted on the fingers of two hands. His vanity is the more effective because it expresses itself in non-personal terms. He is the vessel, the instrument, of the will of the German people; or so he pretends. Thus his famous statement, after the June 30 murders, that for twenty-four hours he had been the supreme court of Germany.

Heiden says that Hitler's power is based on intellect, and his intellect on logic. This would seem a dubious interpretation because Hitler's mind is not ratiocinative in the least: he is a man of passion, of instinct, not of reason. His 'intellect' is that of a chameleon who knows when to change his colour; his 'logic' that of a panther who is hungry, and thus seeks food.

His brain is small, limited, narrow, and suspicious. But

H1645 – 0051

behind it is the lamp of passion, and this passion has such quality that it is immediately discernible and recognisable, like a diamond in the sand. The range of his interests is so slight that any sort of stimulus provokes the identical reflex: music, religion, economics, mean nothing to him except exercise in nationalism.

Anthony Eden, when he visited Berlin in the spring of 1935, and talked with Hitler seven hours, was quoted as saying that he showed 'complete mastery' of foreign affairs. This is, of course, nonsense. Hitler does not know one-tenth as much about foreign affairs as, say, H. R. Knickerbocker, or F. A. Voigt, or Frank H. Simonds, or Dorothy Thompson, or Mr. Eden himself. What Eden meant was that Hitler showed unflagging mastery of *his own view* of foreign affairs.

Demosthenes in Brown Shirt

Then there is oratory. This is probably the chief external explanation of Hitler's rise. He talked himself to power. The strange thing is that Hitler is a bad speaker. He screeches; his mannerisms are awkward; his voice breaks at every peroration; he never knows when to stop. Goebbels is a far more subtle and accomplished orator. Yet Hitler, whose magnetism across the table is almost nil, can arouse an audience, especially a big audience, to frenzy.

He knows, of course, all the tricks. At one period he was accustomed to mention at great length the things that 'We Germans' (*wir*) had, or did not have, or wanted to do, or could not do. The word '*wir*' drove into the audience with rhythmic savagery of a pneumatic drill. Then Hitler would pause dramatically. That, he would say, was the whole trouble. In Germany the word '*wir*' had no meaning; the country was disunited; there was no 'we'.

Recently Hitler told a French interviewer about an early oratorical trick and triumph, fifteen years ago in a communist stronghold in Bavaria. He was savagely heckled. 'At any moment they might have thrown me out of the window, especially when they produced a blind War invalid who began to speak against all the things that are sacred to me. Fortunately I had also been blind as a result of the War. So I said to these people, "I know what this man feels. I was even

H1645 – 0052

more bewildered than he at one moment – but *I* have recovered my sight!"'

Hitler's first followers were converts in the literal sense of the term. They hit the sawdust trail. Hitler might have been Aimée Semple McPherson or Billy Sunday. Men listened to him once and were his for life – for instance, Goebbels, Brückner, Goering, Hess.

'Ruin Seize Thee, Ruthless King'

Hitler never flinched from the use of terror, and terror played a powerful role in the creation of the Nazi state. From the beginning he encouraged terror. The only purely joyous passage in *Mein Kampf* is the description of his first big mass meeting, in which the newly-organised SA pummelled hecklers bloody. The function of the SA was rough-house: first, rough-house with the aim of preserving 'order' at public meetings; second, rough-house on the streets, to frighten, terrorise and murder communists.

He gave jobs, big jobs, to confessed and admitted terrorists and murderers, like Heines. When a communist was murdered at Potempa, in Silesia, in circumstances of peculiarly revolting brutality, Hitler announced publicly his spiritual unity with the murderers. When, in August 1932, he thought that Hindenburg might appoint him chancellor, he asked for a three-day period during which the SA could run wild on the streets, and thus revenge themselves upon their enemies.

And we shall see presently what happened on the 30th June, 1934.

Führer Prinzip

Hitler's one contribution to political theory was the *Führer Prinzip* (Leader Principle). This means, briefly, authority from the top down, obedience from the bottom up, the reversal of the democratic theory of government. It was, as Heiden points out, a remarkably successful invention, since almost anybody could join the movement, no matter with what various aims, and yet feel spiritual cohesion through the personality of the leader. The Nazi movement gave wonderful play to diverse instincts and desires.

Then again, Germans love to be ruled. 'The most blissful

H1645 – 0053

state a German can experience is that of being bossed,' a friend of mine put it in Berlin. And Edgar Ansel Mowrer has recorded the shouts of Nazi youngsters on the streets, 'We spit at freedom.' A German feels undressed unless he is in uniform. The *Führer Prinzip* not only exploited this feeling by transforming the passive character of German docility, German obedience, into an active virtue; it gave expression also to the bipolar nature of obedience, namely that most men – even Germans – associate with a desire to be governed a hidden will to govern. The *Führer Prinzip* created hundreds, thousands, of sub-*Führers*, little Hitlers, down to the lowest storm-troop leader. It combined dignified submission with opportunity for leadership.

Mein Kampf, for all its impersonality, reveals over and over again Hitler's faith in 'the man'. After race and nation, personality is his main preoccupation. It is easy to see that the *Führer Prinzip* is simply a rationalisation of his own ambition; the theory is announced on the implicit understanding that the 'man' is Hitler himself. 'A majority,' he says, 'can never be a substitute for the Man.'

H1645 – 0054

CHAPTER III

WHO KILLED THE GERMAN REPUBLIC?

'Everything has a cause and the cause of anything is everything.'
– W. J. TURNER.

PERSONAL qualities alone would not have brought Hitler power. But they contributed to one of the main factors that did – his feat in identifying himself with a large percentage of the German nation. He became a demigod, a prophet, because with great mesmeric ability he persuaded so many Germans that he, and he alone, represented their renascent Germanism. People love Hitler because they love Germany. And Hitler and Germany – to Nazis – are one.

Germany was a loose aggregation of quarrelling states until the dawn of yesterday. Literature in a German language that can be read easily to-day did not exist till the seventeenth century. England and France unified themselves, constituted themselves homogeneous nations, in the Middle Ages; but even Bismarck did not make Germany a nation in the sense that England and France had been nations for five centuries.

Germany, the Nazi apologists say, is now at long last growing up. Adolescence produces pangs in children as well as nations, and no one becomes mature without suffering. The frightfulness of the Nazi terror, the confusions in personnel and administration, the lies and disingenuousness of foreign policy, the extraordinary capacity to blunder and irritate everybody in the outside world (i.e. grown ups) – these are evidences of a period of puberty.

Germany lost the War. It was an honourable defeat and in fact Germany came within a hair's breath of beating the entire world; nevertheless the Germans felt 'humiliation'; they felt degradation and shame. The Nazis invented the legend of having been stabbed in the back by the Jews, socialists, pacifists – to excuse defeat. Hitler made immense capital of this unconscionable distortion of the facts. And he progressed to

H1645 – 0055

another deduction, equally false, that Germany had *not*, in fact, lost the War at all.

His technique was something like the following. He suggested to the German people first that they were sick, second that he alone could make them well. His argument was passionate and direct: 'You are humiliated. You are degraded. Germany is a sick nation. Admit it. Concede the extent of your misery. You have been trying to persuade yourselves that you are content with this miserable republic.

'Those who stabbed you in the back, the Jews and the Marxists, are ruling you to-day. They prevent you from recovering your self-respect. They are the spiritual death of your nation. And your own spiritual death too. For *you* are Germany. *We* are Germany. Be men! Out with the traitors, the Jews, the pacifists, the republicans. . . .' (And so on, in the early speeches, often for two hours and a half.)

These speeches had an immense emotional effect. Women, especially, were overcome by them. If the audience was full of women, Hitler would shriek out, 'You are mine, and I am yours, as long as I live!' So Hitler presented the Germans, who are idealists, who are egocentric, who are profoundly non-political, who had had a rough time, with their lost 'self-respect'. Suppression of liberty was the price they were willing to pay for his leadership.

The same technique is manifest in *Mein Kampf*. Compare this book with, say, the autobiographies of Trotsky or Henry Adams. It is vapid, vain, rhetorical, diffuse, prolix. But it is a powerful and moving book, the product of immense passionate feeling. The theme is stated twenty times, slowly arising out of clouds of circumlocution and confusion, that Germany has been disunited, mortified, crucified, by the peace treaties, and that it must and will arise, a new, powerful, united, regenerated, national state.

One can well imagine hundreds of thousands of honest Germans, from dispossessed shopkeepers to General Blomberg, conscientiously, dutifully picking their way through this turbulent ocean of print, sinking back from it exhausted, but with its message, if only by the ceaseless repetition of the argument, left impregnably in their minds, fecund and germinating.

H1645 – 0056

A number of elements quite outside Hitler's own character contributed, of course, to his meteoric, incredible career. What set the course of that savage, swooping arrow, Brüning-Papen-Schleicher-Hitler? One should keep in mind the following items:

1. The German inflation which was the result of passive resistance to the French invasion of the Ruhr, because it ruined the lower middle class, the *petit bourgeoisie*, and caused it to seize on Hitler's extravagant promises.

2. The deflationary policy of Brüning which helped to crush the upper middle class, already hard hit by the world economic crisis. Hard times bred both the violence of Hitler and the dumb apathy of his opponents. The Nazis fed on other people's hunger.

3. The support of the great industrialists, chiefly the steel magnate Fritz Thyssen, who from 1930 on helped finance the Nazi party. This support was important. It was not, however, decisive. Hitlerism was a tremendous national movement, before the industrialists, seeing how the road led – years late – jumped on the bandwaggon. The idea that Thyssen manufactured the Nazi movement by giving Hitler thousand-mark bills in a back room is simply monstrous, as Raymond Gram Swing has pointed out. As soon as the industrialists belatedly got round to seeing that Hitlerism was useful – since it was losing its early Left characteristics – they offered help. Perhaps they hoped to make Hitler their puppet. But they were mistaken.

4. Sabotage of the republic by its own officials, army officers, and government administrators; coupled with the extremely democratic character of the Weimar constitution whereby demagoguery got every chance to express itself in votes.

5. Finally, personal considerations. A great number of personal imponderables helped blow Hitler into port. The first of these was the mind and character of the old president, Field-Marshal Paul Ludwig Hans von Beneckendorf und von Hindenburg. His mind and character – plus the coruscation of intrigue blazing around him as he aged.

To understand properly Hitler's seizure of Germany and his establishment of power we must tell the inside story of three

H1645 – 0057

great episodes: the Papen-Schleicher-Hindenburg conspiracies, the Reichstag fire, and the events of the 30th of June. Let us begin with Hindenburg. To be blunt, it is quite possible that Hitler would never have become chancellor had not Hindenburg been senile.

The Squire of Neudeck

In the critical year, 1932, Hindenburg was already eighty-five and not in full possession of his faculties. He was 'all right', people said, until about the beginning of the morning, and those rare personages who could get to him at breakfast, or even earlier, could do something with him. This was the great strength of Franz von Papen, for a time his chancellor.

In Berlin at the time the health of the Old Man was of paramount interest, and a marvellous and cruel miscellany of jokes grew up at his expense, hinging on the question of his competency. It was no joking matter; the person of the President was the most powerful constitutional force in the country. But no one could talk or write openly on such a delicate matter: thus the retreat to an apocrypha of sly, biting legend.

One of the Hindenburg stories had him turning in puzzled recollection to his son Oskar and asking, 'Where *has* that chap with glasses (Brüning) gone to?' Another alleged that he confused Brüning with Schleicher when Schleicher was dismissed. And once, the story goes, he received General von Hammerstein, the chief of the Reichswehr; the general had some pretty important business on his mind but Hindenburg began and ended the interview by shouting, 'Herr General, I was not satisfied with the autumn manœuvres!'

When Hitler finally became chancellor, the Old Man – watching the immense parade of Nazi storm-troops celebrating the occasion – carefully unhinged his old knees to sit down and said to Oskar, 'Son, I did not know we had captured quite so many Russian prisoners.'

A favourite story, while Hindenburg was alive, detailed the alleged circumstances of his death. Kneeling at the bar of heaven, he was received by St. Peter who, glancing at him in surprise, asked him his identity. 'I am Hindenburg,' the field-marshal replied. 'But why are you here?' continued St. Peter.

H1645 – 0058

'Because I am dead,' replied Hindenburg. St. Peter shook his head saying, 'There has been an error: you are not dead, but alive.' Hindenburg retreated in confusion: 'Ha! That rascal Meissner has misinformed me again!'

Meissner, the state secretary to the President, wielded profound influence on the Old Man, because next to Oskar he was nearest to his person. Meissner was, and is, a remarkably subtle politician. He has continuously been state secretary to all three German presidents – Ebert, the socialist, Hindenburg, the field-marshal, Hitler the Nazi – an office-holding feat of no small quality. It is said that Hindenburg, knowing that his health and mind were failing, appealed to Meissner to be a super-efficient watchdog, to 'protect' him from breaking his oath, viz. the oath to preserve the Weimar constitution. It is also said that the Nazis 'got to' Hindenburg – through Meissner.

Meissner's influence was always palpable, but it diminished towards the end, as the Old Man, adrift in a perpetual maelstrom of crises and appeals to the German nation, unable to understand the intrigues going on, more and more hesitant to trust anyone, came inevitably to supreme dependence on the one person so close to him that question of faith did not arise – flesh of his own flesh, Oskar, his son.

Oskar was no stripling. He was a veteran officer. He had no taste for politics. But politics were all round him. General von Schleicher, later to become chancellor, was a fellow-officer in his regiment, the Third Potsdamer Foot Guards, and gradually, with Schleicher's connivance, a palace *camarilla* rose, with Oskar a member. The chief business of the *camarilla* was 'protection' of the aged President. Soon he was practically isolated from other contacts.

Every politician who wanted to see Hindenburg – the supreme repository of power – had to penetrate the wall of the *camarilla* first. The power of the *camarilla* grew. The Nazis did their best to gain the President's isolated ear. For a long time, however, Oskar and Schleicher and their crowd, aristocrats and junkers, distrusting Hitler as a parvenu and a corporal, fended them off. In 1928 a group of Prussian notables had presented Hindenburg with an estate at Neudeck, thus fulfilling the Old Man's dearest dream: to become a landowner,

H1645 – 0059

a country squire. Immediately after Hitler became chancellor, the Government of Prussia presented him with an additional five thousand acres of land. The title was made out in Oskar's name, in order to avoid inheritance tax, since it was clear that Hindenburg père could not possibly live much longer.

(Acquisition of the Neudeck estate promptly produced a new joke when the Hitler government began to function. Q. 'What is the newest and smallest concentration camp in Germany?' A. 'Neudeck.')

The *camarilla* exerted power chiefly because the Reichstag parliament met only stertorously and for short intervals (in the two years between December 1930 and November 1932 it did not pass a *single* law) and because the President, and the President alone, possessed the power of appointing a chancellor and giving him authority to dismiss the Reichstag if it were unruly. Intrigue reached a Borgia-point. A period of government by dictaphone began. Between the palace camp, the army camp, the Nazi camp, there was espionage galore. Brüning occasionally amused visitors whom he trusted by pointing up his fireplace and showing them where he imagined a dictaphone – Schleicher's probably – to be.

Brüning, Papen, Schleicher

Dr. Heinrich Brüning was chancellor of Germany from May 1930 to May 1932. He was the most enlightened and civilised statesman that modern Germany has produced. He was a machine-gunner during the War; he entered politics as a Catholic labour-union executive. Even old Junkers like Oldenburg-Januschau grudgingly had to call him the 'best since Bismarck'. He devotedly defended the Weimar constitution; was largely responsible for Hindenburg's re-election as President; took the bold step of outlawing the Brown Shirts, exiling them for a brief period from the streets; sensibly sought to give Germany the victory in foreign policy it needed by proposing the Austro-German customs-union; brought the reparations problem almost to settlement; and was cast out by Hindenburg like a dog.

Brüning detested Hitler, personally and politically, but he begat him. The *leit-motif* of the two Brüning years was defence of the republic against Hitler. The Nazi leader rose

H1645 – 0060

to his first great electoral victory after Brüning became chancellor, with 6,400,000 votes and 107 deputies. Hitler, before 1930, was half a joke. After 1930 he was a tremendous phenomenon. It is one of the most tragic of modern ironies that Brüning, of all men, by the force of terrible circumstances, made way for Hitler. This was because, with the best intentions in the world, Brüning destroyed the German constitution.

In 1930, simply in order to be able to govern at all, Brüning had had to dissolve the Reichstag and begin to govern by decree. He was not the first to do so. Decrees began under Ebert. But Brüning signed them wholesale. He thus founded a system of double government, for the Reichstag permitted him decrees even when it was sitting. The Reichstag drew a razor across its own throat. This was because the Social Democrats, still the largest party, wanted to tolerate him but could not openly support his deflationary measures, which reduced wages and hurt the working class. Brüning reaped the inevitable harvest: he became responsible not to the Will of the Reichstag but to the Whim of the President. Once Hindenburg withdrew confidence in him he was doomed, because he had inadvertently destroyed the authority of the body, the Reichstag, to which he should have been responsible. This set a precedent for future chancellors. They were henceforth no more than creatures of Hindenburg, and presently of the *camarilla*. 'Presidential' Germany began.

By 1932 Brüning, in the opinion of the Hindenburg group, had outlived his usefulness. He had weakened his position vis-à-vis the Nazis by his bold dissolution of the Brown Shirts; vis-à-vis the socialists by his policy of drastic cutting of the social services; and, most important, vis-à-vis the *camarilla* by announcing a programme of agrarian settlement (to reduce unemployment) on bankrupt Junker estates. This mortally offended and terrified the Neudeck clique. Hindenburg, at the end of May 1932, was quietly shipped off to his estates, where he was isolated from everyone, even the chancellor. Schleicher remained in Berlin and undertook secret communication with Oskar in Neudeck. A troop of whisperers were sent in to Hindenburg, telling him that Brüning was an

H1645 – 0061

'agrarian Bolshevik'. He went to Neudeck to ask additional powers: Hindenburg refused to grant them, and out Brüning went – like a gnawed bone.

It was now clear that the man behind the scenes was Major-General Kurt von Schleicher, the secretary of state in the ministry of defence. He represented in this tense and covert struggle for power what was still the most important element in Germany, the Reichswehr, the *army*. Schleicher was a headquarters officer during the War. He spent most of the four years far away from the Front, in Berlin. Don't say he wasn't smart.

From 1923 on he had been a rising influence. In 1924 he was executive officer to von Seeckt, then head of the Reichswehr. Later he broke with von Seeckt. He 'made' his subsequent superior, the Reichswehr minister General Groener; then he 'broke' Groener. And he was the discoverer of Brüning, whom he subsequently destroyed. Schleicher by 1930 had become the political specialist of the Reichswehr, an 'indispensable link between the army and political life'. His power was based partly on his great gifts of character, partly because the army, as an army, became increasingly dominant in German affairs to the exact proportion that civil politics became chaotic and obscure.

But when Hindenburg dismissed Brüning it was not Schleicher but Franz von Papen who, on June 1, 1932, became chancellor of the Reich. No mystery in this, though Papen was virtually unknown. Papen had been picked by Schleicher for the job. Papen, as people in Berlin expressed it, was a 'front' for Schleicher, someone to put out his chin on his behalf. And then an amazing thing happened. Old Hindenburg, who had scarcely known Papen, fell in love with him. A Junker, an officer and a gentleman, suave, quick-witted,[1] a member of the Herrenklub, of impeccable manners and great charm, Papen became the White Haired Boy. Within a few weeks of his arrival at Neudeck he had completely captured the Old Man's confidence. He breakfasted with him as a member of the family, and strode in and out the palace as he pleased.

But Papen's chancellorship, much to his well-bred distress,

[1] But see below. Chapter Seven.

H1645 – 0062

was short. He had to go, despite his popularity in the palace, because he was so fantastically unpopular in the country. Germany was still theoretically a republic, governed by the democratic constitution of Weimar, and on assuming the chancellorship Papen had to call an election. He waited till the last possible day, July 31, and was overwhelmingly beaten. It was at this election that the Nazis reached their highest poll, for the time being – 13,700,000 votes.

Hitler now burned for power. As leader of the largest party, he was received by Hindenburg. Papen was present. Hitler behaved awkwardly; started to rant; demanded the chancellorship on his own terms and asked the same powers that Mussolini had been granted after the march on Rome; and was contemptuously rejected by Hindenburg. The Old Man told Papen, 'Let Hitler mend his manners, or I will appoint him to be a village postmaster.' Wild with fury, Hitler sought to overthrow Papen in the Reichstag; Papen circumvented him by dissolving the body instantly it met.[1]

Prussia, the largest state in the Reich, was still – it should be interpolated – ruled by the Social Democrats. Papen determined upon a coup to annihilate them. Without the shadow of legal authority, he dismissed the socialist leaders, Braun and Severing. Although they might have replied by force or called a general strike, the socialists meekly submitted to arrest. This event was premonition of the death to the republic. It showed Papen, Schleicher – and the Nazis – that the body and spirit of the republic had already perished. And it set the example for similar lawlessness in Prussia by Goering later.

Papen, his parliament dissolved, had to call new elections. They occurred on November 6 and again he took a terrific beating. His first Reichstag sat exactly eleven days, his second exactly three. But this procedure – election, repudiation, dissolution – could not go on indefinitely, even in Germany. The people were tired of balloting. The Nazis dropped two million votes in the November election; so they joined

[1] This was the first Reichstag of which Goering was president. Papen had a narrow escape. With his customary imperturbable casualness, he had forgotten to bring with him the Presidential decree, signed in advance, authorising the dissolution; he retrieved it just in time.

H1645 – 0063

the communists in a Berlin traffic strike, and made threats of united action in a general strike. This scared both the army and the palace. Nobody knew quite what to do. The *camarilla* hesitated; Hindenburg blinked; and Papen went.

After a prolonged crisis Schleicher was pushed into the chancellorship himself. He took the post only after a fortnight of worry and negotiation; he would have much preferred to continue to rule from behind the scenes, or from the impregnable (it was then) Reichswehr ministry. But there was no one else. The *camarilla* was running out of men. Schleicher lasted less than two months. It may surprise people, but he gave promise of an excellent administration. Schleicher despised Hitler and would have kept him from office; he was friendly with labour; he believed in a strong, moderate Germany, and he took a strong, moderate course. And so he came to commit unforgivable sins. To wit: he flirted with the trade unions; he announced himself neither capitalist nor socialist; he permitted scandals about the Osthilfe relief to come out; he even took up Brüning's scheme for colonising the bankrupt Junker estates. Also, he was too confident, too ambitious, and too clever by half. People distrusted him, and once Hindenburg is said to have barked at him, 'When, Herr General, are you going to lead the army against *me*?'

Above all, Schleicher was vanquished by the same thing that fundamentally had beaten both Brüning and Papen – failure to make terms with Hitler, failure somehow to solve the Nazi problem. It was utterly impossible to ignore the pressure of the Nazi movement, even if it had lost two million votes, and was momentarily distracted by the defection of Gregor Strasser, then the second highest Nazi in the party.

Strasser, the head of Hitler's political organisation, commanded between thirty or forty deputies, and his rebellion might have split the Nazi party. Schleicher had been intriguing with him, and he wanted to join the general in a coalition. Hitler squashed him. The episode is a revealing instance of Hitler's shrewd political sense, his implacability, and his tactics. What did Hitler do, faced with this formidable mutiny? He did not dismiss Strasser from the party, as Stalin or Mussolini might have done. Instead he summoned a meeting of all the Nazis deputies. Strasser himself was

H1645 – 0064

present. Ignoring him, Hitler began to speak, somewhat as follows:

'In every group of men there is likely to be a Judas. One of the things about a Judas is that he believes there are other Judases too. We have a Judas in our midst. This Judas of ours has spread reports of growing disaffection. But is he right? *Do* others share this baseness, this treachery of character?' Hitler paused. All eyes were turned on Strasser. Hitler pulled a piece of paper from his pocket. His secret service, *within* the party, was of the best.

'Apparently our other Judases do exist,' Hitler proceeded. 'Not only do they exist; I have their names. Do you want to hear the names of these other Judases, who would destroy our unity, disrupt our party?' Consternation. Hitler began reading names. Deputy A. Deputy B. And so on. All the names of those deputies who he knew sympathised with Strasser. As each name was read, Hitler turned sharply to the man, saying, 'Is it correct? Is it true that you are a Judas?' One and all, naturally, leapt to their feet, screaming denunciation on Strasser, loyalty to Hitler. It was only necessary to read the first few names. The meeting exploded into a pandemonium of violent fidelity.[1]

The Strasser interlude was over. What next? The Nazis were still a tidal wave of almost twelve million voters and no bulwark in a democratic system could withstand the pressure of such a torrent. It was impossible to suppress the Nazis, impossible – so it was thought then – to give them *carte blanche*. The Nazis had to be seduced into the government or they might destroy Germany in civil war involuntarily. Yet Hitler, still smarting from the rebuff in August, steadily refused to enter any coalition save on prohibitive terms. Something had to be given him – but what?

'A Mighty Maze – But Not Without a Plan!'

Hitler might have made a civil war, but his whole policy

[1] A few days later Hitler was returning to Berlin from Munich. His chief lieutenants met him at the station. Strasser, contrite, was among them. Hitler slowly greeted each man, shook his hand; and cut Strasser dead. Strasser, agape, was left standing on the platform. He was murdered, the penalty for his rebellion, on June 30, 1934.

H1645 – 0065

was based on getting office by legal means. He was nicknamed, contemptuously, 'Adolf Legalité'. Perhaps his fear of risking a fight was patriotic; perhaps it was cowardice derived from the cold steel of 1923. His vanity, moreover, was supreme enough to suggest dictatorship of a type new to history, a dictatorship chosen voluntarily by the people, *voted* into power. But he did not have quite the necessary votes. He was too timid to use force. Therefore – intrigue.

The details are confused, a violent explosion of tangled plot and counter-plot.

First, Papen, who was Schleicher's creature, went Frankenstein. Having tasted glory, he wanted more. Partyless (he had been expelled from the Centre), thirsting for position, he joined the Nationalists of Dr. Hugenberg, the industrialist publisher, and leader of the big-capital reactionaries.

Second, Papen, turning on all his charm, contrived to meet Hitler secretly in the home of the banker Schroeder in Cologne. He succeeded in persuading Hitler – at last – to envisage the possibility of coalition.

The Hitler forces were summoning new strength. Hitler rightly regarded Schleicher as the last hurdle between himself and power. Worried, Schleicher called a secret meeting in the Reichswehr ministry. It is said that creation of a military dictatorship was discussed, with the arrest of Papen and Hugenberg. Received by the Old Man, Schleicher cautiously informed him that the situation was serious, that the Reichswehr might have to go into the streets against the Nazis. Schleicher's threat was probably a bluff. He wanted to frighten Papen and Hugenberg. But the threat turned out all wrong.

For hearing that Schleicher planned to call out the army, Papen and Hitler met again. The situation had developed beautifully to Papen's hand. He was now in a position to say to Hitler, 'If you don't join us now – on our terms – we are both lost. Schleicher will set the army on both of us. We *must* make a coalition.' Hitler agreed and accepted terms that hitherto had been impossible for him – three seats in the Cabinet as against Papen-Hugenberg's eight.

Schleicher, disastrously out-Schleichered, was victim of his own intrigue, because Hitler and Hugenberg presented

H1645 – 0066

Papen's plan for a Nazi-Nationalist government, and the Old Man accepted it. He appointed Hitler chancellor, Papen vice-chancellor. Then he rolled round and fell back to sleep. This occurred, an amazing point, before Schleicher, who *was* chancellor, had been dismissed. It was not till next morning that the general, to his bewildered stupefaction, discovered himself out of office. When he heard the news, he walked in a long oval around his room, whispering to himself, head half bent.

(Brüning said, 'I was badly treated – but poor Schleicher – five times worse.')

Hindenburg thought that he had thoroughly safeguarded himself by drawing Hitler's sting. It was established that Hitler should never be received by the Old Man except in Papen's presence. So did democracy die in the Reich. So did Adolf Hitler, who had become a German citizen only a year before, find himself chancellor of Germany.

And little did Papen, Hindenburg or anyone reckon on the next bizarre development – the Reichstag fire.

H1645 – 0067

CHAPTER IV

THE TRICK BY FIRE AND THE PURGE BY BLOOD

'Goering discloses the fact that the late Kurt von Schleicher plotted a coup against the Reich in 1933. We knew the Nazis would find out some day what they shot him for.'

– HOWARD BRUBAKER.

ON the night of February 27, 1933, a few days before the March 5 elections which were to confirm Hitler's chancellorship, the building of the German Reichstag in Berlin was gutted by fire. This fire destroyed what remained of the German republic. It not only burned a public building; it incinerated the communist, social democratic, catholic, and nationalist parties of Germany. It was discovered at about nine-fifteen on a winter evening back in 1933; but its embers are burning yet.

The Reichstag fire ruined a couple of million marks' worth of glass and masonry. It also ruined some thousands of human lives. Logically, inevitably, the fire produced the immense Nazi electoral victory of March 5, the savageries of the subsequent Brown Terror, the persecution of the Jews, the offensive against Austria, and the enormous process of *Gleichschaltung,* or forcible assimilation, which for the next years steam-rollered over Germany.

The fire turned an imposing edifice to dust and ashes. Also it turned to dust and ashes the lifework of many thousands of pacifists, liberals, democrats, socialists, decent-minded people of all sorts and classes. But for the fire the Nazis would never have gained so sweeping and crushing a victory. In the flames of the Reichstag fire disappeared the old Germany of Bismarck, William II, and the Weimar constitution. In its smoke arose Hitler's Third Reich.

'When Germany awoke,' Douglas Reed wrote, 'a man's home was no longer his castle. He could be seized by private

H1645 – 0068

individuals, could claim no protection from the police, could be indefinitely detained without preferment of charges; his property could be seized, his verbal and written communications overheard and perused; he no longer had the right to forgather with his fellow countrymen, and his newspapers might no longer freely express their opinions.'

The actual course of events the night of February 27 is quickly told. Smoke and flames were seen from the windows of the Reichstag, in the heart of Berlin near the butt end of the Unter den Linden, at about nine-fifteen p.m. The fire brigade was there by nine-twenty-five. The main hall was already a roaring cauldron. The ramparts of the building were saved but the interior was gutted. Incendiarism was soon suspected. The fire had started simultaneously in a great number of places – between twenty and thirty in all, according to a subsequent official report. Goering and Hitler arrived within an hour and at once said the fire was the work of communists. 'A sign from Heaven!' Hitler exclaimed, as he surveyed the ruins.

The background of these events may also be briefly sketched. Hitler, as we know, had become Reichskanzler. He had only three Nazis in the cabinet as against eight belonging to Papen-Hugenberg, but he had not the faintest thought of playing second-string to them. To accomplish supremacy a great increase in Nazi votes in the March 5 elections was necessary. Hitler desperately needed what he had never had before, a clear majority of Reichstag seats. Papen-Hugenberg were equally determined to prevent this. There was much bad feeling between Hitler and the nationalists. Fighting on a common front, they were fighting each other in reality, because each wanted to dominate the ensuing government.

Things were not going too well with Hitler. Hindenburg still distrusted him. There were wild rumours that Hitler would seek to depose him by force. The Nazis feared that they were going to lose votes. Only one thing might save them by giving them a clear majority. There would be, it was estimated, about six hundred deputies in the new Reichstag, and the communist party was bound to get about one hundred of them. The Nazis claimed about two hundred and fifty. Well, two hundred and fifty is not a clear majority of six hundred;

H1645 – 0069

but is half of five hundred. Therefore suppress the communist party and wipe out those critical one hundred seats, and all was won.

At first the Nazis decided to raid the Karl Liebknecht house, the communist party headquarters in Berlin, incriminate the communists in conspiracy to revolt, and thus obtain a pretext to suppress them. The raid was carried out, but it was a failure. The date for the elections was rapidly approaching. Tension between Hitler and Papen-Hugenberg increased. The Nazis had to think of something else – in a hurry. They did.

The fire produced exactly what the Nazis hoped for. This we have seen.

The one hundred communist deputies were arrested. A state of virtual siege was proclaimed. The provisions of the constitution guaranteeing individual liberty were suppressed. Plans for a communist outbreak were 'revealed'. Germany rose with a roar. There was intense public excitement. The Nazis stormed the country, and Hitler was able to manœuvre himself into a dictatorship for four years, affix himself to power immovably, unshakably.

Arson de Luxe

The inside story of the fire is not as well known as one might think. The Nazis did their job so expertly that, whereas everyone well informed instantly suspected them of complicity, there was much puzzlement as to details. Even to-day there are mysteries, subsidiary mysteries, not entirely clear. Let us deal with them.

During the night of the fire a Dutch half-wit named Marinus van der Lubbe was arrested when police found him in the burning ruins. There were no witnesses to his arrest except the police. The first statements about the Dutchman, issued by Goering, were false. It was said that he had a membership-card of the communist party on his person, a leaflet urging common action between socialists and communists, several photographs of himself, and a passport. Obliging fellow! He did possess the passport, but not the other documents, as the trial subsequently proved.

His career and movements were closely traced. He had set

H1645 – 0070

three other fires – minor ones – in Berlin just before the Reichstag fire. In 1929 he had joined what was apparently called the Dutch Communist Youth Organisation, a secessionist group. Two years later he was expelled from this as a worthless and stupid fellow. He never belonged to the communist party itself. Van der Lubbe's itinerary the few days before the fire was well established. As late as the night of February 17–18 he slept at Glinow, near Potsdam. He could not have got to Berlin before the 19th or 20th. Yet within a week he, an unknown tramp, either (*a*) so insinuated himself into the graces of the rigidly articulated communist party as to be given the dangerous and delicate job of firing the Reichstag, or (*b*) was hired to do it by someone else.

When it became clear, even in Germany, that the Van der Lubbe explanation would simply not hold water, the mystery thickened. The police got to the point of having to admit that Van der Lubbe had confederates. But how, carrying incendiary material, could enough of them possibly have penetrated the Reichstag walls, doorways, or windows in the middle of Berlin without being seen?

The German authorities themselves let the cat out of the bag, and an astounding cat it proved to be. It was announced that the incendiaries had presumably entered and escaped from the building by means of an underground tunnel leading from the Reichstag basement to the palace of the speaker of the Reichstag – Goering – across the street. Originally this tunnel was part of the Reichstag's central heating system. Until an official *communiqué* revealed its existence not a dozen persons in Berlin had ever heard of it. So one aspect of the mystery was solved. The incendiaries, whoever they were, got in and out of the Reichstag building – through Goering's back yard. Incredible information!

An ostrich sticks its head in the sand – well-meaning but stupid ostrich. There is an obverse of the ostrich process. A man may naïvely and stridently call attention to something he wishes to conceal, hoping thereby to lessen interest in it. A squirrel hides a nut under a tree. Then he squats and points at it, showing where it is. Disingenuously a man may reveal what is embarrassing to him, hoping thus to modify the terms of the embarrassment.

H1645 – 0071

Long before the trial opened the accusation that the Nazis themselves had burned the building had impressed the world. A mock trial was held in London. The *Brown Book*, telling part of the story – but inaccurately – was published by *émigrés* and widely circulated. Moreover, a secret nationalist memorandum, written to the order of a prominent deputy named Oberfohren, was passed from hand to hand. Oberfohren was a nationalist, a Junker, one of Papen's men. He asserted flatly that the Nazis were the incendiaries. In June, a Nazi detachment searched his flat; mystery for some time surrounded Oberfohren's whereabouts. Then it was announced that he had 'shot himself'.

The half-wit Van der Lubbe was not the only person arrested. Ernst Torgler, chairman of the communist *bloc* in the Reichstag, gave himself up to the police when he heard the announcement incredible to his ears that he was accused of complicity; subsequently three Bulgarian communists, Dimitrov, Popov, and Tanev were arrested, when a waiter who had served them in a Berlin café told the police that their activities had been 'suspicious'. Dimitrov was in Munich, not Berlin, on the night of the fire, as an incontrovertible alibi proved; nevertheless he was held for five months until the trial, without a scrap of evidence against him.

Trial

I reported the trial in both Liepzig and Berlin during its first six weeks. The court sat for fifty-seven days, and provided superlative drama. The trial was neither a farce nor a frame-up. The behaviour of the police and judicial authorities before the trial was outrageous, but once the proceedings reached the court-room there was a difference. The court got itself into a curious dilemma, of having to pretend to be fair even while exercising the greatest animus against the defendants, and little by little this necessity – caused mostly by the pressure of foreign opinion – to simulate justice led to some modicum of justice in the court-room.

When the trial opened, I think, the judges like many people in Germany genuinely thought that Van der Lubbe was a communist and that the communists were guilty. The prosecution thought so too and, assuming that the trial would be

H1645 – 0072

quick, it made no serious effort to fabricate a 'good' case. As the hearings went on it became evident even to the judges that there was no case at all. The evidence of the prosecution was a colossal confusion of inaccuracies, contradictions, and plain lies. But once the trial started, it couldn't be stopped. With dreadful pertinacity, with true Teutonic thoroughness, the court plodded on, deeper every day in a morass of evidence that ineluctably proved just what it didn't want proved – the innocence of the accused. The prosecution, nervous, began to produce incredible cranks as witnesses, whom even the judges couldn't stomach; the judges turned Dimitrov out of court whenever his questions became too intolerably pointed – which was often.

No one, of course, counted on the brilliant gallantry of Dimitrov. This Bulgarian revolutionary had, moreover, brains. Unerringly he picked every flaw in the testimony of a crooked witness; unerringly he asked just those questions most damaging to the prosecution. He turned the trial into a public forum. The trial started as an attempt to pin the guilt of the Reichstag arson on the defendants. Dimitrov turned it before long into an action precisely opposite: one desperately seeking to clear the Nazis of the same charge.

Also Dimitrov, if only because he is the only man in recorded history to have made Goering turn publicly red in the neck, contributed deeply to the pure joy of living. When a witness could not be found, he asked: 'Have you looked for him in a concentration camp?' When the judge rebuked him for making communist propaganda, Dimitrov pointed to Goering – on the witness-stand – and said with a subtle combination of impudence and perfect courtesy: 'But he's making national socialist propaganda!' No one who saw him will ever forget Dimitrov pointing to Lubbe and exclaiming, in his picturesque Balkan German: 'This miserable Faust! Who is his Mephistopheles?' Nor the climax to his final speech when, imperturbable as ever with the executioner's axe or Goering's private vengeance facing him, he demanded of the court 'compensation for his wasted time!'

Once the court was forced into calling every relevant witness, like porters and workmen in the Reichstag building, the flood-gates were open. Important little clues came out. Lubbe,

H1645 – 0073

inert, apathetic, testified – in one of his few lucid moments – that he had been 'with Nazis' the night before the fire. A gateman testified that a Nazi deputy, Dr. Albrecht, left the burning building, in great excitement, as late as ten p.m. A servant in Goering's house, Aldermann, testified that he heard, on several nights before the fire, mysterious sounds in the underground tunnel. Thus the fire – got hot.

Mystery

The court had no option but to acquit Torgler, Dimitrov, Popov, and Tanev; Van der Lubbe was sentenced to death and presently decapitated. (Torgler, one should interpolate, was held in 'protective custody' for two years after the trial, though the court declared him innocent.) The Dutchman died with his lips sealed, and with him to the grave went one secret – how exactly he and the incendiaries had worked together.

It was quite clear that he could not have set the fire alone. He was armed with household fire-lighters only; the expert evidence proved that some self-combustible chemical, phosphorous and sulphur, besides large quantities of petrol, which Lubbe could not possibly have carried, were used in the central hall of the Reichstag chamber. He was half blind; he shambled rather than walked; the Reichstag was a dark, unfamiliar building, composed of stone and heavy wood; yet two minutes five seconds (the re-enactment proved) after he entered the building, the central hall was fiercely burning.

It was also quite clear that Van der Lubbe was not an overt *agent provocateur* hired by the Nazis. This theory, for a long time popular, had to be given up immediately Lubbe took the stand. Not even a Nazi plotter could have picked an agent so inept and witless. Lubbe was an obvious victim of maniacal depressive psychosis. He could not have been acting. Nor was he drugged. He was no friend of the Nazis, and the court was terrified every time he opened his mouth.

Thus this mystery: if Van der Lubbe acted independently of the Nazis, how could the fire have been so physically successful? If he acted with the Nazis, why did he all but give them away in court?

H1645 – 0074

The answer is, first, according to the only theory that will fit the facts, Van der Lubbe was not an *agent provocateur*, but a dupe; second, according to expert testimony at the trial which can hardly be gainsaid, there were *two* fires, not one, in the Reichstag building that night.

Van der Lubbe, a typical enough unfortunate by-product of modern civilisation, was not only weak-minded; he had a deep grievance against society and authority, which his feeble brain sought to remedy by pyromania. He was a genuine arsonist. A homeless vagrant, wandering in the Berlin slums, he set several fires, and in his thick manner boasted about them. And Nazis heard him. So much is fact.

Entering the Reichstag building, Van der Lubbe ignited his miserable smudges of table-clothes and curtains, using his shirt for tinder. The fires, like the acts of arson he had committed on previous days, were not fires but failures to set fires; feeble puddles of smoke and soot, nothing more. He proceeded – and must have seen, bursting ahead of him, a mighty cauldron of vivid flame! This was the other fire. It was the chemical fire set by the Nazis, who carried their material through the Goering tunnel, and timed it to go off at just that moment. But Lubbe thought it was *his* fire! He retreated, proud, triumphant – and was arrested by the police.

This was just what the Nazis planned. They wanted a scapegoat – any kind of scapegoat – so that they could blame the communists. The link between Lubbe and the Nazis is quite clear. He said in the Berlin underworld that he was going to burn the Reichstag. It was a matter of a moment – so honeycombed was Berlin with spies, tools, agents – for this information to reach high quarters.

The Nazis knew that Lubbe was going to be there. But they did not tell him that *they* were going to be there. *He* thought that he was alone. He never knew the Nazis were acting on his words. Thus his peculiar behaviour in the court. He was proud of his fire; he resented it deeply when anyone was put forward to share the credit. With impenetrable obstinacy, he insisted that he had no confederates, and set the fire alone – and really believed it. This is the only combination of theory and fact which accounts for all the circumstances of the Reichstag fire. It is the theory which

H1645 – 0075

Dimitrov, when I saw him in Moscow in June 1935, accepted as the best explanation of the events.

Explanation?

Karl Ernst, one of those extraordinary characters tossed up from obscurity to flitting eminence by the turmoil of the Nazi revolution, was murdered on June 30. He had been a waiter in a night club in the west end of Berlin. He was Roehm's chief protégé, and consequently his promotion was very rapid; at the age of twenty-seven he became *Obergruppenführer* (a rank corresponding to major-general) of the Berlin-Brandenburg SA, numbering sixty-five thousand men. Before June 30, Ernst was aware of impending dissension within the party. He wrote a letter, dated June 3, 1934, and sent it abroad, with instructions that it be published if his dark fears became true.

This Ernst letter purports to be a full description of the Reichstag fire plot. It gives a brilliant and terrible picture of the attitude and manners of the Nazi leaders just before the fire and after. They were (except for Hitler, who is mentioned reverently only as 'He'), vulgar, lusty, cruel, courageous, and having a marvellous time. They sound like a group of Capones in politics for the fun of it. And the fire was plotted almost like a bit of deviltry.

Ernst says that he lit the actual fire. His comrades were two SA men, Fiedler and Von Mohrenschild.

All three were 'executed' in the clean-up of June 30. Dead tongues tell no tales.

The Ernst letter may not be genuine. Even so, if Ernst didn't set the fire, someone like him did.

Blood Bath

The events of June 30, 1934, were an historic inevitability. They were indeed a necessity. Hitler was poised between two mutually exclusive armies, the Reichswehr (regular army), and the SA, his private Brown Shirt force, led by Roehm. Events made it imperative for him to give undisputed authority to one or the other. He chose the Reichswehr. The SA therefore had to be liquidated. This, in plain language, is the secret of June 30.

H1645 – 0076

A secondary consideration, almost as important, was the nature of the Nazi party itself. The party, as Heiden put it, was a unity not of aims but of causes; it was founded on no coherent body of doctrine; its personnel was of the most various. The *Führer Prinzip* was its only structural bastion, and when sub-leaders became jealous of one another and thus undermined it, even though Hitler himself was not attacked, there was nothing to do but eliminate them – forcibly.

Third, it is necessary to remember that what began as a terrible administration of discipline to the adherents of Roehm degenerated uncontrollably into a violent situation which leaders seized as a priceless opportunity to settle old-standing party or *private* grudges. Admit terror as a principle, as Hitler did: and there was no telling where it would end.

The deaths occurred mostly on the night of June 30–July 1. Hitler, in his speech justifying the executions, admitted to seventy-seven slain. This was certainly an underestimate. The full toll may never be known. Probably it reached two hundred and fifty, possibly three hundred.

The dead fall into several groups. First, the SA men:

Captain Ernest Roehm, Reichs minister without portfolio and chief of staff of the SA; Hitler's best friend; organiser of his private army.

Karl Ernst, SA *Obergruppenführer*, Berlin and Brandenburg.

Three other SA *Obergruppenführers* (major-generals), Edmund Heines, boss of Silesia; August Schneidhuber, police president of Munich, and Fritz von Krausser.

Hans Hayn, SA *Gruppenführer* for Saxony, and other *Gruppenführers* (brigadier generals).

SA *Standartenführer* (colonel) Uhl, named by Hitler as the man appointed to assassinate him.

Second, a 'Catholic' group, composed mostly of men close to Vice-Chancellor von Papen:

Dr. Erich Klausner, leader of the 'Catholic Action', an important and distinguished political leader.

Adelbert Probst, leader of the Catholic Youth movement.

Fritz von Bose, Papen's state secretary.

Edgar Jung, Papen's private secretary.

Dr. Beck, of the International Students Exchange.

H1645 – 0077

Third, victims of private or semi-private vengeance:

Gregor Strasser, brilliant theoretician of the Nazi party, formerly Hitler's second highest man, in virtual retirement since November 1932.

Gen. von Kahr, the dictator of Bavaria in 1923, whom the Nazis said 'betrayed' the first Hitler *Putsch.*

Dr. Walter Lutgebrune, who defended Ludendorff in the trial after the 1923 Munich *Putsch.*

Fourth, in a special group:

Gen. Kurt von Schleicher, former chancellor.
Elizabeth von Schleicher, his wife.
Gen. von Bredow, his former assistant in the ministry of war.

Finally, those killed purely by accident, like the Munich music critic Willi Schmidt, who was executed by an SS squad despite his protests that he was not the Willi Schmidt, a Munich SA man, whom it sought. The proper Willi Schmidt was found and duly shot – later.

Former Chancellor von Papen, after his secretaries were killed, barely escaped with his life, and former Chancellor Brüning would certainly have been killed, had he not fled the country, against his will and on the urgent advice of friends, twenty-seven days before. Brüning slipped over the Dutch frontier partially disguised, in the company of Dutch priests.

Why was Schleicher killed? Why did these other former chancellors narrowly escape death? Because (*a*) they *were* former chancellors, and Brüning and Schleicher were the only two men in Germany who could conceivably have succeeded Hitler if intrigue of the same kind that brought him to power should presently unseat him; (*b*) Papen was still at his own game of palace manœuvres, and had deeply shocked and annoyed Nazi extremists by a speech at Marburg on June 17, attacking them; (c) Brüning was the man who had dared take the Nazi Brown Shirts off the streets, and they never forgave him for it.

Additionally, Schleicher was murdered because many leading Nazis thought him dangerous. The allegation that Schleicher had intrigued with a foreign power was nonsensical. He was a friend of Roehm's, but no evidence has been adduced that he and Roehm were actually plotting. Schleicher was a

H1645 – 0078

great diner-out; he was called the 'Social General' and had friends in the foreign embassies; that was all.

Fellow officers in the Reichswehr deeply resented Schleicher's murder, and they demanded that his name be cleared. The Nazis hedged. The documents in the case were in the hands of Himmler, the SS chief. The Reichswehr obtained the documents – no one knows how. Himmler tried to get them back. He failed. A group of four hundred Reichswehr officers met in a semi-public ceremony, with the old Field-Marshal von Mackensen in the chair, and drank a toast to Schleicher's memory, inscribing his name and that of Bredow in the regimental honour-roll. This frightened the Nazis. A hush-hush meeting was called by Goering, attended by a handful of prominent Nazis and all Reichswehr officers above the rank of captain, at which, it is believed, Goering confessed that Schleicher's death, like that of Willi Schmidt, was a 'mistake'.

Could any 'plot' (by talking of a plot, Hitler justified the clean-up)[1] have united Roehm, Strasser, Schleicher, Von Kahr, Willi Schmidt, Fritz von Bose, Klausner. The idea is, of course, fantastic. But was Roehm alone, as boss of the SA, considering subversive action? Most of those who were in Berlin at the time think not. But it is just possible.

Background of the Killings

Berlin was very tense in May and June, 1934, and economic distress was sharp. The revolution had taken place, i.e. the Nazis had seized power. But where were the rewards of victory? Why had not the Nazi economic programme been converted to reality? The radical Nazis, the rank and file, the men in the street, felt that Goering and the Reichswehr and the industrialists had grabbed the plums. They were tense with dis-

[1] German apologists have been hard put to it to explain both the killings and Hitler's explanations of them. The most novel excuse I heard came from a highly nationalist German. Roehm and the others were shot, he said, because the Treaty of Versailles deprived Germany of colonies. Other countries may relegate unpopular or fallen heroes to distant places; for instance Mussolini sent Balbo to Lybia to cool his heels. But Germany has no colonial posts available. Roehm might easily have gone to Tanganyika as administrator. But Tanganyika is no longer German, and therefore nothing could be done with Roehm save shoot him.

H1645 – 0079

satisfaction, and they appealed to Hitler – in vain. The Leader announced that no 'second revolution' would occur.

Discontent was concentrated, among Nazis, in the SA. The SA considered itself the chief instrument of the party. It was Hitler's army of the streets, that had brought him office; Hitler was a Brown Shirt, first and last. The SA was the pedestal of the movement; the submerged mass and reservoir of man power; it contained many honest Leftists, eager for the promised land of economic reform.

The SA had swollen to the immense number of 2,500,000 men, and with the revolution complete there was nothing for them to do. They were all dressed up – in their nice brown shirts – with no place to go. Hitler, having created a private army, didn't know what to do with it. They were a fearsome burden on party finance; they had been replaced for guard duty by the SS; and they were an ocean of restlessness and undirected energy.

The leader of the SA was Roehm. He was a remarkable man. He had the blunt energy of Goering, the sharp ruthlessness of Goebbels, and an organising talent like none in Germany. A brusque character, a man of limited imagination, who hated peace, loved disorder, Roehm was second only to Hitler in the affection of the Brown Shirts. Hitler owed more to Roehm than to anybody. Hitler created the SA, but Roehm was the disciplinarian, the executive. And Hitler loved him.

Roehm's solution of the SA problem was quite simple. Ambitious, he wanted to feed the SA into the Reichswehr,[1] convert the Reichswehr into an immense national army, and become head of the armed forces of the German state. Thus he became the personification of two tendencies. He was (*a*) the chief of the Leftist tendencies of the régime, since the SA were the Have-Nots in Germany, and (*b*) the competitor of the Reichswehr for basic authority in the nation.

The Reichswehr naturally opposed him with bitterness and vigour. The generals, first, had no intention of giving up their jobs to Roehm; second, they had built the 100,000 men of the Reichswehr into a beautifully precise and tempered

[1] He had had this idea as far back as 1922, and went to exile in South America when he previously split with Hitler on the same issue.

H1645 – 0080

military instrument, and would have committed suicide rather than see it drowned, inundated, with two and a half million hooligans, clerks, half-trained boys, *lumpen Proletariat* off the streets. Merger with the SA meant death to the Reichswehr. And the general staff told Hitler so – in no uncertain terms.

The Leader sought about him warily. He hated to give up Roehm; but on the other hand the 100,000 men of the Reichswehr were infinitely more valuable to him than the 2,500,000 virtually unarmed SA. Assiduously he had cultivated the Reichswehr higher officers, especially General von Blomberg, who was minister of defence. Blomberg, an important point, became deeply devoted to Hitler. Actually on June 29, the day before the clean-up, Blomberg in a significant speech expressed his contentment with the Nazi régime. This was enough for Hitler. If he could be absolutely sure of the Reichswehr, the most powerful force in Germany, the SA lost its *raison d'être*.

Hitler called Roehm to see him. They talked for five hours. Roehm asked him once more to enlarge the Reichswehr by inclusion of the SA. Hitler told him that the general staff of the Reichswehr insisted on selective recruiting, when and if conscription was introduced. Roehm departed, beaten. Sulking, he went to Munich. It was announced that, beginning July 1, the SA would take two months' leave, during which period they were not to wear uniforms. The SA off the streets! The revolution betrayed!

At this point should be mentioned another factor. We have not till now discussed the SS. These, the *Schutzstaffl*, were the *Black* Shirts, about three hundred thousand strong. They were the *élite* of the fighting forces of the party, founded originally as a bodyguard to Hitler and the other leaders. The SA was a mob. The SS was a pretorian guard, smart, well-fed, armed. The SA was loyal to Roehm. The SS, with which Roehm had nothing to do, was loyal to Hitler. The chief of the SS was a man who hated Roehm, Himmler. And Hitler could count on the SS absolutely.

The Reichswehr was sufficiently alarmed by this crisis to undertake unusual precautions. For ten days before the clean-up, Reichswehr staff officers in Berlin carried service revolvers, keeping them at hip even in their offices. A Reichs-

H1645 – 0081

wehr regiment was mobilised at Doebritz, near Berlin. This followed rumours – apparently without substantiation – that Karl Ernst, the most devoted of Roehm's followers, intended to defy the SA dispersal order and occupy Berlin. It was even said that Ernst intended murdering the entire general staff!

Precautions by the Reichswehr do not prove the existence of a plot. It is even possible that the Reichswehr, to serve its own ends, might have invented a plot, so as to be rid of Roehm. Certainly young Ernst seemed remarkably innocent of any political intentions, let alone mutiny. He had recently married and he was arrested *en route* to Bremen, where he was boarding ship for a postponed honeymoon in Madeira. Hitler had been best man at his wedding, not six weeks before.

'Spake The Grisly Terror'

Possibly to allay suspicions by Roehm that he was aware of treason, if any existed, Hitler left for south Germany to inspect a labour camp. He took Goebbels with him, and also a man named Lutze, who when Roehm was dead was promptly named new SA chief of staff. Goering had been charged with the clean-up in Berlin. That was why Goebbels was with Hitler. Goering, running wild, was capable of anything. In the middle of the night (June 29), Hitler records that he heard news of 'such serious character' that he must take action at once.

Goebbels had described the occasion picturesquely:

> 'I still see the Leader standing on the terrace of the Godesberg Hotel. The Leader looks seriously into the dark sky. Nobody knows yet what threatens. The Leader is true to his own principles. The Leader is full of determination regarding the reactionary rebels who have cast the nation into unlimited disturbance.
>
> 'Reports come to him from Berlin and Munich. After only a few minutes' conference, the decision is made not to wait until the next morning. We start at two in the night. At four we are in Munich.
>
> 'On the aerodrome the Leader receives reports. Then he decides to go into the lions' den. He rushes by car to Wiessee. Without resistance he manages to get into the house of Roehm. With incomparable courage Hitler carries out the arrests. Soon after the arrest of Roehm his staff arrives from Munich. Hitler confronts them and tells them in one sentence to go back to Munich. They obey.'
>
> – (*Manchester Guardian*, July 2, 1934.)

H1645 – 0082

Now, if Roehm was planning an outbreak in Munich on the 30th, why was he in bed at Wiessee, twenty miles away, at six a.m. of the morning that the action was alleged (by Hitlerites) to have begun? Why, if Munich was rising in revolt, was it quite peaceable when Hitler, the same morning, arrived there?

An official Nazi *communiqué* describes the raid at Wiessee in more detail:

> The Führer entered, and in person arrested Chief of Staff Roehm, who yielded 'silently and without resistance' in his bedroom. In Heines's room immediately opposite 'a shameful picture' met the Führer. Heines was in bed with a youth; the repulsive scene which accompanied their arrest cannot be described. It pitilessly reveals the conditions reigning in the circles around the former Chief of Staff.
>
> – (*The Times*, July 2, 1934.)

The unofficial story has it that Hitler, far from being alone, was accompanied by a squadron of SS gunmen, and that Roehm, far from accepting arrest silently, bawled insults at the Leader, denouncing him as a traitor to the revolution, and that Hitler shouted in return until SS men took Roehm away.

Roehm was brought into Munich. Heines and his *Lustknabe* were apparently dispatched on the spot. Hitler did not know what to do with Roehm. The chief of staff was clapped in prison and told to shoot himself. He refused, saying that if anyone shot him, it would have to be 'Adolf himself'. He was not killed till five p.m. the next day, about thirty-six hours after his arrest. No one knows the precise circumstances. Probably the jailers came to Hitler again and again, with the words, 'He won't kill himself. . . . What shall we do. . . ?' And one can imagine Hitler's final, irritated, desperate order to get rid somehow of the man who was his only friend, get him out of the way, shoot him, kill him. . . .

The others did not matter to Hitler so much – personally. There were plenty of others. He made a clean sweep of the allegedly disaffected SA leaders in the Munich and the vicinity. Then early in the morning he sent Goering a code message to go ahead in Berlin. Goering waited till about eleven a.m. before cutting loose. The inference is that he wanted to see who came out on top, Hitler or Roehm. Then Goering com-

H1645 – 0083

menced action, 'expanding the original scope of his instructions,' as he admitted later.

It is a moot point whether Goering had talked over with Hitler those whom he wished to kill. Possibly not. Hitler's 'executive' orders were often extremely vague.[1] At any rate the death squads got to work. Himmler superintended them. Annihilation, quick and terrible, began.

Schleicher was shot in his home. He was completely unaware that any action against him impended. He was, in fact, talking to a friend on the telephone when the SS men arrived. He said into the telephone, 'Excuse me just a moment; someone is in the room.' He turned and saw his executioners. They mowed him down. Frau von Schleicher, hearing the shots, rushed into the room. She was shot so that there would be no witness to her husband's death.

The SS men were divided into two groups. Those who did the shooting were full-time veterans, members of Hitler's *Leibstandarten* (bodyguard). The executions, as apart from downright assassinations, took place in the Lichterfelde barracks. The culprits were given a one-minute 'trial' before a drum-head court martial. The procedure in most cases was simply a statement by the officer in charge, 'You are accused of treachery and condemned to death.' As each man was brought out to face the firing squad, a blinding searchlight was turned into his eyes and drums rolled. Then the volley.

Several of the condemned SA leaders, including Sander, Ernst's chief of staff, were shot with 'Heil Hitler' on their lips. They thought that a mutinous group of SS men had revolted *against Hitler* and that they were dying loyal to the *Führer* and the Nazi movement! 'Traitors,' indeed!

It took Hitler from July 1 to July 13 to recover his shaken nerve. At first the announcement was made that only a few ranking SA leaders and General von Schleicher and his wife had been killed. Fearing that the plot theory would not receive credence the propaganda ministry also called attention to the homosexual character of Roehm, Heines, and their

[1] The story goes that Hitler, some months later, was asked by a foreigner the whereabouts of a friend. A Nazi at the luncheon table stammered explanation that he had 'disappeared on June 30'. Hitler paled, not knowing the man was dead.

H1645 – 0084

closest friends. The party had always been split on the homosexual issue. Hitler spoke on July 13 and tolled off the names of the seventy-seven whom he admitted to be dead. He looked like a broken man. The first part of his speech was received in almost complete silence, though Nazi deputies (some thirty seats were significantly vacant) were the audience.

In immense detail, according to habit, Hitler first sketched the history of the Nazi revolution. Then he recounted his differences with Roehm. About details of the 'plot' he was far from precise. Referring to Schleicher's alleged meeting with a foreign diplomat, he made the remarkable statement that if 'German traitors met a foreign statesman and gave strict orders to conceal it from me, I will have such men shot, no matter whether this clandestine discussion had been devoted only to the weather, old coins, and the like.' Then he concluded with his passionate outburst that for twenty-four hours he had been supreme court of the German people – and the audience broke into wild applause.

June 30 had both good and bad results as far as the party in general was concerned. It undoubtedly performed a party service in removing from circulation such unsavoury men as Heines, who was a confessed murderer. On the other hand – the incidental horror quite apart – it 'destroyed something that is unlikely ever to be completely reconstructed, the illusion of indestructible patriotic unity, of that eternal loyalty to each other which the national socialist leaders had so often proclaimed'. And it ended finally 'radicalism' in the party.

Modern Monte Cristo

As extraordinary as some of the murders on June 30, were some of the escapes. Take the case of Gottfried Treviranus. He had been a submarine commander during the War and as a cabinet minister under Brüning had taken a nationalist point of view almost as strong as that of the Nazis. But he was on the death list for several reasons: (1) he was Brüning's closest friend, (2) he was a strong influence in the fighting services, (3) he had always despised Hitler and made no bones about it.

On June 30, just after lunch, Treviranus was playing tennis

H1645 – 0085

in his back yard. A lorry containing a dozen SS men, with drawn revolvers, ground to a stop athwart his house. One of his children met them and they shouted 'Where is Treviranus?' A voice from upstairs, attracted by the commotion, called 'Here I am.' But this was Treviranus's father! Rushing upstairs the SS men saw him, realised their mistake, and asked where his son was. Meanwhile the child ran out and told Treviranus, in the tennis court, what was happening. Instantly he jumped the garden wall and leapt into his car, parked outside. The SS men, now downstairs, saw him drive off, shot at him and missed.

Very intelligently Treviranus drove straight into town instead of trying to get into the country; the truck full of SS followed him but could not shoot on account of the heavy traffic, then lost him. Treviranus stopped at the home of a friend and borrowed street clothes. He then went to Schleicher's house to find out what was happening. There was a crowd outside. He got out of his car and *asked* an SS guard what had occurred. Hearing that Schleicher had been shot, Treviranus jumped back into his car with considerable alacrity but outward calm, and drove into the country, where he smashed the car against the edge of the road, to give the impression he had sought further escape into the fields. He returned to inner Berlin by taxi and took refuge in the house of a friend.

Several English opponents of the Nazis did stalwart service as Scarlet Pimpernels. One risked dreadful British punishments by falsifying his passport and allowing it to be used for smuggling out of Germany two young children, son and daughter of another victim of the purge.

End of Hindenburg

On August 2, Hindenburg died. The bloodshed of June 30 may have been a shock to his aged frame; on the other hand the Old Man seemed to have been well satisfied with Hitler and Goering, because he sent telegrams of congratulation to each.

Even the day before the death the most competent of Berlin correspondents and diplomats considered that the event must be a crisis of the gravest sort for Hitler. Who would be President? Could he appoint himself President?

H1645 – 0086

If he did so, who would become Chancellor? Above all, what would the Reichswehr do?

Now, with better perspective, we know that Hitler had bought off the army on June 30. Even so, wise after the event, one is bound to be impressed at Hitler's cleverness and daring. No one at the time dreamed of the simple and subtle scheme long up Hitler's sleeve, of *combining* the office of President and Chancellor.

As to the Reichswehr, Blomberg took care of that. The very morning of Hindenburg's death, all Reichswehr garrisons in Germany took a new oath, and one of the most extraordinary in military history. Usually armies swear allegiance to the crown or head of state. This was an oath of fidelity, and a thorough one, to Hitler personally:

> 'I swear by God this sacred oath, that I will render unconditional obedience to the Leader of the German Reich and people, Adolf Hitler, the Commander-in-Chief of the *Wehrmacht* (armed forces) and that I will, as a valiant soldier, at all times be ready to stake my life for this oath.'

Each soldier and minor officer swore the oath two words at a time, repeating them after the commandant, with hand upraised. Some officers, hating Hitler, took sick leave that day. The general staff was not perturbed. Each absent officer was forced to take the oath personally on his return to service. . . . After the oath all sang not only Deutschland Über Alles, but the Horst Wessel anthem, the Nazi hymn.

As long as Hindenburg lived, there was some possibility, albeit remote, that he might dismiss Hitler from the Chancellorship. With his death this danger passed. Hitler was now Head of State. He could only dismiss himself. His undeviating path had reached its natural end. Only God could remove him now. And God, he claimed, was on his side.

H1645 – 0087

H1645 – 0088

CHAPTER V

THE TWO G-MEN

'Be my brother, or I will bash your head in.'
– GERMAN PROVERB.

SURROUNDING Hitler are fantastic congeries of sub-Hitlers. In the early days in Berlin I heard one of the shrewdest of observers of affairs in Germany say: 'No top Nazi is perfectly normal or perfectly sincere. They are either cynics, on-the-make, or hysterics.' Every national revolution, it is true, convulsively stirring the depths of a great nation, may bring strange fish to the surface. And I do not say that hundreds and thousands of decent Germans, some of them in important administrative posts, are not forthright and honest men.

Several of the more notorious misfits perished on June 30. Many remain. It is not only that they remain, but they hold jobs extraordinarily appropriate to their weakness and failings. Who should be director of 'popular enlightenment' in the Third Reich? Who, indeed, but Dr. Goebbels, whose power of enlightenment is that of a cripple, a man maimed and dwarfed. Who should have almost supreme police power over sixty-five million Germans? Who, indeed, but General Goering, a man of the most violent and unstable passions.

Hitler once told an interviewer that he did not like Yes-men. Deliberately he chose to surround himself with bold and blustering spirits who often disagreed among themselves. He has, in fact, made a definite policy of playing one sub-leader against another; he keeps them guessing, gets out of each his best. Also, it is believed, he has something against most of them in his dossiers. The leaders, jealous of each other, and knowing Hitler the all-powerful arbiter of their destinies, compete with one another for his favour. He is, as H. R. Knickerbocker put it, a sultan and they are rival supplicants.

Hitler takes good care that none of the sub-leaders approach

his own supremacy. When Goering got too powerful, he took the secret police away and gave them to Himmler. And Goering is not yet a member of the *Reichsleitung* (National Directorate) of the Nazi party.

Party posts more or less correspond to posts in the government. Dr. Goebbels, for instance, is *Reichsleiter* for propaganda in the party and also Reichs propaganda minister; Darré is party leader for agriculture, and also minister of agriculture. If party and state were perfectly co-ordinated, as in Russia, this correspondence of posts would be complete. But it is by no means complete. Dr. Schacht, for instance, the economics dictator, has no party rank at all. And whereas Rosenberg is party chief for foreign affairs, he is very far from being foreign minister in the government.

Germany is divided into nineteen party districts or *Gaus*. (Austria, incidentally, was for some time considered the twentieth *Gau*.) Dr. Goebbels is *Gauleiter* for Berlin. When the *Gauleiter* is also the SA leader of the district, a condition which Hitler seeks to prevent as far as possible, he becomes a personage of enormous local power. Heines was both *Gauleiter* and SA commander in Silesia. Julius Streicher, the worst of the anti-Semites, is both *Gauleiter* and SA leader in North Bavaria.

The rivalries between these men are formidable. That between Goering and Goebbels is the best known. That between Goebbels and Rosenberg in no less vicious. It would be a complex task to draw a chart of the mutual hatreds within the party. Goebbels and Schacht are far from being friends; Goering and Papen; Goebbels and Himmler; and everyone dislikes Rosenberg. The only two men on fairly good terms with everyone are Hess and Frick; neither is ambitious, and both have more or less pleasant personalities.

This unnatural *mélange* of hatreds produces friction and discordance and also inefficiency. Beyond that, it indicates what may be a fatal weakness of Hitlerism. The party, founded on emotion, based on no fixed and stable ideology, held together only by the Leader Principle, has been unable to assert itself as the exclusive ruler of the Nation. It is not indissolubly part and parcel of the structure of government and society, as is Fascism in Italy or communism in Russia.

H1645 – 0089

Hitler's three principal advisers are not Nazis at all: Schacht, Neurath, and General Blomberg. Imagine a Soviet Government in which the ministers of economics, foreign affairs, and war were not communists!

There are these sub-Hitlers then. Let us begin with General Goering.

Public Clothes-horse No. 1

'Der alte Kleiderständer . . .' – KARL ERNST.

Though nowadays he stands above all for the entity of Prussia, Goering is a Bavarian; he was born in Rosenheim, Bavaria, on January 12, 1893. He came of a good family – his father was governor-general of German South-West Africa – and his schooling was good. He spent his holidays climbing the Austrian Alps. He too, like Hitler, has strong emotional affiliations with Austria, and this may be one of the contributory factors accounting for the Nazi assault on Austria in 1933 and 1934. Hitler's sister still lives in Vienna, and so does Goering's brother. And two of Goering's sisters married Austrians.

At twenty-one, Goering enlisted in the German Air Force. By the autumn of 1915 he was leader of No. 5 Pursuit Squadron. He was awarded the highest German decoration, the *Pour le Mérite* (equivalent to the Victoria Cross) and in 1918 he succeeded to the command of the celebrated Richthofen Squadron. Goering shot down twenty-three planes during the War, as against fifty-four for Udet, the second German pilot, and eighty-odd for Richthofen.

Two incidents which contributed deeply to the evolution of his life came in 1918, just after the Armistice. First, Goering refused to demobilise and surrender his planes. He was ordered to do so by the German General Staff, but, deliberately insubordinate, he refused to obey, until he was finally brought to ground near Darmstadt. He said farewell to his fellow officers, toasting the day when Germany would be supreme in the air. His planes were then destroyed.

He never got over this. The destruction of his precious aircraft, by men whom he considered his infinite inferiors, was a psychological shock from which he did not recover; his

H1645 – 0090

present passionate energy to build a new German air fleet is compensation.

Secondly, after he had returned to Berlin, a socialist mob saw him in uniform and forcibly tore his officer's insignia from his coat lapels. Foaming with rage, he swore vengeance. His hatred of socialists, which is psychopathic in intensity, dates from that day. It is not entirely fanciful to assume that much of the Brown Terror had its inner sources in this incident.

Goering went to Sweden in 1919 and got a job as a commercial flyer. There he fell in love with a woman who profoundly influenced his life, his first wife, Baroness Karin Fock. He met her, in almost Wagnerian fashion, after a forced landing on her estate at Rockelstad, in North Sweden. He was severely wounded in the Munich beer-hall *Putsch* of 1923, having become one of Hitler's leading followers the year before. He escaped to Italy and then returned to Sweden. His health broke down.

Frau Goering died in 1932, just before her husband became President of the Reichstag, his first big job. Thereafter, when Gregor Strasser was disgraced, Goering succeeded to much of his influence with Hitler and the party. At this time memory of the dead Karin seemed the most important personal factor in his life. He brought her body to Germany (she had died in Sweden) and built a sort of shrine in his Berlin home, where her portrait stood between candles always lit and tinted by reflections from a stained-glass window built into the wall. There Goering knelt daily and prayed – until he met Frau Emmy Sonnemann.

This massive lady, an actress, won his favour and a gargantuan wedding took place in Berlin in April 1935. The ceremony was practically a Roman feast. Hitler was best man. The newly-weds got eighty thousand pounds' worth of wedding gifts. On the same day two communists, Epstein and Ziegler, who had been condemned to death on the charge of complicity in the murder of the Nazi hero, Horst Wessel, were executed by the axe. Many Nazis admired the symbolic inference – a blood sacrifice to propitiate fertility in the married couple.

Goering, at the end of 1935, had an imposing galaxy of jobs. He was President of the Reichstag, General of the

H1645 – 0091

Reichswehr, General of the Air Force, General of Police, Reichs Minister of Aviation, Prime Minister of Prussia,[1] Master of the Hunt, Chief Forester of the Reich, and Director of Television – this last because television may be applicable to aerial warfare.

He is famous for the variety and flamboyance of his uniforms, but legend has got the better of fact, and in reality he wears only about ten. Usually he carries a hilted sword, like that of a crusader. Behind the desk in his principal residence, a colossal headman's sword is suspended perpendicularly on a velvet curtain. He has a mania for display not only in dress but houses.

Mostly he lives in a large structure on Leipzigerplatz. A sizeable swastika is designed in tile above the main fireplace. In one room – I have read – the wallpaper is blood-red and the carpet pitch-black. A marble bust of Hitler stands on a pedestal, illumined by a spotlight. Another room, an immense and richly-decorated hall, may be transformed into a movie theatre; at the touch of a button the tapestry on the wall rises into the ceiling, disclosing a movie screen.

In Bavaria Goering has a country house, near Hitler's chalet, on a five thousand acre estate presented to him by the local government. His most ambitious project, and the one dearest to him, is the tremendous new air ministry in Berlin, with two thousand five hundred rooms, so big that aeroplanes can land and take off from the roof.

His ambition as well as his vanity is enormous. On March 6, 1933, exactly one day after the elections which confirmed Hitler's accession to office, he ordered his portrait painted – with a book in his lap conspicuously entitled *Life of Napoleon*. His pets are lion cubs. All of them, male or female, are supposed to be named Caesar.

He is as carnivorous as Hitler is frugal – brusque, impulsive, cruel. Testimony after the Munich *Putsch* of 1923 recorded his orders to 'beat in the skulls' of his opponents 'with rifle butts' (*Heil*, p. 19). His famous order to the police in February 1933 to shoot 'enemies' without question, really signalled the beginning of the Nazi terror. His ruthlessness

[1] But he won't cross the threshold of the Prussian Ministry because it was formerly the stronghold of the socialists.

H1645 – 0092

is unthinking, spasmodic, hot-blooded. He is not a plotter, a conspirator, like Goebbels. He has great executive ability, and this serves to make him doubly dangerous.

Since Goering came to symbolise the police power of the Third Reich, 12,863 people have been sterilised, some of them forcibly. Some 90,000 Jews have fled the country. In the year between June 1933 and June 1934, 212 men and women were beheaded out of 214 sentenced to death, the great majority for political offences which in no other country would entail the capital penalty. The number of persons sentenced to imprisonment was 280,308; they were to serve an aggregate of 129,421 years. In addition, 184 persons were shot 'while attempting to escape', 13,000 were deprived of citizenship, and 49,000 sent to concentration camps.

Goering is a good Aryan. For instance, he greeted the conclusion of the Anglo-German naval agreement of June 1935 as 'a victory for race law'. But he is the only leading Nazi who is not an outspoken anti-Semite.

He is with the Rightists in the party. He cared nothing for the 'socialist' part of Hitler's programme. He became a Nazi because Naziism meant a strong national Germany with a new army and a powerful air force.

The jokes about Goering are, of course, legion. Most of them are predicated either on the resplendence of his uniforms or his abnormal size. He is not merely fat: he is fat on top of an immensity of muscle. He moves with the vigour of a man a hundred pounds lighter: there is nothing torpid about him; his energy is terrific. But the story goes that he is so obese that he 'sits down on his own stomach' and that he wears 'corsets on his thighs'.

One story is that he dons an admiral's uniform whenever he takes a bath, with rubber duplicates of all his medals. A new unit of weight has been established in Germany – a 'goering' – to signify the aggregate displacement of his decorations. Once he visited a steel factory and his companions were horrified to see him suddenly leave the floor and dart perpendicularly upward to the ceiling. Reason: an electro-magnet above had caught his medals.

Once, the legend has it, Hitler fell into a doze during a performance of *Lohengrin*. The Führer was too tired to keep

H1645 – 0093

fully awake. His eyes opened suddenly as the figure of the shining knight in armour took the stage. Hitler thought it was Goering. 'Hermann,' he shouted, 'you are going too far.'

Goering's basic importance, if the present arrangement lasts, is not his blood lust, not his position in Prussia, not his command of the Prussian police. What matters is his association with aviation. The next war will be fought in the air, and it is an ill-omen that a man like Goering, with his immense drive and ruthlessness, should be supremely responsible for the development of the German air arm.

As befits his character, the general can use doughty language on occasion. 'Anyone who writes against Germany,' he has said, 'must have filth in his brains.'

The Doctor

> 'A Jew is for me an object of physical disgust. I vomit when I see one.... Christ cannot possibly have been a Jew. I don't have to prove that scientifically. It is a fact.... I treasure an ordinary prostitute above a married Jewess.'
>
> – Dr. Goebbels.

Dr. Joseph Paul Goebbels was born with a club foot. This was the most important event in his life. It explains much of his personality and career. Crippled, as Heiden puts it, 'a dwarf among giants', he had to make his way by skill, by cleverness, by conspiracy. When his classmates went away to war – he was born in the Rhineland in 1897 – he had to stay at home on account of his deformity. His crippled foot sharpened his ambition, and also his hatred of the healthy. He is the most vicious man in the party, the most virulent – and the best educated. His took his Ph.D. at Heidelberg. The doctorate, alleged often to be spurious, is quite genuine.

The Goebbels family was devoutly Roman Catholic, but he is a ferocious anticlerical. His father was a teacher, the grandfather a peasant; his mother's family were handicraft workers, and all were poor. He worked his way to a scholarship at Heidelberg, after attending several other schools. As a youth he wanted to be a literary figure, and indeed he has written much: his published works fill fourteen volumes.

His wife, who married him after divorcing her first husband,

H1645 – 0094

was an important influence in his career. Enemies said that the first husband was Jewish; this was not true – he was a quite Aryan lawyer named Quandt. Hitler liked Frau Goebbels and, in the first years of his chancellorship, went often to her musical parties. This was highly advantageous to the political plans of the little doctor. For a time Frau Goebbels was director of the *Deutsche Moden-Amt*, a sort of fashion ministry supposed to create truly Aryan styles for German women; but it didn't last long.

The little doctor – he is scarcely five feet five inches – entered a meeting-hall in Munich in 1922; the speaker was Adolf Hitler. Goebbels says that pure chance brought him there. Converted instantly to Naziism, he went to the Rhineland to organise party groups. Hitler soon came to appreciate his quick tongue, his soaring words; next to the Leader he became the most valuable orator in the movement. In 1926 Hitler sent him to organise the party in Berlin, where it had made comparatively little progress. Goebbels founded a newspaper, the *Angriff*, and inside four years, by great feats of journalistic and organisational skill, he was leader of a powerful machine: next to Munich Berlin became the chief stronghold of the Hitlerites.

Goebbels's violence in oratory and journalism exceeded that of anyone in Germany. He was completely unscrupulous, reckless, and vindictive. At one time there were one hundred and twenty-six libel suits pending against him. Once, long ago, he printed a headline in the *Angriff*, IS HINDENBURG STILL ALIVE? The President brought suit for libel and collected eight hundred marks damages. Retaliating, Goebbels wrote that Hindenburg was surrounded 'by Jews and Marxists'. (*Time*, August 13, 1934.)

At the end of 1935 Goebbels was Reichsminister of Propaganda and Public Enlightenment. As such he was undisputed ruler of the Press in Germany and, something almost as important, ruler of the radio. He likewise controlled the theatre and the cinema, as well as most musical, artistic, cultural, and even scientific activities; he made the Reich a cultural prison, a Nazi vacuum, a country in a mental strait-jacket, for sixty-five million Germans.

Goebbels is also stage manager to the Nazi party. He in-

H1645 – 0095

vented the technique of the great mass meetings which helped so cardinally to bring Hitler votes. His tactics were simple. 'Propaganda has only one object,' he wrote, 'to conquer the masses. Every means that furthers this aim is good; every means that hinders it is bad.' He planned the strategy of incessant and unremitting attack. Thus the flaming decorations, the loud-speakers, the careful 'build-up' for Hitler's appearance, the marching, the uniforms.

Then, when Hitler was chancellor, he engineered the first incredible mob displays which so vehemently aroused the Nazis. He suggested the burning of the books; he organised the May Day and Harvest festivals; he superintended the *Winterhilfe* relief campaign. His supreme achievement was the creation of Horst Wessel. The Horst Wessel legend, as Knickerbocker says, is the doctor's masterpiece.

The youthful bravo named Horst Wessel, son of a Lutheran pastor, was one of the many rowdies who disfigured the Berlin streets before Hitler came to power. He became an SA troop commander, active in largely communist districts, and the communists hated him. Three hooligans, moved by personal as well as political reasons, went up to his room and shot him as he lay in bed. He refused to have a Jewish doctor who was summoned, and died of his wounds.

Goebbels saw in Horst Wessel's funeral a perfect opportunity for propaganda on a large scale. But the police (this was way back in 1930) refused to permit an expansive demonstration. So Goebbels had to think of something else. Horst Wessel had written words to a street song, based on an old Bavarian tune, which was sung by Nazis and communists both. Goebbels decided to make capital of this song; and a good rousing tune it indeed is. Before a month had passed, the song was the unofficial Nazi hymn. Soon it was official. And Horst Wessel became, and still is, the first Nazi martyr.

Outwardly relations between Goebbels and Goering are correct, but they seldom miss opportunity for surreptitious digs at one another. Goering, as prime minister of Prussia, ruled the *Staatsoper* in Berlin. So Goebbels, undaunted, bought another opera in Berlin and set it going as a rival to Goering's opera. The new Frau Goering has ambitions to replace Frau Goebbels as first lady of the Third Reich.

H1645 – 0096

Goebbels is very jealous of his prerogatives. Putzi Hanfstaengl, late in 1933, was charged with the preparation of a film depicting the life of Horst Wessel. Goebbels succeeded first in temporarily banning the film, then in having its treatment altered and title changed, even though it was able Nazi propaganda as it stood.

Some Goebbels *obiter dicta*:

> 'I know it is a sacrifice for us not to have a new war.'
>
> 'Our Brown Shirts saved France from Bolshevism, and even now with its Stavisky scandal and Paris street riots, things are not in order there.'
>
> 'Hitler's attack on the democratic spirit is merely the opening act of a development the end of which will be a National Socialist Europe.'
>
> 'War is the most simple affirmation of life. Suppress war, and it would be like trying to suppress the processes of nature.'

Control the Press of a nation and half the job of dictatorship is done. Goebbels has given living strength to the authority of this maxim. As supreme dictator of the printed word in the Third Reich, nothing may be published in Germany without his consent. He is at liberty to censor even the words of fellow cabinet ministers. In June 1934 he prevented full publication of Papen's Marburg speech; in August 1935 he censored Dr. Schacht's similar warning to extremists at Königsberg; in the same month he forbade the broadcasting of Streicher's Jew-baiting rally in Berlin. No journalist may find employment in Germany till Dr. Goebbels certifies his acceptability; no newspaper may publish anything without his tacit consent. Incidental result: 1,400 German newspapers, about one-third of the total number in the Reich, have perished since 1933.

Dr. Goebbels would not like to hear it, but his minatory control of Press and propaganda is one of the things Naziism has taken over direct from the U.S.S.R. The Nazis justified their revolution on the ground that it would save Germany from communism but they appropriated wholesale a number of communist methods, anti-social in category, without – naturally – applying to Germany any of communism's social or political advantages.

Justice in Germany is guided by the interests of the state;

H1645 – 0097

so it is in Russia. The state is totalitarian in the U.S.S.R.; the Germans have similar ambitions. Soviet Russia has a secret police; it has concentration camps; it has only one political party, and all ideological opposition is ruthlessly snuffed out – the same considerations were all copied by the Nazis.

Goebbels has kept his footing partly because Hitler needs him, partly because of his supernal shrewdness. His nose is sharp, and his instinct for self-preservation immense. When crisis brews, as on June 30, Goebbels will be found on Hitler's shadow. He flatters those who, he thinks, are of use to him, and he never says anything against those who at the moment are powerful.

Dr. Goebbels is the spiritual source of such a medley of violent nonsense as the modern world has seldom seen. For instance listen to Professor Herman Gauch, author of the Nazi tract, *New Bases of Racial Research*:

> 'In non-Nordics, the teeth, corresponding to the snout-like narrowness of the upper jaw, stand at a more oblique angle than in animals. The grinding motion of chewing in Nordics allows mastication to take place with the mouth closed, whereas men of other races are inclined to make the same smacking noise as animals. . . .
>
> 'The Nordic mouth has further superiorities. Just as the colour red has a stirring effect, the bright red mouth of Nordics attracts and provokes kisses and courtship. The Nordic mouth is kiss-capable. On the other hand, the non-Nordic's broad, thick-lipped mouth together with his wide-dilated nostrils displays sensual eagerness, a false and malicious sneering expression and a dipping movement indicative of voluptuous self-indulgence.
>
> 'Talking with the aid of hands and feet is characteristic of non-Nordics, whereas the Nordic man stands calmly, often enough with his hands in his pockets.
>
> 'Generally speaking, the Nordic race alone can emit sounds of untroubled clearness, whereas among non-Nordics the pronunciation is impure, the individual sounds are more confused and like the noises made by animals, such as barking, sniffing, snoring, squeaking.
>
> 'If non-Nordics are more closely allied to monkeys and apes than to Nordics, why is it possible for them to mate with Nordics and not with apes? The answer is this. It has not been proved that non-Nordics cannot mate with apes.'

H1645 – 0098

And consider the following from the *Judenkenner*, an official organ:

'German national comrade, do you know that the Jew:

Violates	Your Child,
Sullies	Your Wife,
Sullies	Your Sister,
Sullies	Your Fiancée,
Murders	Your Parents,
Steals	Your Property,
Mocks	Your Honour,
Scorns	Your Morals,
Destroys	Your Church,
Rots	Your Culture,
Infects	Your Race.'

– (Quoted in the *Star*, June 7, 1935.)

No detail is too small for Dr. Goebbels's men. For instance, this attack on the alien lemon:

> 'Farewell lemon, we need thee not! Our German rhubarb will take thy place fully and entirely. He is so unpretending that we overlooked and despised him, busy with infatuation for foreign things. In all our shires we can have him in masses, the whole year round. We get him almost for nothing; his tartness will season our salads and vegetable dishes. Slightly sweetened he provides us with delicious refreshment, and, what is more, he is a blood-purifying and medicinal agent true to German type. Let us make good with German rhubarb the sins we have committed with the alien lemon.'
>
> – (*The Times*, July 29, 1935.)

Goebbels is not a Jew, but his appearance is un-Aryan, to say the least. His enemies in the party have often pointedly but in circumlocutory fashion referred to the dangerous racial aspects of lame or deformed men, those with club feet in particular. Goebbels's reply was a minor masterpiece. He found an anthropologist who invented a classification in Aryan ethnology to apply to himself alone – *Nachgedunkelte Schrumpfgermaner*. This is hard to translate. An approximate rendering: 'A dwarf-like German who grew dark.'

H1645 – 0099

Frick Exh. 12
Doc. Nr. 39

p.: 89

H1645 – 0100

CHAPTER VI

THE OTHER LITTLE HITLERS

'I demand that every Storm Troop Leader, just as every political leader, should be conscious of the fact that his behaviour and conduct must be exemplary. . . . I wish every mother to give her son to The Party without fearing that he may be ruined morally. . . . Storm Troop Leaders who behave unworthily in public are to be mercilessly removed.'

– ADOLF HITLER.

The Perfect Bureaucrat – Frick

LESS publicised than either, Dr. Wilhelm Frick is, after Goering and Goebbels, the most powerful Nazi office-holder. He was appointed minister of the interior for the Reich in Hitler's first cabinet, and he has held this office ever since. Thus he controls the civil administration of Germany, and his influence is strong in the schools, the public services and the police.

Born in the Palatinate in 1877, Frick studied law and became a *Beamter*, an official. He is a bureaucrat through and through. Hitler is not intimate with him, but he respects him. He became minister of the interior because he was the only important Nazi with civil service training. Precise, obedient, uninspired, he turned out to be a faithful executive; he has been called the 'only honest Nazi'.

Yet no one should think that this dry, so-typical German *Beamter* is not capable of great, exhilarating Nazi words and deeds. It was Frick who drafted the Aryan law defining Jewishness unto the third generation. It was Frick, a cabinet minister in Thuringia, who enforced compulsory prayers on all school-children: hate-prayers for the destruction of the Treaty of Versailles. And in the Reichstag, as the senior Nazi deputy, Frick once introduced a law for the castration of homosexuals (cf. *Heil*, p. 69). This did not endear him to Heines or Roehm. Frick has always been on the side of the conservatives in the party, like Goering.

H1645-0101

A fierce intra-party battle for the control of cultural affairs has been waged. Goebbels asserts that all art is propaganda and therefore belongs to him. Rosenberg holds that art is *Weltanschauung* and should thus be in his province. Goering, as boss of Prussia, feels that art is the prerogative of the executive authority, and therefore his. Rust, minister of education, would like culture as part of his domain, but being only a lion of the second magnitude, he is silent while the others roar. And Frick, the while, holds on to all he can.

His seven precepts for the education of the young are the following:

1. Counteraction of the traditional under-estimate of the culture level of our Germanic forebears.
2. Fitting treatment of Race, as the basic soil in which all individuals and all peoples must be rooted.
3. Emphasis on the tribal-national (*voelkisch*) idea, since the Germans, more than any other people, incline to wool-gather with unworldly dreams.
4. Inclusion of foreign-Germans (Germanic peoples living outside of the German borders) in all treatment of German history.
5. Precedence of political history over cultural history.
6. Thoroughgoing emphasis on the heroic idea in the Germanic past and its connection with the Fuehrer-idea in our own time.
7. Creation of a heroic philosophy.

– (*Morning Post*, April 29, 1935.)

And German school books – a profoundly important point for the future – are compact with an appallingly militant, pan-German propaganda.

Frick has recently – with an eye to the prevailing religious winds – become a pagan.

'My Splendid Maurice'[1]

Rudolf Hess, born in Alexandria, Egypt, in 1896, is the Fuehrer's personal deputy, the deputy-leader of the party, and Reichsminister without portfolio. When Goering, after the murder of Schleicher, underwent a temporary period of severe unpopularity with the Reichswehr, Hess – had he been bold

[1] What Hitler calls Hess in *Mein Kampf*.

H1645-0102

and assertive enough – might have taken his position. But the talents of Hess lie otherwise. He is the private secretary *par excellence*, the watchdog, the faithful servant, and little more. Hess, like so many others, was converted to Hitlerism on first hearing the Leader speak; like Goering and Ley, he was a flying officer during the War. He was the first 'gentleman' to join the Nazi party. He became Hitler's personal secretary in 1923 and shared prison with him. He is a bachelor, like so many of the men devoted to the Leader.

The strength of Hess lies in his closeness to Hitler. He has no government department, but, a cabinet minister himself, he acts as a co-ordinator between the other ministries. Hitler has given him several thankless jobs: for instance the onus of making the first public apologia for the murders of June 30. It is very difficult to get to Hitler on any political or party business except through Hess. His office is thronged with office-seekers and it has been nicely termed the *Klagemauer* (Wailing Wall) of the Third Reich.

Hess has recorded that in Alexandria he became a nationalist, during the War a socialist, and in Munich after the War an anti-Semite. Therefore his soul was ripe for Adolf's seed. His anti-Semitism is rigorous and extreme.

Hess is retiring in character, genuinely modest, and very popular. At every *Parteitag* in Nuremberg (annual Nazi congress) he receives the biggest applause next to Hitler: far more from the Nazi rank-and-file than Goering, Goebbels, Rosenberg, or Frick. His whole life is devoted to Hitler. His only outside interest is faith-healing, and he has founded a hospital in Dresden devoted to cures by means that scientific medicine does not recognise.

Hitler appointed him to become the head of the political section of the Nazi party in the fall of 1932, after the disgrace of Strasser. Previously, except in Hitler's intimate circle, he had been little known. The appointment was sound politics. With his usual perspicacity, Hitler chose as his deputy the one man in Germany who was not ambitious for a better job.

Boss of the Black Shirts

Heinrich Himmler wears pince-nez and looks like a schoolmaster. He is one of the most sinister personalities in the new

H1645-0103

Germany. He is two things, first Reich commander of the SS (Black Shirts), second, supreme head of the Gestapo, or secret state police. He has informally told the world that in the event of an attempt on Hitler's life, even if it is unsuccessful, there will be chaos in Germany and 'a great pogrom'.

Born in Munich in 1900, Himmler, like so many of his colleagues, belonged to a nationalist gang of guerilla fighters; like Brückner, Goering, Streicher, Hess and other prominent leaders, he took part in the *Putsch* of 1923. In 1927 he became deputy leader of the SS, which was being formed by Hitler as a counterweight to the SA of Roehm. In 1929 he became Reichs leader of the SS, in 1933 police president of Munich, in 1934 chief of the political police.

The SS, as we have seen, are the picked Nazi forces. Himmler has said, 'The SA is the Line, the SS are the Guards.' Every SS man must obey especially strict standards of discipline; he must be of satisfactory height and appearance; he may not marry until he and his bride are certified by the Eugenics Bureau which Himmler has established both as irreproachably Aryan and as healthy potential parents.

This man, holding in his person the double job of policeman and SS ruler, fulfils a double function. The Gestapo and SS between them are invincible. The police arrest people. The SS guard them in concentration camps. Himmler is all-powerful at both ends. Besides, he is a convenient instrument for the civil side of the party, in that he can obey secret orders and fulfil them, while the government officially disclaims 'knowledge' of what he does.

Bodyguard

Lieut. Brückner, the chief bodyguard, officially known as Adjutant to the Fuehrer is, as befits his post, one of the huskiest men in Germany. He is at least six foot four and a tremendous specimen of agile muscularity. Brückner is never far from Hitler. He sleeps just outside Hitler's room. He was born in Baden-Baden in 1884 and, like Himmler, joined a corps of nationalist volunteers after the War. He and the Leader are inseparable; Brückner was the man at Hitler's side when he arrested Roehm. He is in the SA not SS, with the rank of brigadier-general.

H1645-0104

Nuremberg Jew-Fancier

Of all the leading Nazis, Julius Streicher is the most notorious. This rapacious anti-Semite, the Reichscommissar for Franconia, is a man of fifty-one, barrel-chested, shaven-headed, in appearance the incarnation of brutality. According to *Heil*, in July 1933 he ordered two hundred and fifty Jews who had been arrested to pluck grass out of a field with their teeth.

Streicher organised the anti-Jewish boycott held in Berlin in April 1933 just after the Nazis came to power. This was one great show that Dr. Goebbels did not put on. It was not repeated. Streicher publishes a weekly newspaper, *Der Stürmer*, solid with viciously revolting and pornographic anti-Semite propaganda. Once he issued a special 'Ritual Murder' issue. It caused such a storm of protest in the outside world – by the Archbishop of Canterbury for instance – that it had to be suppressed in Germany.

Streicher is quoted by the American magazine *Time* (April 8, 1935) as follows:

> 'With my riding-whip, I sometimes give it to prisoners I have had taken into protective custody to save them from the mob. Take that school-teacher Dr. Steinruck who used to talk so big! I went with several Party members into his cell. He began to talk with a weeping voice and acted like a schoolboy. He did not act like the man I had expected after so much big talk, so I gave him a good thrashing with my whip.'

On his fiftieth birthday the local authorities made him a picturesque gift – the dossier in the archives of the Nuremberg police which 'formerly might have been used against him as incriminating material'. Streicher's proudest boast is that he has cleared one Franconian district, Hersbruck, comprising thirty-six villages and twenty-two thousand inhabitants, entirely of Jews. Not a single Jew remains. Everywhere in Franconia the terror against the Jews proceeds with miserable ferocity. Streicher's ultimate solution of the Jewish problem is to castrate all Jews.

His general culture is not too brilliant. When he came to Berlin in August 1935 to speak at the Sport-Palast meeting he said: 'The great Jew who lived in England, Benjamin

H1645-0105

Disraeli, became Premier. Later he was elevated to the peerage under the name of Lord Gladstone.'

It is no use, as some sympathisers do, saying that Hitler personally 'deplores' Streicher's blood-thirsty brutality. Hitler does not deplore it. He has been given every opportunity to get rid of Streicher. He refuses to do so. Streicher is one of his oldest supporters. Streicher joined him in 1923, having first formed a rival 'workers' party. Hitler has commended him highly and in public. Only *two* Nazis are mentioned by name in the whole of *Mein Kampf*: Hess and – Streicher. And when Streicher turned fifty, Hitler specially flew to Nuremberg from Berlin to pay him a surprise birthday visit.

Three Lesser Lights

Victor Lutze, the successor to Roehm as chief of staff of the SA, was born in 1890. He is blond – the only important Nazi aside from Goering who looks passably Nordic. He is faithful, simple-minded, uninspired: thus he got the job. He lost one eye in the War, and was four times wounded.

Count Wolf von Helldorf, appointed police chief in Berlin during the second wave of Nazi terror against the Jews, in July 1935, has a peculiar qualification for his post: he was himself sentenced to jail in 1931 for leading a violent anti-Semitic demonstration on the same street, Kurfürstendamm, where the new riots, which he was appointed to 'clean up', occurred.

Baldur von Shirach is the leader of the Youth Movement. He was born in 1907. He is fanatically devoted to Hitler, given even to writing verses to him. He is interested in religion. Recently he said, 'The Nazi party has been proved to have better relations with the Lord of the Heavens than had the Christian parties which disappeared.' And note well: Von Shirach, like several other Nazis who mingle religion with nationalism, has become a pagan.

Two Radicals

These, though their names are seldom heard outside Germany, are among the most important Nazis. They are Dr. Robert Ley, chief of the trade unions and leader of the German labour front, and R. Walter Darré, 'Peasant

H1645-0106

Leader' and Reichs minister for agriculture. But their power may wane, because Nazi economics since June 30 has been conservative, and they are known as 'radicals'.

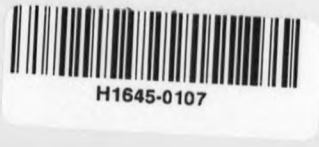
Darré, born in Buenos Aires[1] in 1895, is something of a scholar. He entered the inner ranks of Nazi nobility not by way of freebooting and brawls in Munich but – very late from the hierarchical point of view – as an agrarian expert. He had been a civil servant in the ministry of agriculture. He was hoisted into office after Hugenberg faded out. Promptly he initiated an ambitious series of agricultural reforms, and to him credit is due for almost all the 'socialist' measures the Nazi government has undertaken. Darré arranged a price-fixing scheme for grain, and he inaugurated the Hereditary Farms Act, by which old-established peasant holdings may not be sold or mortgaged, but must pass in entail to descendants of the owners.

Darré was a little too quick for his superiors. And they frowned at what they called his lack of modesty and tact when, a few months after taking office, he caused a monument to be erected to himself at Wiesbaden, marked 'Blood and Soil', and himself made a speech at its dedication. The party, however, has no cause to complain of his racial zeal. Darré is the author of the celebrated scheme to divide all the women of the Reich into eugenic classes, like cattle, for breeding purposes.

Dr. Robert Ley, the leader of the trade unions, somewhat unbridled in character, went to Geneva, before Germany left the League, to attend a meeting of the International Labour Office, and before an audience partly composed of South Americans made a remarkable speech denouncing inhabitants of several South American republics as uncivilised 'idiots'. He was a pilot during the War, and entered the party early. When Strasser was disgraced, in November 1932, Ley and Hess together succeeded to his posts, Ley becoming chief organiser of the party, an important 'key' position. To Hitler he is unswervingly loyal, and so the Leader keeps him.

Ley's grandiloquence is notable. Listen: 'We begin with the child when he is three years old. As soon as he begins to think, he gets a little flag put in his hand; then follows the

[1] Another chieftain – like Hess – not German by birth. Also Rosenberg.


H1645-0107

school, the Hitler Jugend, the SA and military training. We don't let him go; and when adolescence is past, then comes the *Arbeitsfront* which takes him again and doesn't let him go till he dies, whether he likes it or not.'

The Warriors

The immensity of German military preparation, both material and spiritual, is no longer news to anybody. Rearmament was covert until October 1933, when Germany left the League; an open secret until March 1935, when Hitler tore up the military clauses of Versailles and introduced conscription; since March 1935 the Reich has been an enormous military camp, with no disguise about it.

As well as anything else, a little joke best summarised the covert period. Frau X asks her husband, worker in a perambulator factory, to procure her a baby-carriage. He promises to filch the parts, piece by piece, from the factory. Some months later they have all been stolen, and Herr X sets to work putting them together. He turns finally to his wife in puzzled despair: 'I have put the thing together three different times, and each time it turns out to be a machine-gun.'

This era is long past. Germany, it is true – and it is not a negligible point – still labours under certain disadvantages. The Rhineland zone is demilitarised. Restrictions to full military activity are likewise, on the eastern front, still observed. It has few heavy guns so far, and few heavy tanks. But, on the other hand, full selective conscription is in force, and the Reichswehr is to attain a peace strength of five hundred and fifty thousand men. General Goering's air force probably numbers three thousand planes.

The minister of war is Col.-General Werner Eduard Fritz von Blomberg. Born in 1878 at Stargard in Pomerania, he comes of a distinguished officers' family. He entered the army and for a long time his promotion was very slow. He was second lieutenant in 1897, first lieutenant in 1907, captain in 1911, and only colonel in 1925. After 1928 his rise was extremely rapid. He was major-general in 1928, lieutenant-general in 1929, full general in 1930, minister of defence in 1933, colonel-general (the highest German rank except field-marshal) in 1934.

H1645-0108

He is by no means a typical Prussian officer. Pleasant, cordial, calm, rather soft in manner, he is the last remove from a martinet, a goose-stepper. He speaks languages; has travelled widely; in 1930 he took a furlough for a vacation and study trip in the United States. He wears his hair rather long and combed backwards, whereas most Reichswehr officers are punctiliously cropped.

The importance of Blomberg is that he is deeply, passionately devoted to Hitler. He is a *begeisteter Nazi*, quite different from those officers who, granting that Hitler is a convenience, find much that is offensive in his fanaticism, and face with equanimity the day when they, not he, shall rule Germany. Blomberg is an ardent, convinced, *personal* Hitlerite.

He has known Hitler well only since 1933. His appointment as minister of war came in odd fashion. There was some difficulty in finding a man, on account of the sharp clash between Schleicher and the Nazis. One of Hitler's best friends was, and is, Ludwig Müller, then a military chaplain in the division which Blomberg was commanding. He recommended Blomberg to Hitler, and through this priestly intermediary Blomberg got the job. Then Müller, as reward, was made Reichsbishop of the entire Protestant Church in Germany!

Under Blomberg is General Werner Freiherr von Fritsch, the chief of army direction (*Chef des Herresleitung*), i.e. commander-in-chief. Fritsch is a quite different type from Blomberg. He is the complete army man. Nothing means anything to him except the army. He represents exclusively the army point of view. Blomberg, it is said in Germany, is 'Hitler-loyal'; Fritsch is 'Fatherland-loyal'. Blomberg is supposed to be something of a sentimentalist; Fritsch is hard-boiled. Blomberg can be influenced by Hitler; Fritsch cannot.

He was born in 1880 on the Rhine, of an officers' family and is of aristocratic birth. His career has been absolutely cut and dried. He was close to Hindenburg in the latter days, first as chief of staff of the First (East Prussian) division near Hindenburg's estate, second as chief commander of the military district of Berlin. His advance was regular and based on merit.

Fritsch did not want the Reichswehr to be increased by a

H1645-0109

full 450,000 to 550,000 men. He thought this was too many. He is a firm believer in the Seeckt principle: of an army like a flail, a sword; an army not too big, but perfectly tempered, perfectly trained, superlatively supple, swift, sure.

Hitler and the Reichswehr

Is Hitler dependent on the Reichswehr for support? Yes. But is not the Reichswehr loyal to Hitler? Again yes. Indeed, the question that is so often asked is rather pointless, viz. which, as between Hitler and the Reichswehr, is really boss in Germany. The fact is that both rule Germany. And so long as their aims are identical little chance of conflict between them exists.

The Reichswehr is a necessity to Hitler, but also Hitler is a necessity to the Reichswehr. Each needs the other. They are complements. The Reichswehr wants a strong, united Germany and Hitler is incomparably the strongest man in the country. The alternative to him is either an overt military dictatorship or chaos. The Reichswehr has no need of an overt military dictatorship, which would be unpopular, as long as Hitler does its job. And it certainly does not want chaos.

Moreover, one should not forget the oath that every officer and soldier in the army swore to Hitler personally. Prussian officers and soldiers do not break their word of honour lightly.

So long as Blomberg remains minister of war, there is little prospect of a 'Reichswehr revolt'. If Blomberg were to be succeeded by someone hostile to Hitler, it would be a different story. Hitler has dropped the SA and cast his lot with the Reichswehr once for all. Should the Reichswehr betray him, he is doomed.

Do not, finally, forget that the Reichswehr, from the very beginning, supported Hitler. Reichswehr money made the first party organisation and the early *Völkische Beobachter* possible. And Hitler began 'public' life as a Reichswehr spy.

H1645-0110

CHAPTER VII

WAR, PEACE, POLICY, AND CASH

'The Germans do not want a war; all they want are the rewards of victory.'

– JULES CAMBON.

THE bases and aims of Hitler's foreign policy are very direct and simple. They appear to be:

1. Equal rights with the other powers.
2. Amalgamation of all other Germans in the Reich.
3. Eastward expansion, in pursuit of land for settlement and raw materials.
4. Friendship with England.

Post-War Germany is one of the 'Have-Nots', since Germany lost the War. Her policy is to regain what she lost. This is called a campaign for equal rights. It means, on the broadest basis, re-acquisition of her former military equipment, her truncated territory, and her political predominance in Europe. Thus will the Treaty of Versailles be avenged.

Naziism stands for renascent pan-Germanism or nothing, and incorporation of all contiguous Teutons – and their territory – within the body of the Reich is an essential part of Nazi doctrine. This means, first of all, the acquisition of Austria. After Austria, the Germans of Czechoslovakia, Switzerland, Denmark, Holland, and perhaps – eventually – the Italian Tyrol and the Polish Corridor.

Expansion, the third point, is explained not so much by increase in the German birth-rate but by 'moral factors': Germany's need for a place in the sun, Germany's bursting energy demanding outlet. The birth-rate is not, in long perspective, increasing but actually decreasing. According to present estimates, the population of Germany (within present frontiers) will be only about forty-nine million in 1975 as compared with sixty-five million to-day. Nevertheless, Germany,

1936 65.
1975 49

H1645-0111

according to the Nazis, must expand. And major expansion is only possible in the east.

4) The fourth point, friendship with England, is essential because England, it is assumed will cover the German rear. No active policy is possible to Germany without English friendship or neutrality. Germany has only very lightly mentioned return of her colonies, because England has the bulk of them. And Germany can make no bid to get them back without sacrificing potential British friendship.

Hitler, confronted with a hostile world, had to survey his objectives with great caution. His tactics were based on the sound theory of taking one step at a time. He made the friendship treaty with Poland – in order to be free to deal with Austria. He failed in Austria, then permitted Austria a pause, in order to strengthen his military arm.

German policy had gone far toward redressing the dictates of Versailles before Hitler came to power. 1) Foreign military control was abolished early in the republic. 2) The Rhineland was evacuated under Stresemann. 3) Reparations dwindled under Brüning and Papen. 4) And the Allies accepted Germany's theoretical right to military equality under Papen-Schleicher.

Since becoming chancellor, Hitler has contributed to foreign policy as follows:

1. He gave up German claims on the Polish Corridor for ten years, in the famous non-aggression pact with Poland, thus stabilising all but the Lithuanian section of his eastern frontier.
2. His frontal assault on Austria failed; even so thousands upon thousands of Austrians – also Germans in Czechoslovakia and other border regions – went Nazi.
3. He left the League of Nations.
4. He regained the Saar. (Any German chancellor would have regained it, of course.)
5. He made England sign a Naval Pact with him.

These accomplishments have been achieved only at great cost. Their net result was to make Hitler about as popular internationally as smallpox. He alienated Mussolini, who

H1645-0112

might have been his friend; he frightened and annoyed Denmark, Holland, Switzerland; he united France, 'because the French Right hates Germany, the Left hates Hitler'; he lost Austria, just when it should have dropped into his lap; he knit the Soviet Union, the Little Entente, and France into a league against him; he has impeded the growth of Fascism in other countries, for instance England, where Lord Rothermere could not stomach the events of June 30; above all, he brought the U.S.S.R. into the League of Nations. Hitler housebroke Litvinov, and made Mussolini (until the Abyssinian war) respectable. Such were the miracles which Naziism brought to the world.

War?

It may be said, on the basis of several arguments, that war is impossible for Hitler. Let us explore:

First, one may argue that Germany has not enough money to make a war. But poverty has never prevented conflict. It may make the war hard to carry on, but a desperate country, already poverty-stricken, has less to lose by war than the rich countries which oppose it. The economic crisis in Italy did not prevent Mussolini's attack on Abyssinia, but spurred it.

Second, one may argue that Germany has not enough raw materials to make a war. The answer to this is she probably has as good an equipment of war materials to-day as in 1914 when, despite blockade, she managed to fight a very good war for four long years.

Third, one may argue that opposition to Hitler within the Reich is too strong; that the workers would not mobilise; that they would shoot in the wrong direction. But the lesson of the totalitarian state is that each year it stays in power the strength of opposition lessens. Look at Soviet Russia. And Mussolini's mobilisation, though at first unpopular, was successfully accomplished. 'Good propaganda,' my wife expressed it, 'can make anything popular – even death.'

There are also certain tactical difficulties. His major objectives are, and for some time are likely to be, Austria and Memel.[1] Hitler is blocked off from Austria by the Italian army on the Brenner Pass: for, paradoxical as it may seem, the

[1] cf. the Austrian and Polish chapters below.

H1645-0113

H1645-0114

preliminary result of Mussolini's Abyssinian campaign was to strengthen, not weaken, the Italian forces actually in Italy. Hitler is blocked from a *Putsch* in Memel – according to all the imperatives of reason – by his alliance with Poland. The Poles do not want Memel interfered with. Memel is Lithuanian territory. And the Poles have the sensible idea that no one is going to be allowed any rape of Lithuania except themselves. Hitler could make a *coup d'état* in Memel (Danzig also) only at the risk of breaking the Polish alliance, something he cannot afford to do.

Hitler's enmity to Soviet Russia is ineffaceable. He said to a recent interviewer: 'We will not sign a multilateral pact of mutual assistance in the East, for in no circumstances would Germans fight for Bolsheviks. In such a fight our nation simply would not march. Rather than sign such a pact, I would hang myself.' These are, of course, cheap words. No one is asking Hitler to fight for Bolsheviks. Nor is it easy for him to fight against them. Hitler is accustomed both to give up things he hasn't got, and to threaten countries he cannot attack. Germany and Russia are not contiguous; Germany could invade Russia only through Poland, which would not allow troops of any nationality to invade its territory.

On the other hand, Germany's will to war is shown by an impressive list of factors. For one thing, the creation of the new German army and air force. For another, the fact that essential German ambitions to expand in the East or in Central Europe can only be achieved by war. The inevitable consequence of Nazi policy, if it succeeds, is the predominance of Germany in Europe. Can Europe endure the steady outward pressure of the Reich without resistance? Underground aggression in Austria, threats against Lithuania, agitation and intrigue among Germans everywhere – in Switzerland, Holland, Rumania, Jugoslavia, Scandinavia, the Baltic States – show the latent explosive force of the Nazi revolution. All the frontiers of Germany tingle from the aggressive strain inside.

Again, Naziism, essentially a militarist creed, has produced in Germany a renascence of incorrigibly belligerent Wotanism that may burst outward whether Hitler so desires or not. This factor is intensified by the possibility of economic breakdown. The lesson of the Abyssinian war is that dictatorships,

if they are in danger of breaking down, break out. May not Lithuania, five years hence, be Hitler's Abyssinia? What will happen when Dr. Schacht can no longer purchase raw materials?

Hitler stands to gain, and the chances of war are increased, by unsettlement anywhere in Europe. This, as we shall see in the chapter on Abyssinia below, was, in the autumn of 1935, a preliminary peril to peace in Mussolini's Abyssinian campaign. The basic problem of European foreign affairs is, What does Hitler intend. The crisis between Britain and Italy over Ethiopia was so particularly dangerous because of early fear that Hitler might take advantage of it to create disturbances in Central Europe.

Hitler himself has said:

> 'It must be understood that in general the will of the German nation should no longer be limited to mere passive defence, but, on the contrary, should be steeled for a final, active settlement with France in a death grapple for the realisation of German aims.
>
> 'In the annihilation of France, Germany sees merely the means for our nation to obtain full development in another direction. Our foreign policy will only have been correct when there are two hundred and fifty million Germans, not crowded like coolies in a factory, but free peasants and workers.
>
> 'Almighty God, bless our weapons! Judge if we have merited freedom. Lord, bless our combat!'[1]

The dilemma for the rest of the world is obvious, and like all obvious dilemmas is perplexing in the extreme. What should be done is to allow Germany to become strong but not too strong. Germany should, manifestly, be allowed recovery of her self-respect. But if Germany grows too strong, and demands a new war as price for former defeat – what then?

Germany has been 'unjustly' treated. Granted. The Germans have a perfectly good case, in that the allies foisted on the world the myth of exclusive war-guilt, invaded the Ruhr, and themselves refused to disarm in accordance with the terms of the treaty which at the same time they imposed on Germany. But it is interesting to note that Germany was just as

[1] These passages are expurgated from the foreign editions of *Mein Kampf*. It may be argued that Hitler wrote them, in hot blood, ten years ago. But he has steadily refused to repudiate them.

H1645-0115

H1645-0116

militaristic in 1914 when it could not complain of 'unjust' treatment.

The analogies between the international situation in the summer of 1914 and the autumn of 1935 were, indeed, astounding. A homosexual *camarilla* surrounded Wilhelm II as it did Hitler. William II talked of 'shining armour'; Hitler talks of 'race renascent'. William II challenged Britain with a fleet; Goering challenged Britain with an air force. Lord Haldane went to Berlin in 1912 on a mission somewhat analogous to that of Sir John Simon in 1935. For Agadir, read Dollfuss; for Sarajevo, read – what?

How difficult it is for a nation, like an individual, to keep from being itself.

Hitler himself vigorously and even passionately denies that he wants a war. Listen:

> 'There is no dispute in Europe sufficiently important to justify a war. . . . I am not quite mad – a war would not settle anything; it would only make matters worse – it would mark the end of our races, which are the elite of humanity, and in time Asia and Bolshevism would rule Europe. . . . I have a great deal of work to do at home. I have restored the German's sense of honour; I want to restore his joy in life. I shall need years to restore Germany's prosperity. Do you really think I want to upset my work with a new war?'
> – Interview with a French journalist, *Bulletin of International News*, Vol. X, No. 17.

And of course he doesn't want a war if he can achieve his aims without one. And of course he is not ready for war – yet.

Foreign Affairs Trio

The Foreign Minister himself, Baron Constantine von Neurath, is not a Nazi. When Hitler became chancellor, President Hindenburg insisted that Neurath remain in the foreign ministry, as a safeguard against the extremism of Nazi policy. Hitler learned to like him and respect his judgment and at the end of 1935 Neurath still survived. He established himself with Hitler largely by agreement on a fundamental issue – friendship with the British.

He is, of course, spiritually at one with the Leader, though his elegant nose may wrinkle with distaste at the more baroque

excesses of Naziism. He was born in 1873 of a noble family in Württemberg. He studied law, then entered the diplomatic service, and went through the normal series of promotions of a professional diplomat. He was ambassador in London before being promoted by Papen to the foreign ministry. He is one of the few leading Germans with time or detachment enough for an extra-political hobby – he is an accomplished mineralogist.

Neurath has jealously guarded the holy halls of the Wilhelmstrasse from impatient and ambitious Nazi careerists. The diplomatic service, in his view, is the place for professional diplomats only, and Rosenberg, the 'unofficial' foreign minister, has striven in vain to squeeze men into Neurath's carefully organised department.

Closer to Hitler than Neurath is young Joachim von Ribbentrop, the ambassador at large, who is the Führer's chief adviser on disarmament questions, and who led the German delegation which, in June 1935, signed the Anglo-German naval treaty. As a result of this *coup* – Germany's greatest success in foreign policy since Hitler came to power – Ribbentrop has more influence on the Leader than any man in Germany except Schacht.

The Anglo-German naval treaty was so important for a variety of reasons: (1) It legalised German naval rearmament and permitted Germany to build a fleet one-third as great as the British fleet, which meant virtual naval parity between Germany and France. (2) It came directly after the declaration of an alleged 'united front' between Britain, France, and Italy at Stresa and helped to shatter it. (3) Britain, condemning Germany with one hand for creating an illegal army, with the other immediately gave permission for her to build a legal fleet – indication, the Germans said, that Britain was at long last on their side.

Ribbentrop was born in the Rhineland, the son of a retired lieutenant-colonel. His father was no 'von'; Ribbentrop became one through adoption by a titled aunt. He served in the army and held a minor job in the German delegation to the Treaty of Versailles. Then he married a wealthy heiress, Anna Henkel, daughter of the biggest champagne manufacturer in Germany. For some years Ribbentrop was a

H1645-0117

travelling salesman for German champagne, marketing the infamous liquid called *Sekt*.

He knew many wealthy and influential people. He travelled abroad and learned languages. And he was a strong nationalist though not a Nazi. One of Papen's coterie, he became politically important in 1932. Ribbentrop was the go-between who engineered the meeting between Hitler and von Papen in the home of the banker Baron von Schroeder in January 1933, which, as we have seen, immediately preceded Hitler's chancellorship.

Hitler was grateful to Ribbentrop; besides, he liked his ingratiating personality. He admired Ribbentrop's *sang-froid* and knowledge of languages (practically all other men round Hitler are monolingual) and he respected him as a 'gentleman'. Ribbentrop's influence, it is believed, was the decisive factor leading Hitler to bolt from the League.

The influence of Franz von Papen, 'the breakfast chancellor',[1] who is Hitler's special envoy to Austria, collapsed after 1934. No wonder. His fundamental policy, the conception that he and the nationalists could control Hitler and keep him in order, had been a terrible error. His two closest associates, Jung and von Bose, were murdered in his own office. Glad to be rid of him (and Papen himself must have felt a certain relief to get outside of Germany!) Hitler dispatched him to Austria after the Dollfuss murder in July 1934.

Edgar Jung was a Munich lawyer, and Papen's dependence on him was extreme. Papen never had an idea of his own. Jung wrote all his speeches, including the celebrated Marburg speech. This not only warned the Nazis to avoid extremism; it said that 'those who threaten with the guillotine are the first to fall under the axe'; naturally the Nazis were annoyed – and two weeks later Jung was dead.

What is one to say about a man who can see his two best friends murdered for service on his behalf and then accept new office under the government that murdered them?

Papen's Marburg speech was not his only blunder in technique. Only a person of extreme lack of perception could

[1] So called because of his 'diplomatic breakfasts', during which he did most of his business.

H1645-0118

have appointed Goering as his first assistant, as Papen did, and expect Goering – of all men! – to be a milksop.

Papen has, it is well known, a great reputation for poise, for grace, for suavity. But suavity in Papen reached a degree where it was a kind of blind incompetence, a self-assurance so monstrous that all reason, all caution, were obliterated.

He was born in 1879 in Werl in Westphalia. He was a lieutenant in a cavalry regiment. He married money, the daughter of Boch-Galhau, owner of a Saarland ceramics firm, and was transferred to a better regiment. In 1913 he went to Washington as military attaché. Promptly, as his job demanded, he engaged in espionage; but the job did not demand the terribly suave carelessness, the persistent 'charming' blundering, that distinguished him. In December 1915, before the United States entered the War, he and his colleague, Captain Boy-Ed, were expelled from the United States.

It was bad enough for Papen to be caught. But he let everyone else be caught. Captain von Rintelen, a German agent, describes vividly, in a book called *The Dark Invader*, his horror at Papen's carelessness. The American secret service found in the desk of one of his secretaries the key to the German code. Thus the Americans were able to read German foreign office messages, for instance the one from Zimmerman suggesting an alliance between Germany and Mexico.

Papen had sailed for Germany. The ship was searched by the British authorities at Falmouth and his papers were seized – he thought a *laisser-passer* rendered him immune to search! The young German military attaché had most meticulously retained his cheque-books. In neat black ink, on stub after stub – one hundred and twenty-six in all – were found the names of German secret agents in America. Papen was pay-out man. The cheques linked him to dynamiters and saboteurs.

No man has ever been caught so comprehensively, so drastically. Papen had recorded – and *preserved* – the most precise details of his transactions. He kept not only the cheque stubs but the cancelled cheques themselves, so that all the endorsements were available for scrutiny and investigation. In addition, dozens of his semi-official letters were found, carefully filed and assorted in his baggage. One is aghast at the effrontery of a man who could tempt fate so.

H1645-0119

H1645-0120

Once bitten, twice shy. For ordinary mortals this adage may hold true, but not for Junker officers of the imperturbable suavity and self-confidence of Franz von Papen. On arriving in Berlin he was assigned to service as a liaison officer to the Turkish Army. The British captured Jerusalem. Captain von Papen fled – leaving his trunks behind! Here was discovered another treasury of documents, including more papers incriminating agents in America, which Papen *still* had not destroyed.

One great service to Germany, from the nationalist point of view, Papen performed; in basic importance it may outrank his preparation of the way for Hitler. Early in his chancellorship the German Steel Trust (*Vereinigte Stahlwerke A.G.*), the monstrous agglutination of heavy industry that is one of the most powerful industrial forces in the world, suffered a severe financial crisis. Friedrich Frick, the owner of the largest block of stock, dumped them on the market. It seemed at first that French steel interests might acquire them. This was revolting to the industrial patriotism of the Germans. The Papen Government stepped in and took over Frick's shares; the German Government became – and still is – the largest shareholder in the greatest industrial concern in Germany.

Philosopher Rosenberg

From the point of view of underlying and eventual realities, the well-known Rosenberg, 'the philosopher with the sour stomach', is probably more important than either Neurath, Ribbentrop, or Papen. Rosenberg is the *Nazi* specialist in foreign affairs. He is one of Hitler's closest and most intimate associates; he is editor of Hitler's newspaper, the *Völkische Beobachter*; he heads the foreign political bureau of the Nazi party, and he is 'director of philosophical outlook'[1] for the Reich.

Rosenberg is the most disliked man in Germany. His personality is unpleasant. He is a prude and a prig. He is suspicious, close-minded, arrogant, ingrown. Like Hitler, he

[1] The full title is imposing: *Beauftragter der Führeres Zur Uberwachung der weltanschaulichen Erziehung der nationalsoz. Bewegung.*

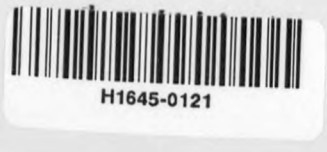
is a bachelor and 'a moral athlete'. The Leader got probably fifty per cent of his ideology from him, so it is important to see exactly what he stands for. Hitler promised him the foreign ministry, then went back on his word – which may account for Rosenberg's persistent surliness.

Alfred Rosenberg was born on January 12, 1893, in Reval, which was then in Russia and which is now capital of the border-state Esthonia. He is thus a Balt. He is a 'German by descent, but a Russian in mentality', as Heiden puts it. A White Russian. Not a Red Russian. Rosenberg's whole philosophy, ideology, and career are based on a psychopathically intense hatred of the Soviet Union. He studied architecture (as Hitler wanted to) and for a time was an instructor in draftsmanship; he went to school first in Riga, then in Moscow. The revolution intervened and a period of mystery followed: some say Rosenberg was drafted into the Russian army; others have it that he got across the frontier, enlisted with German troops, and took part in the campaigns in East Prussia; some say he was, of all places, in Paris – as a spy.

He arrived in Munich in 1919 where so many riff-raff of the wars assembled. He was at that time more Russian than German; he seemed to be just another White Russian refugee. He met Dietrich Eckhart, the first 'poet' of the Nazi movement. and then Hitler. Promptly he intoxicated Hitler's imagination by his dream of a German empire in the East, and became the chief prophet of German expansionism and imperialism.

Rosenberg is the nightmare dreamer of Naziism. When he attempts to put his dreams into practice, he is a miserable, grotesque failure. His only adventure into practical politics occurred in May 1933, when he took it upon himself to make a good-will visit to England. One of his first acts was to lay a Swastika flag on the Cenotaph! The British, sensitive about such things, were indignant; Rosenberg scurried back to Berlin, and has not been outside Germany since.

Rosenberg's major opus (and, subconsciously, he must have written it as a rival to *Mein Kampf*) is an enormous book *Der Mythus des Zwanzigsten Jahrhunderts* (Myth of the Twentieth Century). It is a torpid, florid, gusty, grandiloquent discourse on race, politics, and Germanism. Pages and pages of it make no sense whatever.


H1645-0121

What is known as the 'Rosenberg plan' is the project of eastward expansion which Hitler has never repudiated. Germany and Poland should, according to the plan, attack Russia: Germany should take the Baltic States as spoils, and Poland would get a share of the Ukraine – till Germany took it back again.

He writes:

> '. . . .No Franco-Jewish Pan-Europa but a Nordic Europe: that is the solution of the future, with a German *Mitteleuropa*. Germany as a racial and national state reaching from Strassburg through Memel and beyond; from Eupen through Prague and Laibach as the central power of the continent and as security for the south and south-east; the Scandinavian states with Finland as a second group to protect the north-east; and Great Britain as protector of the west and overseas in those sections where this is necessary in the interest of Nordic man.'
>
> – (*Foreign Policy Reports*, June 5, 1935.)

Goering's dislike of Rosenberg is notorious. At a party meeting in Hamburg in 1925, he said to Gregor Strasser: 'Let that damned Rosenberg tell us what he *did* do in Paris during the War.' In 1935 Rosenberg decided to erect a monument to the four thousand Saxons slain by Charlemagne. For each Saxon he wanted to provide a granite block of a peculiar sort, very old and pure geologically, found only in North Prussia.[1] Goering heard of the plan and promptly ordered that no stone of this kind might be quarried.

Rosenberg burned his fingers once by including in a book called *The November Criminals* a malignant portrait of Dr. Schacht. He accused Schacht of corruption, and dared him to sue for libel. But this was in 1927, long before Schacht had listened to the voice of Hitler. Now the sketch of Schacht is omitted from the book. (See *Heil*, p. 199.)

Rosenberg's strength is, like that of so many Nazis, his undeviating single-mindedness, his obsessive devotion to an *idée fixe*. With Goering, it is the air force: with Streicher, the Jews; with Rosenberg, anti-Sovietism.

Unpopular as he is – except with Hitler – Rosenberg's influence is very great. He is a party force of the first magnitude. It was, for instance, his private bodyguard of SA, mostly composed of White Russian guardists, which Hitler chose for the

[1] The Aryan principle applied to petrology!

H1645-0122

delicate honour of standing guard on the dying Hindenburg. His strength is founded on Hitler's great affection for him and the Leader's dependence on his 'ideas'.

Cash and Credit

'Germany is Hitler, and Hitler is Dr. Schacht.'
– BERLIN SAYING.

Superficially it seemed that by the end of 1935 the Nazi régime had produced a considerable degree of economic recovery. This was caused mostly by the spur to industry of war preparations. Unemployment had fallen in autumn to one million eight hundred and seventy thousand – only about six hundred thousand more than in 1929, the best year since the War; and the volume of industrial production was back almost to the 1929–30 level. But this not very substantial boom was only achieved at frightful cost. The economic fabric of the country stretched and sagged.

In 1929 German exports amounted to approximately 13,000,000,000 Reichsmarks. By 1933 they had fallen to a value of scarcely 5,000,000,000 Reichsmarks, and in 1934 to only 4,187,000,000. Germany had a passive trade balance for the first time in years in 1934, when it amounted to 400,000,000 marks. German industry, normally, lives by its foreign trade. Its foreign trade began to disappear on account of the high gold value of the Reichsmark, the increase of import restrictions abroad, and the international boycott.

Yet Germany had to continue to pay for imports. It needed imports of raw material desperately. It needed silk, rubber, nickel, manganese, chromium, tungsten, raw textiles, tin, copper, gasolene. Using every available facility of cash and credit, Germany bought immense stores of these goods. Purchases of Swedish iron ore by the German Steel Trust – to cite a single instance – rose from 249,000 tons in August 1933, to 478,000 tons in August 1934. German imports of raw nickel – an essential war material – tripled between 1932 and 1935. Germany accumulated a gasolene stock of 2,000,000 tons – enough, it was calculated, to keep the country at war a year. And every effort was made to produce agricultural self-sufficiency, so that the Reich could feed itself despite blockade.

The search for *Ersatz* (substitute) materials was unceasing.

1929 exports – 13,0
1933 5,0
36 04[illegible]
unemployment 1 200 000
1935 1870 000
H1645-0123

H1645-0124

Sugar from sawdust; flour from potato meal; gasolene from wood and coal; clothes from chemical fibre; tyres out of 'reclaimed' rubber; margarine from coal – these were some of the substitutes inflicted on hapless but patriotic Germans.

Wages were mercilessly deflated by means of forced payments to relief, the labour front, the air defence league, and so on. A bank clerk's salary, for instance, became 241.90 RM per month instead of 290.25 RM, purely as a result of 'voluntary' contributions. H. R. Knickerbocker found that a skilled workman, such as an expert joiner, earning 39 RM per week, very high for Germany, had to pay out the following in taxes:

Income tax	2.10	RM
Old age insurance	1.20	
Citizens' tax	1.25	
Health insurance	1.20	
Unemployment insurance	1.30	
Tax for aid of unemployed	0.80	
Bachelor tax	2.10	
Dues, Workers' front	1.00	
A total of	10.95	RM or roughly 25 per cent of his income.

Even so, where did Dr. Schacht get all the money from? He had the quadruple job of paying for imports, financing public work projects to relieve unemployment, meeting the cost of rearmament, and maintaining the ordinary budget of the government. His gold reserve had dwindled almost to nothing. He had defaulted on his foreign debt. He had seemingly sucked the last cent out of the German taxpayer. Yet he needed money, money, money. The cost of the new naval programme was alone estimated at £40,000,000. How to meet such staggering bills?

It seemed, roughly speaking, that Schacht adopted two general courses. Internally, he juggled by financing the current business of the government with internal loans. They were practically forced loans. He borrowed, in the summer of 1935, RM 500,000,000 from the savings banks, another RM 300,000,000 from the insurance companies. These were bled almost empty. He gave in return government I.O.U.s worth no more – and no less – than the government's promise

to pay. There was no gold to cover them. But the bills were accepted at face value so long as government credit stood.

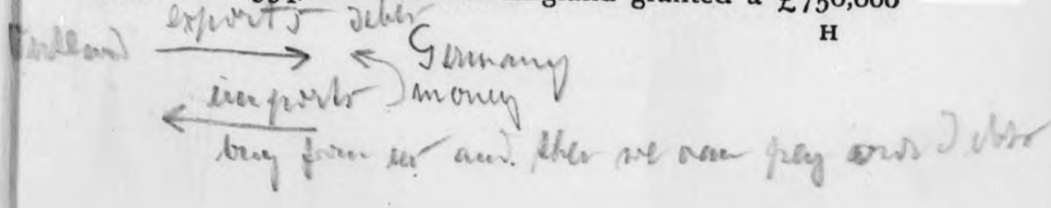
These forced loans – together with minor items such as conversion at lower interest rates of former public loans – amounted, of course, to nothing less than the compulsory mobilisation of the wealth of the German people. What were the German people promised in return for their savings? Prosperity and peace. Yet the money went to finance a war machine. General Goering's Air Ministry budget was, for instance, upped RM 210,000,000 in 1935.

Externally Dr. Schacht performed even greater feats of financial jugglery. He seems to have been the first financier of the period to have seized on the idea that the position of debtor was better than that of creditor. He made immense capital out of the fact that Germany owed money. Schacht, beyond any doubt, is one of the ablest financial experts alive. He really understands money. What he did may have been unscrupulous, but it was brilliant. He made Germany 'the most successful fraudulent bankrupt in the history of the world'.

This happened because he contrived to pay for imports by getting his creditors to foot the bill. German firms owe money, of course, to England, France, Scandinavia, the United States. Exporters in these countries do business with Germany. Dr. Schacht said to them in effect: 'Buy from us, and then we can pay our debts. If you don't buy, we cannot pay.' He promulgated partial moratorium after moratorium; and at the same time threatened to cease payment entirely unless he got more business. He was saying: 'Buy from me, or you will get nothing at all, since I cannot finance my debts unless you lend me more.'

There are always people willing to throw good money after bad, and the situation became that Germany was in reality expanding its armament industry by new borrowings. The potential enemies of Germany in the next war, France, the small succession states, Great Britain, and even Soviet Russia, were financing the effort that Germany may make some day to destroy them.

The process reached its most extreme phase when, in December 1934, the Bank of England granted a £750,000



H1645-0125

credit to Germany in order 'to facilitate the mobilisation of German commercial credits', i.e. so that Germany might have means (new credit) to meet old debts – and build aeroplanes that can cross the English Channel in seven minutes.

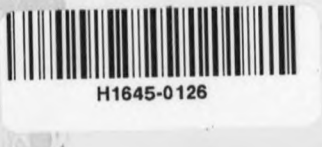
Schacht – The Money Bags

It took Hitler a long time to find Schacht. He tried and discarded several economic experts. There was no financial Rosenberg, no economic Goering, on hand from the beginning. Hitler's first choice as economic adviser was a certain retired captain, by name Wagner; for the past two years he has been in concentration camp. Following Wagner, a minor industrialist Wilhelm Keppler had decisive influence. When Keppler fell, a new and ambitious economist, Albert Pietsch, president of the Munich Chamber of Commerce, advanced; he had insinuated himself into the post of 'economic adviser' to Hess, Hitler's deputy. But meantime Schacht was ready.

He was born in January 1877 at Tingleff in Schleswig. His father was a great admirer of the American democratic tradition; thus the name he gave his son, Hjalmar Horace Greeley Schacht. The Hjalmar came from the mother, who was a Dane. Schacht is very proud of his Viking ancestry. His children have Danish names.

He studied at several universities in Germany, obtained a doctorate, and went to work as an archivist clerk in the Dresdener bank – one of the lowest posts. Clever and ambitious, he rose very quickly. One of his jobs was to prepare the routine trade bulletins; he did them so well – combining vigorous unorthodoxy with sly good sense – that presently the directors of the bank used them as a guide to policy. So by 1908 he was deputy director. In 1916 he went to a rival bank, the Darmstaedter and National, as director.

In 1923, when the mark collapsed, he was appointed Reichs currency commissioner and he saved Germany from utterly chaotic conditions by inventing the Rentenmark, which stabilised the currency. As reward for this coup, he was appointed president of the Reichsbank; he had already refused the finance ministry, which he thought not big enough. He was Reichsbank president till 1930, when he resigned in protest at the Hague agreements which implemented the Young


H1645-0126

Plan. In March 1933, Hitler appointed him to the presidency of the Reichsbank again.

He is a man of utterly boundless ambition. Until he hitched his star to the Hitler waggon, he wanted to be president of Germany. He is a complete opportunist. He was one of the founders of the democratic party, in 1919, and the socialists supported him as the man who saved the mark. The campaign slogan went, *'Wer hat die Rentenmark erdacht? der Demokrat, Herr Dr. Schacht!'* But early in 1930 Schacht saw on which side Germany's bread was buttered, and he turned to Hitler. He had met Hitler through Goering.

Dorothy Thompson interviewed Schacht early in 1931. He told her he was going Nazi. She asked him why. He replied, 'Because I believe in everything that encourages German nationalism.' Miss Thompson said, 'But if Hitler comes to power, the Nazis can't run the country financially, economically. Who will run it?' Schacht replied, 'I will.'

His salary as president of the Reichsbank is 300,000 marks per year, one of the largest incomes in Germany. He saves nine-tenths of it. He could be minister of economics if he wished, but the salary is only 38,000 marks per year, so he prefers the Reichsbank job.

Like so many Hitlerites, Schacht has no discernible private life. He owns an estate in the country, but he lives in the bank itself. He wears extraordinary collars, high and jaw-breaking. He likes good conversation. He is cool, shrewd, witty. His power is based first on tremendous ability, second his absolutely ruthless and calculating politico-economic opportunism. As a boy Schacht had ambitions to be a poet, and one of his songs, incorporated in a musical comedy, survives:

> 'I am a musician, very well known,
> and loved in the whole country.
> When I arrive in a little town
> everybody cheers, the grown-up and the children.
> For I play upon my fiddle
> first a dance and then a song.
> And when people are happy together
> I am welcome everywhere.'

Not only is Schacht Hitler's keeper of the purse, but he has

H1645-0127

contrived to make himself indispensable as a link between Hitler and the whole of German economic life. Schacht dominates, for instance, the newly-created Reich economic chamber. Theoretically, this organisation embraces the labour front, with its fifteen million members, whose dues amount to 100,000,000 RM per year.

Naturally Schacht has no fondness for Goebbels and the 'Left' extremists. He knows full well that anti-Jewish nonsense hurts German export trade. At Königsberg, in August 1935, he denounced the lunatic rabble, and Goebbels suppressed his speech. Schacht told friends that his course would lead him to a monument or the scaffold, he did not know which. Such conflicts, quarrels like these within the party, are bound to continue; they rise from the very nature of the Nazi movement.

Thyssen is Schacht's close friend, and so are Krupp von Bohlen, the armaments merchant, and F. C. von Siemens, the magnate of electricity. These men are members of the economics chamber, as are Professor Bosch, the dye-trust millionaire, Dr. Vogler of the steel trust, a potash magnate named Diehn, and Baron von Schroeder, the banker. It would not, however, be correct to say, as one might easily jump to saying, that Schacht works under their joint and powerful thumb. He works under nobody's thumb.

The industrialists may influence him, as they may influence Hitler. It may be said that Hitler 'protected' capitalism, saved capitalism for his industrialist friends. But this is not quite the truth. Hitler is no friend of orthodox finance capital. If private profits interfere with the security of the state, out private profits will go, as Dorothy Thompson has pointed out. The industrialists disapprove of much of Schacht's jugglery, and they have found that although Naziism serves to perpetuate capitalism, it also demands heavy sacrifices of the capitalists.

So far Hitler and Schacht have outlined only the scantiest adumbration of a Fascist, corporate state. Naziism, as it cannot be too often pointed out, is 'a faith not a doctrine', a nationalist revival, a 'broad mass movement of protest and despair'. It is not an economic experiment – at least not yet. It is the same old capitalist dog, decked out in bright

H1645-0128

nationalist ribbons, and it exploits the whole nation for the sake of the Hitler state.

Hitler has no interest in economics (which is one of the sources of Schacht's strength) but economics may be his ruin. The permanent realities of the economic situation in Germany wait upon no Hitlers, no Schachts, no Thyssens. If Schacht fails, Hitler may find another Schacht. But the fundamental difficulties remain. Germany must feed sixty-five million people; it must borrow or export enough to pay for imports; it lives by the manufacture of raw materials, and no financial hocus-pocus can alter the inexorable law that goods, somehow, must be paid for.

The day of reckoning will come for Hitler – in gold as well as guns.

H1545-0129

H1645-0130

CHAPTER VIII

'LAVALUATION'

'There are five or six men in the world on whom peace depends. Destiny has placed me among them.'

– PIERRE LAVAL.

IN or out of office, Pierre Laval, the 'Nigger of the Auvergne', is, in the present phase of international relations, the most important man in France. This is partly because he occupies a roughly centre position in French politics, and the pendulum swinging from left to right and back again finds him conveniently in the middle. Also, he has become a sort of successor to Briand as a specialist in foreign affairs, and even if he is a casualty of the Abyssinian war, his hold on the Quai d'Orsay is such that he may become, eventually, a semi-permanent foreign minister.

Laval's chief characteristic is his sense of the concrete, plus wiliness. He is, as the French say, *malin* – a word for which there is no precise translation; it means a sort of worthy unscrupulousness, slyness without evil. The joke goes that Laval was clever enough even to be born with a name which spells the same backwards and forwards, left to right or right to left. He rose from extreme poverty to wealth; yet he is almost the only important French politician absolutely untouched by financial scandal. He is supple as a cat. Like a cat, he never attempts anything he is not perfectly sure of; he calculates every jump to the inch. He gets out of things marvellously.

The great Briand, whose protégé he was, said of him, alluding to his slipperiness, 'Alas, it is impossible to agree with everyone *and* M. Laval.' Yet Laval is all things to all people. His manners in the lobbies of the chamber are the quintessence of tact. He is a *couloir* (corridor) politician, a fixer, *par excellence*. He is unassuming, unpretentious; among his friends are men in every party, journalists of every nation. He

is on thee-and-thou terms, people say, with more men than any personage in France.

Not only is his capacity for friendship comprehensive; he treats one and all with an unvaryingly shrewd and watchful eye. Laval is too sly to trust anyone too fully. His character, in fact, embodies to a signal degree the national French trait of suspiciousness.

Man of Auvergne

Pierre Laval, Mayor of the tough Paris suburb Aubervilliers, senator for the department of the Seine, prime minister and foreign minister of France, was born in 1883 in the village of Châteldon, in the Auvergne. He is called *'Le Bougnat'* – slang for Auvergnese – figuratively 'coal and wood man'. The Auvergne is a deep fastness in south-central France, made of granite as old as the earth; the Auvergnese are the grimmest of French peasants, hard-working, shrewd, with primitive reflexes, close to the soil. All over France they are the coal and wood dealers. There is a strong negroid cast of feature in many Auvergnese; Laval has thick lips, heavy, black, oily hair.

His father, who is supposed to be descended from the Moorish invaders of France, was the village butcher. Pierre did odd jobs as a child, went to school, read voraciously, taught himself Greek. For two years, when he was nineteen and twenty, he was school-teacher in the village. Then he studied law, went to Paris, and entered politics. Nominally he is still a barrister at the Paris court of appeals. In his comparatively short period as an active lawyer he had few conspicuous cases; mostly he was an 'inside' man on corporate work; he was an indifferent pleader. The great world of politics seized him – and here he pled well.

His career opened in 1914 when he was first elected deputy from Aubervilliers, where he chose to settle down. He has maintained the closest connection to this proletarian Paris suburb ever since. It is strongly communist, but enough communists vote for him to keep him perpetually mayor. He was up for re-election in 1935 while the government was negotiating the Moscow pact – so the communists didn't fight him very hard. His constituency knows him universally

H1645-0131

as 'Pierrot'; he gets along with everybody, and the poor people of the district like his homely manners, his bad teeth.

He began political life as a violent socialist, and until at least 1922 he was known as a man of the extreme Left. Since then he has moved steadily Right, until now he occupies a Centre position. He belongs to no political party, and describes himself as 'independent'. It is not quite fair to say that socialism brought Laval to power and that he then kicked it over, as did other notable French politicians. Laval was never an orthodox party man. He was a lone wolf, on the make.[1]

In one respect his principles, his allegiances, have never varied; he was a passionate pacifist when he began political life, and a passionate pacifist he has remained. It took courage to be a pacifist in France during the War, because pacifism was tantamount to defeatism. His name was in the famous 'Carnet B' of the ministry of interior; he was called a 'dangerous' anti-militarist. He refused to volunteer in the French army, and on being drafted he served as a common *poilu* – for a very brief time. His pacifism made him popular with the disaffected infantry in the black middle period of the War. In 1916 he cried out in the chamber, 'Except for [Czarist] Russia, we shouldn't be at war at all!' A year later, referring to the socialist peace congress in Sweden, he shouted, 'Stockholm is the pole-star of our hopes.'

He lost his deputy's seat in 1919, and remained in the political wilderness till 1924. Then his qualities as a fixer boosted him suddenly to cabinet rank. The *Cartel des Gauches* (Left coalition) was undergoing one of its frequent shuffles, and Laval acted as a go-between for Paul Painlevé in negotiating with Briand and Caillaux; as reward, he became minister of public works. Caillaux lived in his house, Briand liked him, and when Briand became prime minister, Laval was first appointed his general secretary – a valuable key post – and later minister of justice.

Then the Left coalition crashed and during the Poincaré régime Laval was very much out in the cold. He was far too

[1] For a time according to Robert Dell (cf. *Nation*, October 28, 1931), he joined an abortive 'communist-socialist' party, which, however, never spread beyond the working-class districts of Paris and soon died.

H1645-0132

H1645-0133

Leftish – still – for the harsh, legalistic Poincaré. This taught him a lesson, and he cultivated the friendship of a man distinctly not on the Left – André Tardieu. And when Tardieu formed a cabinet in 1930, Laval was his minister of labour. Laval played with Briand and Tardieu both. Loyal to Tardieu, he refused the premiership the first time it was offered him, because the radical-socialists would support no government of which Tardieu, 'the Shark', was a member. This served to push him further Right. In January 1931, finally, he did become prime minister – at Briand's urgent intercession – and included Tardieu as minister of agriculture by sacrificing Left support. His first premiership lasted thirteen months – a long time for France.

Laval, among other things, went to Berlin, the first French prime minister to visit Germany since the War. All things to all men, it looked as if he intended to be all things to all nations too. The Germans gave him an imposing reception.[1] In June 1931 he showed the world his stubbornness in haggling for seventeen bitter days before France accepted the Hoover moratorium. In October he went to America – the first French prime minister to do so – and talked to Hoover at Rapidan. Meanwhile, the influence of Briand was waning. The Old Man of Peace was sick and tired; the reports that Laval deliberately undercut him are not true. The two men had great regard for each other, and Briand was too ill to work; when in January 1932 he resigned, Laval became foreign minister as well as premier.

But the next month Laval himself went out of office. The frugal French grudged him his free trip to America. And he had angered the all-powerful Banque de France, because he insisted that France stick to the British pound, and when the pound went off gold (partly as a result of Laval's long haggle over the Hoover moratorium), the Banque de France lost £20,000,000 on paper. So he went. This taught him a lesson, as we shall see; the next time he became prime minister he listened to the Banque more carefully. He was 'out' two and a half years. In October 1934 he became foreign minister after

[1] But the story is that Brüning, then chancellor, careful to risk no hostile demonstration at the station, filled it with several thousand detectives and their wives – disguised as the cheering populace.

H1645-0134

Jugoslav bullets and the lack of French first-aid killed Barthou at Marseilles; in June 1935 he became prime minister again, when the financial oligarchy vanquished his friend Flandin.

Characteristics and Habits

He has other qualities than wariness, wiliness, and great political sense. For one thing, his stubborn adhesiveness, his tenacity, is notable. '*Tenez bon!*' ('Hold fast!') a man yelled in a political meeting Laval was addressing. He replied, 'I always do.'

He is a bad speaker, and he never talks in the chamber unless it is absolutely necessary. He keeps his left hand in his trousers pocket and saws the air with his right hand. His oratorical delivery, say the sophisticated critics of the lobbies, lacks 'elegance'. But elegance is the last quality this swarthy peasant's son would pretend to. And why worry about public talk in the chamber, when private whispers just outside are more effective? When a speech is necessary, his political intuition helps him. He won the chamber at once in the crisis of June 1935 when it was smarting under the insolence of Bouisson, his predecessor.[1]

Laval is probably the only important man in French public life who has never written a book, and the only one whose final ambition is not to become a member of the Academie Française. He is not like Painlevé or Herriot, passionately erudite. His intellect is that of an engineer, not a scholar. He dislikes abstractions, and he has little use for art, science, or pure literature.

But Laval, a typical Frenchman of the middle class – not a Parisian – is quick, shrewd, logical, practical, and lucid. Compare his intelligence to that of a German, for instance Rosenberg. Rosenberg is, as Dorothy Thompson has said, a man of great intelligence who is also a complete fool: like so many Germans, he is both brilliant and incredibly stupid; he is capable of erecting dialectical structures of extreme brilliance upon hypotheses which a child could knock apart. Laval is at the other extreme. He thinks not only with his head but with his finger-tips.

[1] For a background to contemporary French politics see Alexander Werth's admirable *France in Ferment.*

H1645-0135

Every German has a sense of national mission. Every Frenchman, like Laval, has a sense of individual destiny. Scratch a German, and you find a sheep; scratch a Frenchman, and you have an anarchist. 'Remove liberty from Germany,' Frances Gunther wrote, 'and you unite the country; remove liberty from France, and you have a revolution.'

A famous *mot* is attributed to Clemenceau. 'Briand,' he said, 'knows nothing, understands everything; Poincaré knows everything, understands nothing.' Laval is in the middle ground. He knows a lot, but not everything; he understands even more than he knows, but he admits limits to his understanding. He loves to reconcile opposites. He is a lawyer, but he cares nothing for legal forms. And he has one trait excessively rare among politicians: he is not vain.

Laval married a woman from the Auvergne, who, like the wives of most French politicians, takes no part in public life. The Lavals, in Paris, live in the little impasse Villa Saïd, next door to the house where Anatole France lived. He prefers the country to Paris, and often returns to Châteldon, his birth-town, where, the local boy who made good, he owns an imposing château. Even during cabinet crises he tries to get out of Paris for the week-end. He has two or three country estates, including a stock farm in Normandie at La Corbière.

'A countryman has no story,' he told one interviewer. 'I cannot tell you mine. I have come from the soil and I return to the soil. I don't let this property to anyone. I run it myself. I give my own orders to the peasants. I see myself if a cow is giving as much milk as I expect, if a sick calf is getting well. Often I telephone to my workers from Paris, "Is the buckwheat ready yet for harvest? How are the oats getting on?" I read very little. I walk a great deal. I like dogs and cows. No man is so intelligent as a dog. Nothing is so absurd and delightful as a cow.'

Laval has no vices – except perhaps that since his doctor told him he must cut down his cigarettes, he now smokes a mere eighty per day. He still wears the kind of white tie that he adopted in 1914 – because white ties don't fade and are washable.

His attractive daughter, José, was his companion in all the Europe-trotting, until, in August 1935, she married Count

René de Chambrun, who is a second cousin to Franklin D. Roosevelt. The Chambruns, a distinguished French family, are also hereditary citizens of the United States – by special act of Congress – since they are descendants of another Auvergnese, the Marquis de Lafayette. René de Chambrun's mother, Clara Longworth, was, of course, American by birth.

Travelling Diplomat – on a Leash

Laval had no taste for the prime minister's job in June 1935. He much preferred to stick to his chosen field of foreign affairs where, indeed, his record was much brighter. He assumed the premiership only with great reluctance, because he knew that he could not last, while as a mere foreign minister his tenure would be longer. It is his life's ambition to be the great and permanent foreign minister of France, to effect French security by long-range settlement with England, Italy, and Germany. And he wanted badly to be the first Frenchman invited by Hitler to Berlin.[1]

He took the foreign office just after Barthou had been busy patching up some badly broken French fences in Central Europe, thus annoying the Germans. The Saar plebiscite was coming soon and Laval did his utmost to appease Hitler by a strictly reasonable, business-like conclusion to the Saar problem. His policy was sensible: he knew the Saar was in any case bound to go to Germany, and he decided to give it up with good grace. Generosity, in the circumstances, cost nothing. Also he and Anthony Eden were the men who suggested creation of an international police force to supervise the plebiscite, and this may turn out to be an extremely important European precedent.

Then Laval went to Rome, and in January 1935 concluded his famous arrangement with Mussolini, which, it was announced, settled all outstanding difficulties between France and Italy. He gave Mussolini some worthless sand in Lybia; in return he got promises of joint Franco-Italian action in Central Europe. But these celebrated conversations with Mussolini gave him a peck of trouble later, because when the Abyssinian crisis intervened in October, the Frenchman was

[1] Which calls to mind the joke after the Alexander-Barthou murders: the French considered asking Hitler to pay a State visit to – Marseilles!

H1645-0136

torn between his promises to Mussolini – who seemed to think Laval had given him a free hand in Abyssinia – and the burning necessity to keep on good terms with Britain within the League of Nations fold.

Promptly after his Rome visit Laval helped to negotiate the London arrangement of February 3, an Anglo-French accord stipulating the unity of British and French aims in western Europe. The signatories expressed their willingness to implement the Treaty of Locarno by an air convention. The German answer to this was the reintroduction of conscription on March 16. So presently Britain, France, and Italy met at Stresa to form a 'united front' against treaty breakers which, however, did not last long. Canny, Laval went on to Moscow, and signed with Stalin a vitally important pact, a virtual military alliance between France and Russia.

When the Abyssinian crisis split Europe wide open like a rotten melon, Laval was in a peculiarly difficult and delicate position. He hedged and haggled, trying to extricate himself. He firmly believed that his understanding with Italy, which had the sanction of the French general staff (next to the Banque de France, the most important force in the republic), was of crucial importance to French security. He needed Italy as a vital element in his defence against Germany. If he offended Mussolini, with whom he was on cordial personal terms, he might drive the inflamed Duce straight into the arms of Hitler. Then where would French security be? Would Britain, across its narrow but comfortable channel, be as useful as a military ally?

Laval dodged and panted, trying to explain to Mussolini his difficult position. In his delegation were two staunch pro-leaguers, Herriot and Paul-Boncour. He had to take them to Geneva because if he went alone they might undercut him, sabotage his cabinet behind in Paris. They exerted pressure on him in Geneva, threatening to withdraw radical support from his government if he did not join Britain in favouring League sanctions against Italy. His speech to the League assembly was partially rewritten at Herriot's command. He explained to Mussolini on the telephone that he was obliged by the force of French Left opinion to support sanctions and that Mussolini shouldn't take his speech too seriously. Then

H1645-0137

the situation rapidly changed. The British, fearful that Laval would welsh, pressed him closer and closer to sanctions, by offering him virtually an Anglo-French alliance. Britain, said Sir Samuel Hoare, would resist unprovoked aggression anywhere in Europe. This presumably meant that Britain would definitely stand by France in the event of attack by Germany. Britain was a better ally than Italy by far. So Laval looked about him warily, put his left foot in the British camp, grimaced at Mussolini – and waited to see what would come next.

Such assiduous hedging made him highly unpopular at Geneva. M. Avenol, the secretary-general of the League, referred to him privately as 'Lavalini'. Laval, having been foreign minister for over a year, was due for a fall in the winter of 1935. He was, it seemed, hedging himself out of office. But no French politician is out of politics until he is dead, and maybe not then. Boulanger, Jean Jaurès, are still names of potency in French affairs. And Laval, when he is forced out, will presently ingratiate himself into a job again.

Esprit de France

France, above all, as Edgar Ansel Mowrer put it, is a *success*. Its language, its literature, its culture, are the envy of the intelligent in every country; France is the most civilised country in the world. But since the War the French have discovered that harmony, civilisation, are not enough. During the past fifty years the world has changed more than in history, and it has isolated the perfection of French character. The world is no longer bounded by the chaste walls of a room in the Faubourg St. Germain, or an apple orchard in Normandie, or a shopkeeper's neat, frugal premises in Lyons. The Frenchman sees the values of his world changing, and he doesn't know what to do about it.

More important in France than the figure of M. Pierre Laval is the person of M. Jean Frenchman. France is a nation of forty-two million individualists. What does the average Frenchman think of the shattered world, the world slipping to a new catastrophe? M. Jean Frenchman, since his country is a success, is a standpatter. He is almost a stick-in-the-mud. His idea of a good time is to go fishing. His approach to things is, above all, rational. He refused, for a long time, to believe

H1645-0138

that Hitler – for example – was anything but 'cuckoo'. He knows better now. But tell him that Hitler is a prophet, and he will reply, sceptically, rationally, *'Prophète? Il n'y a plus de prophètes.'*

M. Jean Frenchman has lived on a volcano all his life. Twice within living memory it has exploded. It may explode again. He grumbles, potters, and hopes – not very vigorously – for the best, meantime teaching his children, from the earliest ages, to be responsible. M. Frenchman wants above all to be let alone. He wants nothing more than to do nothing. He is no good except under pressure. 'Everything in France is at least twenty per cent better than it looks; everything in Germany is twenty per cent worse,' Mowrer says. If war comes, M. Frenchman will fight, and it will be hard to beat him, even if the perfection of his civilisation has sapped much of his vitality. Rather than let the Germans have what he owns, he will burn it if he cannot defend it. Maturity isn't necessarily decadence; and Germany learned that at Verdun.

H1645-0139

CHAPTER IX

FRENCH POLICY – AND WHY

'The friends of gold will have to be extremely wise and moderate if they are to avoid a revolution.'

– J. M. KEYNES.

'The only way to treat a Prussian is to step on his toes until *he* apologises.'

– FRENCH PROVERB.

ANY French prime minister, at the end of 1935, was a creature of the financial oligarchy. I have alluded to the Banque de France in the preceding chapter. France is really run by a group of about 200 financial families, whose central pediment is the Banque de France. How this oligarchy works is worth a paragraph or two. France, as the French say, is no longer a kingdom, but the Third Republic is the pawn of eighteen 'regents' of the Banque.

The Banque de France, which makes and breaks French cabinets as a demoniac child of fixed will can make or break a toy city, was founded by Napoleon. Although it issues the public money of France and holds its gold supply, it is a private bank, not a state bank. By terms of its basic charter, only the two hundred shareholders with the most stock are permitted to vote for the regents, who control it absolutely.

In 1933 there were approximately forty thousand shareholders in the Banque de France. 17,889 shareholders held one share each, 9,021 held two shares, 8,021 held four shares. All told, 24,931 small shareholders held 68,015 shares. The remaining 115,485 shares were held by only 6,069 persons. Of these, the top two hundred alone have voting power. They choose the regents.

These two hundred men, the cream of financial France, are an amazing plutocracy. They are as snobbish as a vintage sardine or a Rue de la Paix hat. Mere wealth cannot buy its way into this velvety inner circle. The two most flagrantly

H1645-0140

conspicuous of modern French millionaires, Coty the perfume man, Citroën the automobile manufacturer, were not members of what is customarily called merely the 'oligarchy'. The chosen insiders combine the hereditary distinction of family as well as the contemporary command of wealth. They rise straight from pre-Revolutionary times; they were the upper *bourgeoisie* during Napoleon; they worked together, consolidated their power under Louis Philippe and Napoleon III. The last person really 'taken in' by the oligarchy is supposed to have been Eugène Schneider, the steel and arms merchant, about thirty years ago.

Of the eighteen regents of the Banque de France, three – the governor and the two vice-governors – are appointed by the state. They have no more voting power than the other regents. The governor must sign every decision of the regency, and if he should refuse to sign there is no technical means to compel him to do so. But in actuality, a governor of the Banque de France who disagrees with the private regents has little recourse but to resign. By terms of the Code Napoleon, the governor must possess one hundred shares of Banque stock, each vice-governor fifty shares – and the current price of shares is 10,000 francs. Not many civil servants of the French state have 500,000 or 1,000,000 francs to spend. So, in practice, the custom arose whereby the other regents lent each new governor the price of the necessary shares. When a governor retires, he is usually taken care of. Two recent ex-governors, Servent and Luquet, went to the board of the Banque de l'Union Parisienne, a big business bank formed to handle the commercial business of the private bankers of the regency. Ex-governor Moret went to the Banque de Paris et des Pays-Bas. Ex-governor Charles Rist went to that haven of ex-presidents of the French Republic, the Suez Canal Corporation.

Three other regents of the Banque are civil servants representing the French treasury. They hold office primarily to oversee the treasury account. And they represent, as a rule, an extraordinary plutocracy within a plutocracy, that of the 'Inspecteurs de Finance' of the French civil service. These 'Inspecteurs' begin public life by passing one of the stiffest competitive examinations in the world. They are cultivated

H1645-0141

young men of good intellect and family. There are only about eighty of them in France, and they are at the top of the permanent civil service. After years of training they become 'inspectors'; later they may become regents of the Banque, or they may resign to take private positions in industry or banking. The eighty-odd 'inspecteurs de finance' comprise a sort of financial general staff, scattered – but closely knit – through the financial structure of the French republic.

The remaining twelve regents, representing private interests, are the actual rulers of the Banque de France. They are supposed to embody a cross-section of French finance, industry, commerce, agriculture. Six of the twelve are bankers, all of them, in the absolute sense of the term, 'hereditary' regents. Their seats are passed down, father to son. Of the six families represented, five came to France from Switzerland in the eighteenth century to assist Necker in preserving the finances of the Ancien Régime. The sixth seat is that of the Rothschilds; Baron Alfonse de Rothschild became a regent in 1855.

The six 'banking' regents are:

Baron Edouard de Rothschild. (Rothschild bank.)
Baron Hottingeur. (Banque Hottingeur.)
Baron Jacques de Neuflize. (Banque de Neuflize.)
M. Ernest Mallet. (Banque Mallet.)
M. David Weil. (Banque Lazard Frères.)
M. Pierre Mirabaud. (Banque Mirabaud.)

All of these banking firms are venerable private institutions, which for centuries have administered the estates of the French nobility, besides doing normal commercial business. They represent family dynasties. For instance, Pierre Mirabaud succeeded his uncle William d'Eichtal who succeeded his uncle Paul Mirabaud who succeeded his grandfather, Adolphe d'Eichtal. M. Weil succeeded to the seat of Felix Vernes, who had taken his place after father and grandfather.

The final regents are, according to the Napoleonic law of April 1806, chosen among '*manufacturiers, fabricants* (merchants), *ou commerçants*' who are shareholders of the Banque. They are:

H1645-0142

M. François de Wendel, steel merchant.
M. de Vogüe, chemical manufacturer and president of the Union des Agriculteurs de France.
M. René Duchemin, chemical manufacturer.
M. Camille Poulenc, chemical manufacturer.
M. Robert Darbley, paper manufacturer.

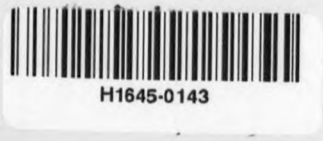
The Marquis de Vogüe, like the banking regents, represents the old aristocracy; his family for two generations has administered the Manufacture de Glaces de Saint-Gobain, the greatest chemical works in France. M. de Vogüe is also a director of Schneider et Cie, of Creusot, the great arms firm, as is M. de Wendel.

Interlocking directorates among the banking and industrial regents have reached a point where these twelve men have one hundred and fifty seats in ninty-five corporations, which account for at least sixty per cent of the industrial output of France. They sit on the boards of thirty-one private banks, eight insurance companies, nine railway companies (four of which are foreign), eight navigation companies, seven metallurgical corporations, eight electrical companies, eight mining companies, twelve chemical companies.

Above all, the regents are part and parcel of that immense industrial complex known as the Comité des Forges.

The regents of the Banque de France decisively control French politics, because by withholding credits from the treasury they can break any prime minister they don't like. The Banque, which more or less represents the *rentier* class, stands for complete deflation. The much maligned Chamber of Deputies, representing the man in the street – and his pocketbook – opposes this. Thus the Banque can only get its way by taking the matter out of the hands of the chamber. The way to do this is to obtain '*pleins pouvoirs*' (full powers) for a prime minister it likes. For instance the Banque persuaded old Gaston Doumergue, who headed France's 'National Government' formed after the Stavisky riots, to demand such powers. The chamber promptly threw the fatuous old gentleman out. The next prime minister was Pierre-Etienne Flandin, and the Banque squashed him in six months.

Flandin, six feet four, a man of the Centre, an honest fellow, refused to bow unconditionally to the Banque's dictates. He


H1645-0143

said, 'We are given a choice: deflation or devaluation of the franc. I refuse to let myself be tied up in this dilemma.' He proposed a third alternative, a policy of easier money, gradual 'reflation'. The Banque didn't like this and cooked up the panic which overthrew Flandin. The prime minister retaliated by dismissing Clement Moret, the governor. The bank thereupon refused to rediscount government short-term loans. Pressure on the government from the Banque became enormous. On June 15, the government had to meet a big payment of government bonds, but it was penniless; Flandin was living hand to mouth by borrowings from the post-office savings. Frenchmen, worried, fearing inflation, began to buy gold and ship their capital abroad. Blandly, the Banque let this go on. It could have stopped the drain of gold, but it wanted to beat Flandin. In a panic, Flandin appealed to the chamber for the same *pleins pouvoirs* which he had previously refused to request. The chamber was naturally incredulous and overthrew him. The Banque, victorious, then easily plugged the leak of gold. This was the inner history of the French financial 'crisis' of June 1935.

Laval became prime minister and obeyed the Banque implicitly in a merciless policy of deflation. He did not, however, swallow entire the programme of De Wendel, chairman of the Comité des Forges, who wanted four or five billion francs for 'economic redressment', viz. gifts to industry in the form of lightened taxation and government subsidies. Taxes went up. Everybody suffered. But it is interesting to note how De Wendel had Laval at heel when the prime minister asked the chamber for four thousand million francs as special military credits. The chamber entered two amendments, (1) to limit profits on arms manufacture to five per cent, (2) to nationalise the arms industry within a year. When Laval saw that these amendments would pass, he withdrew the bill.

The De Wendel-Laval decrees outdistance anything in the history of the French republic for 'encroachment on the field of private enterprise'. The yield of government bonds was reduced ten per cent by fiat; the government procured the right to fix prices and profits in almost every branch of business, down to the corner *bistro*; house rents and mortgages

H1645-0144

were cut ten per cent by decree; private borrowers were permitted to reduce interest payments; official salaries, wages, and pensions were cut three to ten per cent; prices of coal, gas, electricity, were deflated. Even so, the cost of living in France remained about twenty-five per cent above the world level.

Why do the *rentiers*, the small capitalists, the peasants with savings, swallow such a programme when devaluation of the franc might much less painlessly lighten the burden? The reason is, of course largely psychological. The terrors of deflation are comparatively unknown; those of inflation are known and doubly feared. France at the end of 1935 was dominated by a stick-to-gold psychosis, much like that of the United States under Hoover. And it should not be forgotten that the French capital-owning classes lost four-fifths of their savings when the franc was re-established on gold by Poincaré. They were gold-ites to the last coin in the sock.

Those who think that Fascism is exclusively a force operated for personal advantage by industrialists confront a paradox here. France is a democracy. But the industrialists of France have considerably more power over political life in France than have German industrialists in Germany. The point might well be made, were economics the only index of Fascism, that France is a more 'Fascist' country than Germany, where, by terms of a recent Hitlerite decree, no industry is permitted more than six per cent profit. Yet to say that France is Fascist would be preposterous.

The point is that Germany is ruled by a nationalist-militarist dictatorship, against which no one may protest successfully, not even the industrialists. But in France the people can still vote. It was clear in the autumn of 1935 that the next general election in France, scheduled for May 1936, will be fought on the Banque issue. 'Is the Banque de France,' as Robert Dell put it, 'to be the master or the servant of the state?' Prime ministers in France can still fight the bank. A Left cabinet might even fight it – successfully.

Another point is, however, relevant. There is an ominous parallel between the deflationary policy of Laval and the deflationary policy of Brüning. Brüning begat Hitler. May not Laval beget Colonel de la Rocque? May not revolt at the

H1645-0145

deflationary measures of the Banque produce, instead of devaluation of the franc under a Left cabinet, Fascism or something close to it under a Right cabinet? At the turn of 1935, this question projected an ominous shadow across French politics.

Comité des Forges

François de Wendel is a good many things besides regent of the Banque and president of the Comité des Forges. He has, of course, his own steel business, 'Les Petits Fils de F. de Wendel et Cie'. The Wendels are an international family and three brothers run the business; one cousin, now dead, was a German citizen until the War, calling himself not *de* but *von* Wendel.[1] François de Wendel is a senator; the owner of the *Journal de Débats*; and part owner of the semi-official French organ, *Le Temps*.

The Comité des Forges is the French steelmakers trade association, something like the Iron and Steel Institute of the United States. It neither sells nor produces steel, but it dominates the policy of the two hundred and fifty odd producers who are its members, by allotting quotas and setting prices. Of the companies in the Comité, probably the best known is Schneider et Cie, of Le Creusot, run by M. Eugène Schneider, who, like De Wendel, is of Franco-German extraction. The Schneider firm was founded by a Saarlander, the grandfather of the present Schneider, who settled in France in 1836. Schneider-Creusot does not produce much steel, but buys it from companies in the Comité that do, and then transforms it into armaments.

If I am killed in the next war I hope they will put on my white cross a notation that the bullet which killed me cost a fraction of a cent to make and sold for three cents or more. Someone, I should like it known, made a nice profit on my mouldering bones.

Bullets do not cost much. But if you shoot one million rounds an hour at £6 per thousand, the figures mount up. A rifle does not cost much – perhaps £5. But equip an army of one million men, and you have spent £5,000,000. A machine-gun costs about £128. The French have about forty thousand

[1] He was Ivan Edouard von Wendel (1871–1931), a cousin of François, not a brother as is often said.

H1645-0146

of them. A 37 mm. field-gun costs about £200, and each shell about £3. The famous French 75's come to about £1,600 each. They are expensive and intricate, with fuses built like watches. Their shells cost £5 each and in a single bombardment some millions may be fired. A big tank, complete, costs about £16,000. A bombing plane may nick your budget £20,000. A modern cruiser costs £2,200,000, an aircraft carrier £3,800,000, and a big battleship almost £6,000,000.

Thus war, as we have good reason to know, is expensive. It costs us money. We pay taxes. But war also makes money – for some – a lot of money. Thus the munitions business, one of the strangest in the world.

The world, according to the League of Nations, spent £855,360,000 on armament last year. In one year, mind you. This sum is too astronomical for ready comprehension. Suppose I had that much money and spent it at the rate of £2 per day. I should still have some left after more than a million years. Suppose it should be transformed into a piece of tape, mile for dollar; it would go around the world 172,169 times. Suppose I had it in gold pieces of £2 each and counted them at the rate of one per second; the job would take 1,356 years, 5 days, 8 hours.

The root of the munitions problem is the fact that only highly industrialised countries can profitably manufacture appreciable quantities of arms. These countries sell to those less industrialised. Ninety-eight per cent of the total arms exports of the world comes from ten countries; about sixty-five per cent comes from Great Britain, the United States, France, Sweden, and Czechoslovakia, the five greatest exporting countries. France, typified by Schneider-Creusot, supplied in 1932 no less than 27.9 per cent of the world's total output of arms.

Schneider-Creusot, like all great arms companies, is several things – an arms firm, a myth, a steel works, a microcosm of the munitions industry, a national institution, a nightmare to pacifists, an idol to patriots, a military necessity to more than one country, and a whale of a good business. The directors of Schneider and the other firms in the Comité des Forges which do munitions business are quite mild-mannered gentlemen. They do not seem ferocious; but their business is the invention, manufacture, and sale of implements of death.

H1645-0147

H1645-0148

The arms companies are as incestuous as white mice. They play together and breed. This is because they are in a signal sense, non-competitive; good business for one means good business for the others; obviously if Schneider, say, gets a big order from Country X, other companies will have better chance of business from Country Y, which is X's unfriendly neighbour. As soon as one country buys a new military invention, other countries must buy it also. Arms firms may underbid one another for a contract in a single state; but internationally they all stand to gain. Cannon is expensive; cannon fodder cheap.

Extraordinarily interrelated and intertwined, the arms firms lace the whole world in their net. Schneider and Vickers were connected through Sir Basil Zaharoff, munitions salesman extraordinary. Schneider controls Skoda, the great Czechoslovak munitions firm, through a French holding company, the Union Européenne. An allied bank finances a big Hungarian bank, which provides loans for Schneider sales. The Schneider interests are believed to control an Austrian bank also, which is interested in the chief Austrian steel company, the Alpine Montangesellschaft. But the Alpine concern is 'owned' by the German Steel Trust! And through a Dusseldorff firm, Rheinmetall, Schneider is believed to be linked to Krupp.

It is, of course, an old story that arms firms maintain an extreme political impartiality in their business. They sell to each side in any war. They sell to friend and foe alike. Pluck a bullet out of the heart of a British boy shot on the North-west Frontier, and like as not you will find it of British make. Paul Faure, deputy in the French chamber, is in possession of photographs showing representatives of Turkey and Bulgaria buying arms at Creusot before the War which during the War were used against French troops; he has also a precious picture of Eugène Schneider on a yachting party with the Ex-Kaiser Wilhelm. French munition traffickers helped arm Abdel-Krim in his Morocco campaign against the French. The Turks used British cannon to beat the British at the Dardanelles; British battleships were sunk by British mines.

There is money in war. There is money in fear of war. Schneider and Skoda stocks skyrocketed on the Paris bourse from the time that Hitler came to power in Germany. Skoda

dividends, even in 'depression' years, reached twenty-eight and a half per cent. And in times of comparative tranquillity, the arms traffickers were not above fomenting war scares. For details, one should read two remarkable pamphlets published in London by the Union of Democratic Control, the *Secret International* and *Patriotism, Ltd.*

War scares are good; real wars will be better. Let there be no mistake about it. Arms dealers want war. They are hypocrites if they deny this. War is to them what milk is to a baby. They fatten on it. They fatten on it like pigs in corn.

One should not think, however, that Schneider-Creusot and the De Wendels are more noisome specimens of the arms merchant genera than those of other lands. France has its finger in the arms traffic pie; so have many other countries, including such holier-than-thou pacific states as Denmark and Sweden. Schneider-Creusot is on the whole, slightly more savoury a company than several of its great competitors. And, remembering some of the disclosures of the senate commission in Washington, one should recall the proverb about glass-houses.

Liberty, Equality, Fraternity – and Sterility

France is almost perfectly balanced between agriculture and industry; it needs to import only a very little food; it is infinitely less dependent on foreign markets than Great Britain or Germany; the backbone of the nation is the *petit bourgeoisie,* the small landowner, the peasant capitalist; industry feeds healthily on the iron beds of Lorraine; the country is rich, even if the government is hard-up – these are the permanent economic realities of France.

There is another reality not quite so comforting. No Laval, no Tardieu, no Herriot, no De Wendel, has power to change finance. It is not even the safety of the Rhine frontier, security against the great enemy, Germany. It is a demographic problem – the falling birth-rate.

In 1934 in France there were 677,365 births, 638,525 deaths; the surplus of births was thus only about forty thousand. In the first quarter of 1935 there were ten thousand fewer births than in the corresponding period of 1934. The birth-rate in 1934 was 16.1 per thousand, and for years it has steadily gone down; the death-rate was 15.1 per thousand. In Germany, by

H1645-0149

H1645-0150

contrast, the birth-rate was 18.0, the death-rate only 10.9. The corresponding figures for Italy are 23.2, and 13.1; for the U.S.S.R., 44.1 and 26.1. Germany, on the average – even though the German birth-rate, despite a temporary fillip following Hitler, is also going down – has about one million one hundred thousand births annually. And France has only seven hundred thousand – in a fruitful year.

No wonder France, with a population of forty-two million looks across the Rhine at Germany, with its sixty-five million, in trepidation and some annoyance. No wonder Marshal Foch, in one of his lighter moments, suggested that the only permanent solution of the Franco-German problem would be the castration of some twenty million Germans.

The Watchword – Security

'FOR RENT – Five room apartment, two minutes from Bois de Boulogne, central heating, bombproof shelter.'
– Advertisement in Paris daily.

There are arms merchants in France, but in general the French are the most pacific people in the world. The great mass of French *rentiers* and small shopkeepers want no more war. It is interesting, as Frances Gunther pointed out, to note the catchwords that come to mind in connection with different nationalities. Deutschland Über Alles, for instance. Germany *on top* of everything. 'Rule Britannia,' for instance. The equivalent for France is '*Vive la France*', let France *live*. The Frenchman doesn't want to die; he wants to stay alive, keep his small shop, cultivate his plot of land.

The French have what Lytton Strachey, alluding to Gibbon, called the classic virtues: precision, balance, lucidity. They hate extravagance and sloppiness. They love order. Both the national habit of saving and the political desire for security are functions of the same instinct; the Frenchman puts his gold in a sock and his treaty at a frontier to satisfy the same craving – for economy, for order. By order I do not mean the compulsion to goose-step, but the inner harmony of activity in personal and political life that rises from lucid, well-balanced intelligence.

France, Siegnobos has noted, never asks for anything at an international conference. This may be an exaggeration. France got a good deal out of the War. All France wants is to

be permitted to keep what she has. I have written 'a good deal'; but in reality did France get so very much? In proportion to their sacrifices and to the total German losses, the share of the French was not unduly great. Alsace-Lorraine; the Saar for fifteen years; the Syrian mandate and the Cameroons; reparations. Well, Alsace-Lorraine was French anyway, at least since Louis XIV; the Saar was duly given back to Germany; the Syrian mandate has been an expensive nuisance; and where, oh where, are reparations now?

For France, the 'peace' of 1919 has not proved enough. Fifteen years later France again saw the terrible weight of German militarism leaning against the fragile west frontier. The French have been invaded by Germany thrice in a little more than a century. They don't want to be invaded again.

The war-guilt topic is complex. Of course French policy contributed to the origins of the Great War. To say that Germany alone was guilty is perhaps a slight exaggeration. Nevertheless, the German *army* was the aggressor. Monsieur Briand and Herr Stresemann – it seems a long time ago – once had a brief conversation on the subject:

'Well,' the old Frenchman sighed, 'I don't, of course, know what history will say, but I am afraid you will have to agree that in 1914 Belgium did not invade Germany!'

France, a realistic nation, having suffered the loss of almost two million war dead, having suffered unparalleled devastation and destruction of property and human values, sought after the War to create a system of defence, known as 'security'. It comprised the following items:

The most powerful army in western Europe.
The most formidable air force.
The greatest number of tanks and artillery.
The line of fortifications on the eastern frontier.
An immense munitions industry.
The largest gold reserve in the world.
The League covenant and the Kellogg Pact.
The demilitarisation of Germany.
The Locarno treaties.
The military and diplomatic alliances with the Little Entente (Czechoslovakia, Jugoslavia, Rumania).
The arrangement with Poland.
The treaty of mutual assistance with the U.S.S.R.
The 'Stresa Front' with Italy and Britain.

H1645-0151

H1645-0152

These were among the spoils of victory, but they are – spoiling. All these items the French have, or had. But the French fear that they are not enough. And with reason.

The French army, say the French, is no longer the most powerful in Europe; the Russian is bigger, and the German better. French conscripts will melt like butter before the German professional battalions. The air force is out of date, and General Goering probably has as many planes as France. The fortifications are underground – and the Germans can simply fly over them. 'France,' it has been said, 'was perfectly prepared in 1914 for the war of 1871, and in 1935 France is perfectly prepared – for the war of 1914.' The League system has been dealt terrible blows by the Japanese in Manchuria, the Italians in Abyssinia. The alliances with the Little Entente are valid, but the Poles are a doubtful quantity. Germany, by leaving the League of Nations, ended the 'disarmament' phase of international politics, and the 'collective security' phase which replaced it is neither collective nor secure. The Russian treaty is valuable, but Russia is a long way away, and as we have seen, the U.S.S.R. is not contiguous to Germany. Finally, the 'Stresa Front' collapsed when Great Britain signed the Anglo-German naval treaty and when Mussolini began the Abyssinian war.

During the long Briand period, the French, albeit grudgingly, were conciliatory to Germany in the main. It was obvious to Briand that Germany, a complex of sixty-five million people in the heart of Europe, couldn't be kept down permanently, that a healthy Germany was the *sine qua non* of general European stability. But what happened? Every concession redoubled German chauvinism. The French evacuated the Rhine; the answer they got was the end of reparations. They granted Germany equal military status; the answer they got was Hitler. They gave Germany back the Saar; the answer they got was German conscription, plus Goering's tremendous air fleet.

Unilateral denunciation of treaties has become a bit of a bore, the French think. Suppose Spain should suddenly decide to demand the Philippines back from the United States! The French have submitted to a permanent inferiority in one branch of armament, that is, they accepted the 1.75 naval ratio

vis-à-vis America and Britain. Why could not the Germans accept similar proportional inferiority? Should the Germans get back all they lost simply by asking for it? If they dislike the Treaty of Versailles, why did they sign it in the first place? What, in short, was the use of winning the War anyway? Which is, of course, and the honest Frenchman will admit it, the exact point: winning the War brought little gain; no one won the War; winners were losers.

French policy at the end of 1935 was based, as always, on the necessities of defence. Since the Doumergue government, the general staff of the army has been actually *in* the cabinet, first in the person of Marshal Pétain, currently through General Denain, the air minister. The Flandin government doubled the length of military service for conscripts. This was to counterbalance the meagre cadres of the 'lean years' during the War, when fewer men were born to reach military age in 1935.

Diplomatically, France follows the Barthou tactics, to keep its allies in order through regional pacts within the League of Nations. The French allies are, as everyone knows, the 'status quo' countries, the 'Haves' of Europe, those which got what they wanted by the War, more or less: Belgium, Czechoslovakia, Jugoslavia, Rumania. Also allied to France is Soviet Russia. The 'Have-Nots', the powers which want revision, are Germany, Austria, Hungary, Bulgaria. The powers on the fence are Italy and Poland. The conflict between these groups produces a vicious circle. The security arrangements of the 'Haves' stimulates the revisionism of the 'Have-Nots', threats of revision by the 'Have-Nots' then force the 'Haves' to stiffer standards of security. French nationalism spurs German nationalism, and vice versa. The more eager the Germans are to revise, the keener are the French for the status quo.

The most important item in French security is, of course, the Treaty of Locarno. This treaty, signed in 1925 by Briand, Stresemann, and Austen Chamberlain, guarantees the west frontier; both Italy and Britain promise (with some reservations, it is true) to assist France if Germany attacks France, and to assist Germany if France attacks Germany. This treaty was potent enough to keep the peace for its first ten years.

France would like three more Locarnos, and until the

H1645-0153

Abyssinian war blasted other considerations out of sight, they were constant preoccupations of French policy, but negotiations to achieve them were slow and formidably difficult.

1. A western air pact. This would extend Locarno to immediate assistance by air to any signatory attacked, not merely France or Germany. The advantage to France would be a closer tie-up to England and Italy. To accompany it France wanted a security arrangement in Eastern Europe, which Hitler – who might have signed a western air pact – balked at, thus bringing the whole business to nothing.

2. A Danubian pact. This, if negotiated, would take the form of a Franco-Italian guarantee of the present frontiers in Central Europe, plus assistance of some kind for Austria. Germany opposed it, because if successful it would, by 'freezing' the present borders, prevent *Anschluss*, union of Germany and Austria.

3. An 'Eastern Locarno', similarly guaranteeing the frontiers of Poland, Germany, the U.S.S.R., and the Baltic States. The U.S.S.R. is eager for such a treaty, and has made preliminary regional pacts with the buffer countries. Germany is against it. So is Poland.

For a time, immediately after Hitler came to power, there was some fear that France might wage a 'cold' war, a preventive war, the theory being that it was better to strike at Germany when she was comparatively weak than risk waiting for a war made by Germany when strong. The idea fell flat, for the simple reason that France wouldn't fight. No government in France could get a single Frenchman to cross a frontier in any aggressive war. But woe to the man who treads two feet inside French territory.

Brass Check in France

One of the things which makes France so hard for a foreigner to understand is the notorious venality of the French Press. There are no fewer than one hundred and two daily newspapers in Paris alone and of the lot probably few except two are honest in our sense of the term, the *Action Française*, organ of the royalists, and *Humanité*, the communist sheet. Most of the others, from top to bottom, have news columns for sale.

When the American Ambassador Walter Edge arrived in

H1645-0154

Paris at the beginning of his term, one of the editors of an important paper called on his secretary, hat in hand, sure that the new emissary would appreciate the very best in '*publicité*'. A year or so ago in Barcelona, the leader of the Catalan movement told me that he had had to pay another important paper to print a series of articles describing sympathetically Catalan aspirations.

Paris papers may be subsidised by foreign governments, for instance Japan and Italy. During the Japanese war in Manchuria the French Press was, by and large, thoroughly pro-Japanese – and for a reason. Italy, a competent authority estimates, spent about sixty-five million French francs on French newspapers in 1935. And the Press is subsidised by the French Government too. Both the ministry of foreign affairs and the ministry of the interior have at their disposal huge *fonds secrets*.

H1645-0155

H1645-0156

CHAPTER X

MORE ABOUT FRENCHMEN

'It is impossible to think of France except in terms of individuals.'
– ANDRÉ SIEGFRIED.

GERMANY is Hitler. But France is a whole lot of people. Six hundred and ten of them are members of the chamber of deputies, subdivided into bewilderingly numerous parties and groups. In the sixty-four years of the French republic there have been ninety-five cabinets, the average life being eight months. Living in France to-day are thirteen ex-prime ministers;[1] each of whom, as long as he lives, must be addressed officially as '*M. le Président* [*du Conseil*]'. From one point of view, France is the *reductio ad absurdum* of democracy.

Several factors cause this extreme political fluidity. For one thing, as Siegfried says, the Frenchman wears his heart on the left, his pocket-book on the right; therefore he is a creature of conflicting impulses. Second, the parties and groups are not clearly demarcated as in America or England. Politics is largely a matter of personality; deputies are individualists rather than members of a rigid party machine, and many – forty-seven in the present chamber – belong to no party at all.

The French electoral system is a combination of the British and American, in that the chamber is elected for a stated period (four years), but that the cabinet must resign if it is outvoted; the new cabinet carries on under the old chamber, which is the source of much of the confusion. There are so many parties that no single one can command a majority; they combine in coalitions. The Left can seldom form a straight-Left ministry, but it is always strong enough to throw any other ministry out.

'The nomenclature of parties,' Albert Guerard wrote, 'is' –

[1] Paul-Boncour, Caillaux, Chautemps, Daladier, Doumergue, Flandin, Tardieu, Herriot, François-Marsal, Millerand, Steeg, Sarraut, Bouisson.

he put it mildly – 'perverse. The "Liberals" are dyed-in-the-wool conservatives. The "Conservatives" are revolutionary in spirit, tone, and method; the "Social and Radical Left" belongs to the Right; the "Radical Socialists" are trimmers and time-servers; and the most reactionary statesman of recent years, Millerand, was a socialist. French parties are not even shadows. It would tax the subtlety of a Byzantine theologian to distinguish between the Democratic Alliance, the Republicans of the Left, and the Republican Union.'

But, mystified by the whirling rotation of French cabinets, the foreign observer is likely to exaggerate its implications. The changes, the reshuffles, do not as a rule mean much. The civil service – the permanent staff of each ministry – holds the fabric of government tight and secure. The prime minister is titular rather than actual ruler of the country; he is 'a weather-vane, registering with fair accuracy the state of public opinion at the time'; behind him the bureaucracy carries on.

As a matter of fact, there have been only five drastic changes in government in France since the War, the same number as in Britain. From 1919 to 1924 the *Bloc National* ruled, dominated by Clemenceau, Poincaré, and the financial oligarchy; it gave way from 1924 to 1926 to a Left coalition under Herriot, the *Cartel des Gauches*; Poincaré returned with the *Union Nationale* to save the franc from 1926 to 1929; a series of Left coalitions, more or less antagonistic to the oligarchy and the Banque de France, ruled roughly from 1929 to 1934; in 1934 Doumergue formed a 'National' government which was succeeded in 1935 by roughly Centre governments under Flandin and Laval.

France's ability to shed a government, like a lizard its skin, is of great advantage at certain critical moments in foreign affairs. Whenever things get really hot for Marianne at an international conference, the government can conveniently fall – thus suspending the foreign crisis for some days. Which invariably pricks the rest of Europe into fury.

Cutting across the political welter is one first-rate issue, that of religion. France is divided into two extremes religiously, the Catholics and the Freemasons. The Catholics, the largest group, are nationalist, conservative, strong in the oligarchy and strong in the army; some, like the brilliant pamphleteers

H1645-0157

H1645-0158

of the *Action Française,* are royalists; the bulk of the Catholics are loyal to the republic, but on the Right.

The Freemasons, on the other hand, are largely represented in the parties of the Left. Briand was reputed to be a Freemason; Herriot is supposed to be one; Chautemps is. The Freemasons are alleged to control the radical party; they are ferociously republican and anticlerical; they oppose the financial oligarchy and the banks. France is the only country in Europe where masonry is a burning political issue; the Right, for instance, exploited the Stavisky scandal as a 'masonic' plot.

Big Brother of the Boche

Edouard Herriot, the Mayor of Lyons, a torpid but sometimes strenuous idealist, is leader of the radical-socialist party, the largest in the French chamber. This party, corresponding more or less to the British liberals, is neither radical nor socialist, but it is the skeleton of all Left coalitions. Herriot, a copious enough personality, signalises well its aims, tempo, and limitations. He is always a power, because the average Frenchman is a radical.

He was born in Lyons, in 1872, and still lives there, he has been Mayor of Lyons uninterruptedly since 1905. When local opposition is serious, he descends on the town council, weeps and wails, and gets re-elected by making it ashamed of itself for even daring to consider any other candidate. He was a poor boy, largely self-educated. He became a teacher, then a professor at the University of Lyons, finally a deputy.

He is a great artist in the emotions. Sometimes this leads him to bizarre excesses of pathos. 'Gentlemen,' he said, with tears streaming down his cheeks, 'we must not quarrel over the bedside of our sick mother (France)', when he and Poincaré furiously bickered after the *débâcle* of the franc in 1926. He is very fond of placing his hand on his heart and declaiming about his warm virtues. He gets a lot of ragging for it.[1]

The antithesis of the lean, dry, acrid Poincaré, Herriot is a tower of massive flesh, given valiantly to indulgence. He almost died of acute indigestion following his trip to Moscow,

[1] cf. *Not to be Repeated,* p. 259. Cartoonists like to portray Herriot as a transparent body with six or seven hearts.

because he liked the caviare so much. A friend of mine had a 'snack' with him – just a bite – recently at Geneva; he ate soup, two *truites bleues*, a partridge, considerable quantities of vegetable matter, a sweet, and cheese, washed down with two full bottles of burgundy. But he attributes his good health to the fact that he is a total abstainer from alcohol, viz., any alcohol except wine and beer.

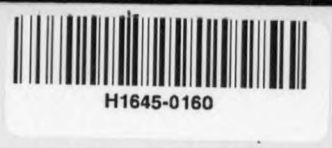
Herriot first became prime minister in 1924, and his government set out to reverse the *revanche* politics of Clemenceau and Poincaré. Europe looked up with hope and interest. Herriot – and MacDonald across the channel – seemed symbols of a new and conciliatory era. Herriot in particular, robust, expansive, scholarly, benign, generous, suggested to nationalist Europe the France it had forgotten, the France of the classic humanities of Jean Jacques Rousseau, the ideals of the great Revolution.

For a time he flourished on the reversal of arid Poincarism. He set about to reach an agreement with England – Franco-British relations were then severely strained – and to conciliate Germany by settling the reparations question. Two months after the formation of his ministry the Ruhr was evacuated and the Dawes Plan went into operation. This seems small potatoes now; but it was a literally tremendous achievement. Herriot gave Europe a new start. He initiated the policy which has dominated French foreign politics ever since – reliance on the League – when the League behaves itself.

Much later, in 1930, Herriot was still battling with disarmament plans which might entice the Germans into playing European ball. Fittingly, he was the negotiator of the Lausanne settlement, which ended reparations – and closed a gloomy post-War chapter. He was the first French prime minister to get on good terms with the U.S.S.R., and as far back as 1932 he signed a Franco-Russian non-aggression treaty. He thought that France ought to pay its debt to the U.S.A., and lost office when the frugal French, like the normally honest British, thought that this idea was nonsense.

As disillusion came to Herriot, his idealism became a little tarnished. Inevitably, like most liberals, he had made some gigantic compromises. He took office in the Doumergue

H1645-0159


H1645-0160

national government, even though his party did not. One would expect him to denounce the gold standard and Laval's humiliating dependence on the banks. But he took office under Laval too. This, his friends say, was so that he might the better spy on Laval at Geneva, keep him in proper order.

Herriot can make a speech, and a magnificent speech, though his very delivery is orotund and portly, on any occasion, extemporaneously. He was crossing on the *Île de France* after his American visit in 1933, with Paderewski a fellow passenger, on a day that happened to be the Polish national holiday. The ships company persuaded Paderewski to play; lights were kept low so that no one could see the old man, suffering agonies from rheumatism, too closely. Paderewski, barely able to lift his hands to the keyboard, played all his runs glissando, but he played them beautifully. Herriot, as was inevitable, had spoken introducing him. His speech was quite on a par with the music. At the end, anyone in the audience not knowing him would have thought him a Pole.

He is, like many French statesmen, a man of profound erudition and very nearly first-rate literary style. The rhythm of a sentence, the lilt of a sly adjective, the passion of an unexpected verb – these are matters almost as dear to his heart as the sauce of the *quenelles de brochet* at his favourite restaurant, the Mère Brazier, in Lyons. Herriot has written several books, and they are admirable. One was a study of Mme Recamier. Another was one of the best biographies of Beethoven ever written.

Herriot has come on bad times within his own party. Daladier and the younger men detest him. He was a lonely figure at the end of 1935. In his big days, he was too strong; later he was too weak. The central point of his character seems to be his curious obsession that he must 'save' France. From what? No one knows.

The Fusiliers

Edouard Daladier, deputy for Orange, nicknamed 'The Bull', 'The Inscrutable', 'The Taciturn', was born in Southern France in 1884. He bears a strong facial resemblance to Napoleon. Herriot was his professor at the University of

Lyons, and for ten years he was Herriot's protégé. Now they are rivals and enemies. Daladier and the other 'Fusiliers', viz. members of the government which dispersed the mob of February 6, 1934, by force, are the 'Young Turks' of the radical party, rebels, committed to coalition with the Left and to drastic Left reforms.

Daladier is blunt, level-headed, a clumsy but effective orator, simple, a man of the people, slow-witted, honourable. He married a wealthy woman, but he has no gift for luxury or display; he is the furthest possible remove from an ambitious opportunist like the brilliant Tardieu.

It seemed in 1933 that Daladier would have an exceptionally fine career. The British liked him; he bade fair to get along with Germany. He appeared to be the democratic leader that France, adjusting itself to contemporary difficulties, was searching for. He was prime minister and minister of war till October 1933, when he fell on the usual sort of minor domestic issue – a squabble over salary cuts. His second prime ministry lasted for four days, from February 3 to February 7, 1934, and was calamitous. The Stavisky scandal and the Paris riots ruined him.

These events I will discuss in the next chapter. Suffice it to say now that Daladier got himself into an impossible position, so that he could disperse the raging mob in the Place de la Concorde only by firing on it. It is no excuse that the mob, as general testimony agrees, fired first. Daladier was wedged into a hole he should never have entered. The *Action Française* always mentions him as the 'murderer'.

He has gone far to the Left since those bloody days. The question is whether the terrible experience of February 6 ruined him, broke his spirit, or fused the uncertainties of his character into deeper strength. Daladier and his cohorts in the radical party have joined the communist-socialist *'Front Populaire'*, united front against Fascism. His programme has three points: (1) abolition of the Croix de Feu and the other armed groups of the 'Street'; (2) nationalisation of the Banque de France; (3) socialisation of certain industries.

Camille Chautemps, who was prime minister between the two Daladier ministries, is a much lesser man: a professional politician, with all the vices of that ilk: a careerist, whose

H1645-0161

H1645-0162

family has been a sort of radical dynasty since 1871. The royalists call him *'Le Tenebreux'*, the shadowy. He is an acknowledged Freemason. Chautemps was minister of the interior in Stavisky's big days and his brother-in-law, Pressard, was head of the Paris *parquet* (prosecutor's office) which let Stavisky off. The campaign against Chautemps, even after he resigned office, in the Right Press, fed by the royalists, the Comité des Forges, and the financial oligarchy, was one of the most virulent in modern times; Werth in *France in Ferment* says it can be compared in savagery only to the anti-Semitism of Julius Streicher's *Stürmer*. But Chautemps had terribly exposed himself to attack. He has virtually retired from politics as a result, though now he is a senator. One thing he did may, unfortunately, live after him; he was the first prime minister in the history of the French republic to resign without being voted down by the chamber. The pressure of the rioters forced him out, an unwholesome sign – and, in these agitated days, an unwelcome precedent.

Eugène Frot, a youthful lawyer with lively black eyes and a vivid black beard on his lean jaws from ear to ear, was minister of the interior in the ill-fated Daladier government. He was known, even then, to be among the young radicals heartily bored with the *crise de parlémentarisme*, with the scandalous inefficiency of the routine of French government. Frot was, people said, a 'Fascist of the Left'. He was the chief actor of February 6, who brought the crisis to a head by causing the discharge of Chiappe, the Corsican who was chief of police. The royalists always call him the 'assassin'.

Another of the 'Fusiliers' was Pierre Cot, minister of air in the Daladier and Chautemps governments. Thin, meagre, unimpressive physically, a scholar, he has considerable executive ability. The first thing he did on becoming air minister was learn to pilot a machine. He kept office in a good many cabinets, because he was given the job of tidying up the Aeropostale scandal and reorganising French civil aviation on reasonably efficient lines. He seemed indispensable at the job, but the riots of February 6 swept him away.

With Daladier he joined the socialist-communist United

Front. On July 14th, 1935, he appeared at the monster *Front Populaire* demonstration at the Place de la Bastille, sitting atop a motor-car with an enormous tricolour above him; beside him was another car flying a red flag, equally huge. The crowds, greeting him, shouted *'Vive le dictateur!'* Daladier, by contrast, walked in the ranks with the leaders of the march. Hundreds saw Daladier; thousands saw Cot. Even so, most folk do not think Cot will go too far. He is honest, but not a heavyweight.

Caillaux

Old Joseph Caillaux is seventy-three. At the end of 1935, it was a surprise to many who recalled the scandal of 1913, when his wife killed Gaston Calmette, editor of *Figaro*, that he was still alive – and not only alive, but an important factor in French politics. Caillaux is one of the chiefs of the radical-socialist party, as influential in his way as either Herriot or Daladier; and he is presiding officer of the vastly important Senate finance commission.

Caillaux is a dandy still. He is arrogant, neat, vain, precise, clear-headed. He is either violently reverenced or violently hated by the young. He was one of the few men in France courageous enough, during the War, to assert that both vanquished and victors would be ruined; as a result, Clemenceau had him jailed for 'complicity with Germany'. He was not tried till 1920, when, adjudged guilty by the Senate of 'imprudent conversations', he was deprived of political rights for five years and of the right to enter Paris – *'interdiction de séjour'*, a judgment usually reserved for white-slavers, drug addicts, and thugs. Caillaux, a millionaire, and a man of the highest culture, was amnestied by Herriot in 1924.

Don Juan de Lavabo

When the *Action Française* does not call Joseph Paul-Boncour, the greatest lawyer in France, 'Don Juan of Lavabo', it calls him 'Paul-Arlette-Boncour' – because, it seems, the eminent jurist once had the honour of the acquaintance of Arlette Simon, the surprisingly beautiful wife of Serge Stavisky. When she was ill in hospital – before the scandal broke – he was one of two ministers who visited her.

H1645-0163

Paul-Boncour, an old parliamentary hand, began politics as a socialist, then founded a short-lived party of his own. He looks like a Michelangelo angel – a fallen angel, perhaps. Over the massive carved head is the great mane of carved white hair. As foreign minister, he was too tender with Germany for the French general staff and almost lost his job. He made marvellous speeches at Geneva; but he forgot to meet Colonel Beck, the Polish foreign minister, at the railway station, mortally affronting him.

Like Briand, however, he is a reasonable and generous pacifist; he will probably be foreign minister again.

Of the other radicals little need be said. Albert Sarraut, former prime minister, is a communist-hater. He gave Chiappe the job of chief of police when he was Poincaré's minister of the interior. . . . Henri Cheron, a frequent finance minister, was the man whom Philip Snowden, at the Hague, called 'grotesque and ridiculous'[1]. . . . Albert Dalimier was the minister in the radical cabinet who unwittingly caused the Stavisky explosion by recommending the Bayonne bonds. . . . The party threw him out – too late.

Tardieu

André Tardieu, 'The Shark', born in 1876, the most representative French politician of the Right, is a Parisian; the countryside, which is the bedrock of France, has always distrusted him, and this may have something to do with the comparative failure of his career. Too ambitious, his life never quite fulfilled the promise of his exceptionally brilliant youth, though he has been prime minister three times. He was first in his class at the École Normale Supérieure; he was first in his examinations for the diplomatic service; he was *chef du cabinet* of a prime minister (Waldeck-Rousseau in 1899) at the astounding age of twenty-three.

For twelve years, 1902 to 1914, Tardieu was a journalist, principally for the *Temps*, *Figaro*, and *Revue des Deux Mondes*. It is quite possible that he was the most brilliant journalist in the history of modern France. During the same

[1] And when Snowden accepted a peerage, the French papers were quick and neat to headline the story: 'Viscount Snowden – Grotesque and Ridiculous.' cf. *Not to be Repeated*, p. 51.

H1645-0164

year he was professor of history at the School of Political Science and the École Supérieure de Guerre. He wrote six volumes of contemporary history. He entered politics – as a deputy – in 1914 – and spent most of the early part of the War at the Front; he was wounded, poisoned by gas, cited in army orders, decorated. Clemenceau took him up. From about 1917 on he was Clemenceau's man, first in the United States as high commissioner – where his excellent manners, *chic*, good English, and brilliant social sense made him very popular – then as a delegate to the peace conference and minister for the liberated regions.

After he had tried to break up Doumergue's national government by attacking the radicals, Tardieu resigned his office as minister of state and spent most of 1935 in retirement. The report is that Tardieu is not well; doctors are supposed to have given him only a limited span of life. Tardieu, on the Right, like Daladier, on the Left, is contemptuous of present parliamentary procedure. He has said that he will never accept office in a cabinet constituted on the present basis. If France should go Fascist or semi-Fascist, then Tardieu may become an important – and dangerous – man again.

The Grand Inquisitor

One of the most remarkable of French political characters, also on the Right, though he calls himself independent, is Georges Mandel, whose real name is Jeraboam Rothschild. He was Clemenceau's first assistant in 1917–1918 and since the Tiger devoted himself exclusively to the War, Mandel, those two years, practically ran France. Until 1934 he was a sort of invisible Richelieu, an *éminence grise* behind the scenes; he knew everything, he forgot nothing, and the chamber quaked when he rose to talk. He refused to take formal office – any premier would have been glad to have him – until Flandin persuaded him to be minister of posts and telegraphs, a job which he still held in the autumn of 1935. Literally as well as figuratively, Georges Mandel can listen-in on anything in France. As a result, he is a taciturn and formidable encyclopedia on the secret life of the Third Republic. And his power is very great.

Mandel is supposed to have entrenched himself with

H1645-0165

Clemenceau when he first asked for a job on the Tiger's newspaper. 'You are an ugly rat,' said Clemenceau. 'So I can see in that mirror,' Mandel instantly replied – pointing to the glass opposite the Tiger. Clemenceau made him foreign leader-writer because he knew nothing of foreign affairs. 'Mandel,' he said once, 'your articles are not stupider than others. But they are complicated. Hereafter, you may use merely one subject, one object, one verb in each sentence. The object must be direct. If you use an indirect object, consult me first.'

Then for fifteen years Mandel pursued many indirect objects – but not in literature.

Centre

The Centre in French politics, says Siegfried, is not so much a point of natural concentration in French politics, but a watershed dividing Left from Right. The most typical man of the Centre is Pierre-Etienne Flandin. Not a true leader, not a dynamic human being, he has commendable qualities: industry, a sense of balance, great technical proficiency in matters of economics and finance. But because he is cheap money man, the Banque, as we have seen, forced him out.

Flandin is called the Skyscraper; he is six-foot four, and solidly built, zoned almost like a building. He was – at forty-five – the youngest prime minister in the history of France. He was a flyer during the War. Though on the Centre, he is a devout republican; though his family is rich with affiliations to heavy industry, he is no warm friend of the oligarchy.

Two other men of the Centre are worth watching, François Pietri, who is minister of marine and may well be the next prime minister, and Jean Fabry, the minister of war.

The Jesuit Warrior

General Maxime Weygand retired as inspector-general of the French army when, early in 1935, he reached the age of sixty-eight. But there is not the faintest doubt that, if war should come, this peppery and shrivelled little military priest, the man who wrought the 'Miracle of Warsaw', would step out of retirement, become leader of the French armies once again.

H1645-0166

He entered St. Cyr, the French equivalent of West Point, *à titre étranger* (as a foreigner, since he was born in Belgium) and had a brilliant career. Joffre appointed him chief of staff to Foch after the first battle of the Marne, and he remained Foch's 'right hand' (as Foch called him) all during the War. Foch, like Weygand, was a devout Catholic. The two generals prayed together at mass every morning, before beginning the day's slaughter.

After the War Foch lent Weygand to the Poles; he reorganised the Polish army, vitalised it, and won the battle before the gates of Warsaw which halted the Bolshevik invasion. The Poles, of course, never forgave him for having saved them; he didn't claim the credit, but they didn't like it when other people did. Weygand, contrary to habit, was frank; *both* the Poles and Russians were, he said, the worst armies in the world.

Clemenceau's opinion of Weygand is worth quoting:

> 'Weygand is somebody. Ugly – he is ugly, misshapen, tortured, twisted; he must have had a lot of kicks when he was little. But he's intelligent; he has something in him; a dark fire. He used to anger me at the Interallied Council. He is a man – how shall I say it? – dangerous, capable of going far in a moment of crisis, of hurling himself too far. . . . Dangerous, but precious. . . . He has one enormous quality, that of knowing how to do his work without talking or being talked about. He went to Poland. I don't know what he did up there, but what he did had to be done. He came back, didn't say anything. You don't know what he did or what he's about. That's pretty good. . . . Foch wasn't stupid. But he had good-boy genius, simplicity. Weygand is something else, tender and profound. Of course, he's up to his neck in priests.'

Weygand's Catholicism – he is a fanatic Catholic – naturally made him suspect to the Left. They accused him of political ambitions, of having turned St. Cyr into a royalist-Catholic nest. Weygand was, before Poland and after, a bitter Bolshevik hater. When he was governor-general of Syria, Herriot succeeded in ousting him; even now, he is not a marshal of France, although this is probably because of the technical point that only supreme army commanders may be marshals.

H1645-0167

and he was only chief of staff. Weygand is, naturally, the old white hope of the Right, and the terrier-darling of the Fascist Leagues.

Marshal Pétain, who was minister of war under Doumergue, is a 'Left' general, i.e. a good republican. The Right tolerated him because his accomplishments were such that he could not be ignored. Pétain is seventy-nine now, and no longer a force either in military affairs or politics.

Socialist Exquisite

In the shadowy loveliness of the oldest part of Paris, the Île St. Louis which rises like an ancient monitor in the Seine, where Villon lived, and Abelard, and Voltaire, there still survive a few noble and ancient mansions – *hôtels particuliers*. Some have become apartments, some – even – office buildings, but a few remain as private residences. In one of them, cloaked by the fog-shadows of the Seine, lapped by the grey incessant water, lives a rich and fastidious recluse, a Jew of almost intolerable cultivation, *précieux*, sophisticated to his slim, elegant finger-tips – Léon Blum, the leader of the orthodox socialist party of the French republic.

Blum, a fascinatingly complex character, is a savant, a *penseur*; and also the leader of the underdogs. He owns a famous art collection; and speaks in the crowded mass-meetings of proletarian Paris. By birth, breeding, he is as delicate as a Sèvres vase; and every day he writes a stormy (if pedantic) leader in the socialist organ, which he controls, *Le Populaire*. He composes elegant literary essays; and has just formed a united front between his party and the communists.

Léon Blum was born in 1872. He is gaunt, bleak-eyed. Since 1919, though he is Parisian of the Parisians, he has represented a purely agricultural constituency, Narbonne. He has never taken office in any French cabinet. His party is the second-strongest in the French chamber, and no Left coalition can survive without his tolerance. And he is a completely honest man.

Blum, as might have been expected, took a strong pacifist line on sanctions.

H1645-0168

The Neo-Socialists

Fatigued by Blum's pontifical elegance, a sub-leader named Adrien Marquet, the Mayor of Bordeaux, and a dentist by profession, seceded from the orthodox Second Internationale socialist party in 1933 and formed what may become a powerful sub-group, the 'neo-Socialists'. Marquet, a candid opportunist, is an engagingly able if cynical politician. In Bordeaux he built up a local machine which rivals that of Herriot in Lyons. He is young – as French politicians go – long-chinned, dapper, handsome, a great ladies' man. The French, commending his candour, says that he is *débrouillard* – 'unfogged'. The story is that an old-time socialist, visiting him in the mayoralty in Bordeaux, incessantly called him 'Comrade'. 'Stop that "comrade",' Marquet said. 'Outside the office, I'm "comrade". In here I'm the mayor!'

Marquet broke with Blum because he was convinced that orthodox international socialism no longer met the urgent needs of post-War Europe. 'Order, Authority, Nation,' were his watchwords. He professed himself an admirer of some qualities of Nazi Germany, and Blum, outraged, hurled at him the worst epithet in his vocabulary, 'Fascist!' Marquet replied that socialism had to be renovated, revivified, that the world – and France – needed 'benevolent authoritarianism'. Meantime, in Bordeaux, he had superintended certain paternalist reforms. Then he made the mistake of joining the Doumergue 'national government'. His colleagues thought this represented a shift in principles – and threw him out of his own new-born party.

As intelligent as Marquet, perhaps a better man, is Marcel Déat, the present leader of the neo-socialists. Déat is an Auvergnat (like Laval). He is convinced, with many of the Left, that the financial oligarchy is a menace to France, yet, on the other hand, he flirts with Fascist, corporate ideas. 'Democracy,' says Déat, 'must cease to be the synonym of anarchy and helplessness. Order and authority do not mean dictatorship; they can, on the contrary, be the happy attributes of a democratic régime. "Nation" does not mean Nationalism, or the consolidation of economic autarchy.' (Werth, p. 292.) Déat is young – just over forty – one of the best speakers in

H1645-0169

France, incessantly industrious, and obviously a coming man.

Monsieur le Président

Until 1939, unless death or revolution intervenes, the President of France will be that amiable and harmless old gentleman Albert Lebrun. Like all French presidents, he is above all *safe*: no brilliance, no eccentricity, is tolerated in the Élysée. He is supposed to have a great capacity for tears; cartoonists usually depict him in a puddle. When, once, a bicyclist knocked him over, he presented the luckless miscreant with 500 francs. He is known as 'pouh-pouh', because shortly after he entered the Élysée, he posed for the talkies, with wife, children, and grandchildren in considerable number. A small grandchild started to cry; the benevolent Lebrun dandled him on his knee, forgetting the sound camera, to the tune of 'Pouh-pouh-pouh'. And the unfortunate syllables resounded throughout France.

H1645-0170

H1645-0171

CHAPTER XI

FASCISM IN FRANCE?

'Democracy which cannot defend itself has no right to exist.'
– Dr. Emil Franke.

The inner history of the Stavisky case is briefly this. He was a petty gangster who knew important people and killed himself – or was murdered – when his little fraudulent empire collapsed. The case rocked parliamentarism in France, which was not illogical. Of the six hundred and ten French deputies and three hundred and five senators, not more than ten or twelve ever knew Stavisky or had anything to do with him, and his total defalcations amounted only to about 40,000,000 francs; but the implications of the affair reached the very heart of French political life.

In France there are thousands of small-scale crooks who know people who know people who know ministers. They wait in reception-rooms and filch official letter-paper. Lawyers in France, as in America, go to the courts and say that their clients are 'sick', and the cases are postponed. The French Government itself may not be corrupt, but negligence, *piston* ('pull') and political demoralisation are rife in the outer corridors. Stavisky was not even a good crook. But he had 'pull'. This was not corruption; it was ordinary parliamentary 'manners'. When the story broke, Chautemps tried to cover up, which made it look much worse than it was. And the Right opposition, the *Action Française*, the Fascist leagues, the Comité des Forges, the oligarchy, seized on it and exploited it as a perfectly priceless opportunity to wreck the 'Freemasons', the radicals, the Leftists, the government.

Serge Alexandre (Sacha) Stavisky, was born in Kiev, Russia, in 1886. His family seems to have been of decent *petit bourgeoise* Jewish stock; his aged father, overcome with shame when Sacha's first defalcation was discovered, killed himself.

H1645-0172

. . . Stavisky's career in the underworld of Paris was quite typical. He was a pimp, a gigolo, a cocaine pedlar, a petty forger, a confidence man, finally a swindler of some proportion. He was successful, bought a theatre, gambled at Deauville, financed a newspaper. . . . He graduated, as Alexander Werth put it, from the cap-and-muffler to the top-hat underworld.

In 1926 he was arrested for the first and only time, on complaint of two brokers who asserted he had swindled them out of £70,000. He was soon 'provisionally' released, and he never saw the inside of a jail again; his trial was postponed by the Paris Parquet (public prosecutor) no fewer than nineteen times. The head of the Parquet, M. Pressard, was Chautemps's brother-in-law. The Paris police, who also 'knew' Stavisky, 'dealt' with his case forty-five times – without rearresting him.

The years of 'provisional freedom' were the great years of Sacha Stavisky. He controlled two daily papers (both miserable rags, it is true), the *Volonté* on the Left, the *Rampart* on the Right. One of his lawyers, Renoult, was an ex-minister of justice. He knew countless public officials, and corrupted dozens of minor functionaries – pitiable creatures on minuscule salaries, who were dazzled by Stavisky's glory and joined his payroll; their careers were ruined afterwards, and at least two committed suicide. He had his own bodyguard, led by the remarkable Jo-le-Terreur. His friend Dubarry – a *soi-disant* journalist who knew everyone in France, including Tardieu[1] – introduced him to Chiappe, the chief of police. Above all, a complicated fellow, he was employed as a sort of stool-pigeon by the Sûreté Générale, the national police force – distinct from the Paris prefecture – of the ministry of the interior.

In 1933 Stavisky was frustrated in two coups, despite his eminence. So he contrived a new scheme, the flotation of fraudulent bonds issued presumably by the municipal pawnshop

[1] 'Dubarry got the Sûreté Générale to restore Stavisky's gambling licence; and when an inspector of the Sûreté was going to arrest an illegal bookie at the races one day, Dubarry pounced on him and said: "Don't you dare do that, or I'll report you to André." "André" – so Inspector Colombani said telling the story to the committee of inquiry – "*André, c'était M. Tardieu.*" ' *New Statesman*, April 14, 1935.

of Bayonne. Minister Dalimier in the Chautemps cabinet signed a letter recommending these bonds. Someone got suspicious. About Christmas 1933 the truth began to leak out. Secrecy pent up in a hundred mouths for seven years burst forth in an angry scandalous torrent. Stavisky's connection with the bonds became known, and then his police record. He fled – having received a false passport from the police. He rested in Chamonix for a fortnight, hoping the storm would pass. Instead it blew to tornado violence. On January 8, 1934, he knew that he was ruined, and the official story is that he shot himself. But the allegation that he was murdered was made almost everywhere in France.

The scandal was perfectly tremendous. It hissed and boiled during all of January, and came to climax in the bloodshed of February 6. The affair had the wildest ramifications. Daladier fired Chiappe; Thomé, the chief of the secret police, was kicked upstairs to become, of all things, director of the Comédie Française; the Right shrieked that Daladier did this to get rid of the former director, Emile Fabre, because he had put on Shakespeare's *Coriolanus*, which the Left had denounced as an 'authoritarian' play! The *Action Française* whooped and howled that the Sûreté and the Freemasons had murdered Stavisky to save their necks. Right deputies screamed execration on the government, for allegedly having accepted contributions by Stavisky to the party funds. The Fascist bands began to gather on the streets.

Crime Pressionelle

Some weeks later occurred the Prince affair. It is a shame to have to foreshorten drastically this perfect Arsène Lupin-Gaboriau-Lecocq case. Dr. Prince, a magistrate in the Parquet, was drawing up a report on the Stavisky case. A telephone-call, the origin of which is to this day unknown, decoyed him to Dijon, on the pretext that his wife's mother was ill. The next day his body was discovered, badly mangled, on the Paris-Dijon railway track. The official story was that Prince had been guilty of negligence in the Stavisky business, and had committed suicide in remorse. To accept this theory, as Janet Flanner wrote, meant that 'the judge sent himself a bogus message, went to Dijon, anaesthetised himself in a

H1645-0173

H1645-0174

strange automobile, and while unconscious tied himself on a lonely railway line and allowed a train to run over him.' So it seemed at first. Later researches proved fairly conclusively – incredible as it may seem – that Prince *was* a suicide: because of some connection with the Stavisky case. The Prince affair let loose new storms of denunciation and scandal. The *Action Française* insisted grimly that the Sûreté Générale murdered Prince to shut him up.

February Sixth

But let us turn back to the tragic events of February 6. The story of the riots may be briefly told. A riot in France is one of the most remarkable things in the world. The frenzied combatants maintain perfect discipline. Seventeen people were barbarously killed, and several thousand injured, but there was no fighting at all between about seven-thirty p.m. and nine, when everyone took time for dinner. When it started, no one thought of revolution; it was just a nice big riot. Communists, royalists, Fascists, socialists, fought shoulder to shoulder under both red flag and tricolour against the police and *Garde Mobile*. The fighting stopped on the stroke of twelve, because the Paris Métro stops running at twelve-thirty, and no one wanted to walk all the way home. Bloody, bandaged, fighters and police jostled their way into the trains together. Promptly at seven-thirty next morning the fighting started again.

All during January the Right gangs had been making demonstrations. Chautemps had been forced out of office on January 27, and Daladier succeeded him. Daladier announced that his government would be '*vite* and *fort*'; he genuinely feared a Fascist coup. The forces of Left and Right were nearly at the contact point. Daladier thought that Chiappe was deliberately encouraging the demonstrators to make trouble and might even deliver the city to Right insurrectionaries; certainly the police, all through January, treated the demonstrators very leniently, permitting them each time almost – not quite – to reach the chamber.

Daladier, spurred by Frot, determined to get rid of Chiappe. The circumstances were remarkable. He made the fatal error of not kicking him straight out, but offering him, as a sop to

his wounded pride, the governorship of Morocco. Chiappe refused. Each man told a different story of the circumstances at the parliamentary inquiry. Chiappe, dismissed, said into the telephone – it was all done over the telephone – 'All right, I will be on the street to-night.' His words, he claimed, were '*à la rue*' – out on the street, jobless. Daladier says that he said '*dans la rue*,' which means 'on the street, a rioter'. So the prime minister set about to defend himself from what he thought was impending revolution. (The *Canard Enchaîné*, the wittiest of French papers, has an alternative version: Chiappe really said '*chez Larue*,' a famous restaurant in Paris. cf. Werth, p. 132.) This was on February 3.

Daladier's first appearance in the chamber as prime minister was set for February 6. 'The thought that he would certainly get a majority maddened the reactionaries.' The various street groups, Camelots du Roi, Jeunesses Patriotes, Solidarité Française, the Croix de Feu, and, more pacific but most important of all, the National Union of Ex-Service men, prepared demonstrations. Daladier was in a bad position, because Chiappe had the confidence of a large part of the Paris police, who were consequently listless. He had to call in the tough countrymen of the Garde Mobile, a very hard-boiled body.

Daladier should never have allowed the thirty thousand demonstrators to get into the Place de la Concorde that night. He and Frot bungled the preliminary arrangements badly. They might have forbidden the demonstrations, but, not trusting the police, they didn't dare do so. It was unwise in the first place to use the Garde Mobile; the decision being taken, many more Garde Mobile should have been on hand, not just a few. No one will agree as to who fired the first shots. Once shooting began, the crowd was uncontrollable – crazy enough to storm the chamber and massacre every deputy inside. So seventeen Frenchmen, including war veterans who had fought for France, died.

The Would-Be Hitler

French Fascist No. 1, the chief potential French March-on-Romer, is Lieut.-Col. Casimir de la Rocque, Président-General of the Croix de Feu, the Voluntaires Nationaux, and

H1645-0175

H1645-0176

the Fils de Croix de Feu. He was born in 1885, of a distinguished military family; his father, a count, was a general of artillery – in the Auvergne.

De la Rocque is spare, handsome, with thinning hair, a good organiser; not a demogogue; a man of considerable intelligence but little warmth or magnetism; plenty of poise and courage; no charm. His name is against him, because the French think that 'Casimir' is a comical name; it is as if an aspirant for high office in Britain or America were named Alphonse – or Casimir.

De la Rocque had an interesting military career; he left St. Cyr with high honours, and began active service in 1907 in Morocco, spending nine years in North Africa as one of the brightest lads around the late, great Marshal Lyautey. He learned to speak Arabic almost perfectly and he was several times wounded and decorated. He was on Foch's staff from 1921 to 1923, when he went to Poland with Weygand. In 1925 he returned to Morocco in the war against Abdel Krim, and became head of the celebrated '*deuxième bureau*' – military secret service. In 1928 he retired from the army to organise the Croix de Feu.

His *milieu* is upper middle class, Roman Catholic, illiberal. His brother, Count Pierre de la Rocque, is aide-de-camp to the Comte de Paris, who is heir to the Duc de Guise, the pretender to the French throne. But Pierre and Casimir are not on cordial terms; Casimir, who pretends that he is 'non-political' and who dissociates himself with most political groups, doesn't want overt royalist support.

He talks often of his 'mystique', which is a combination of patriotic fervour, military virtues, and churchly faith. Though he has a very considerable force behind him, he denies ambitions to be dictator; he says he wants 'order' in France, nothing more. He has never run a candidate in an election, but his followers perpetually threaten a *coup d'état*. He will, he says, support any 'useful' government, attack any 'dangerous' government. But he cannot be pinned down to defining exactly what he considers dangerous or useful. 'He is not Christ, he is merely John the Baptist,' one of his followers said – not explaining exactly what he meant – or who Christ was to be. His social programme is a sort of upper-class, Lady

Bountiful charity-paternalism; his organisation runs soup kitchens in poor neighbourhoods, builds kindergartens and sanatoria.

De la Rocque seems a rather pallid Fascist; people, however, fear him. He founded a private army like Hitler, but on a more restricted scale; at first, membership was confined to front-line veterans who had won decorations under fire. Its aim was – vaguely – 'to restore the "mystique" of sacrifice for the fatherland, consecrate itself to duty to France.' His followers in the beginning were strongly Leftist, and part of the unofficial programme was to wipe out the regents of the Banque de France; but De la Rocque himself is allied to big industry. François de Wendel is believed to hold card of membership No. 13 in the group. And De Wendel and other industrialists, so it is said, had ambitions to be the Thyssens of the movement.

Like Hitler, De la Rocque has tended to shed his socialist supporters. These wanted what they called 'socialism for the middle classes', an obvious imitation of Nazi dislike of the proletariat, combined with some rudimentary instinct for socialism. De la Rocque's leading supporter, Bertrand de Maud'huy, son of a general who commanded the Blue Devils in the War, left him because he wanted more socialism in the movement, just as Otto Strasser left Hitler.

De la Rocque not only has disappointed his Left followers; those on the Right think that he is too slow, too cautious. In April 1935, two or three of his men invaded and sacked the headquarters of the socialist federation on the Rue Feydeau in Paris, searching for arms; they found none. De la Rocque, embarrassed, hesitated and hedged, and finally excommunicated the bold burglars.

Three times he has had a chance to seize power; each time he muffed it. On February 6 his cohorts could easily have captured the chamber. But he held his men back. 'France wasn't ready,' he explained. Perhaps, like Hitler, he hopes to gain power by legal means. Like Hitler in 1932, he has reached the stage of one consultation with the head of government – after the resignation of Doumergue – but he was not asked to form a cabinet. He speaks incessantly about the wickedness of the French parliamentary system. 'We (the

H1645-0177

H1645-0178

army) saved France once: we can save it again;' this seems to be his programme.

His organisation comprises three hundred thousand men, and is growing at the rate of about two hundred candidates a day. All must be ex-service men or sons of ex-service men. The inner discipline is strict, and methods of organisation secret. De la Rocque insists on complete application of the Leader Principle, much as this would seem to affront French individualist character. 'Croix de Feu' does not, as commonly thought, mean Fiery Cross in the Ku-Klux-Klan sense of fiery cross; 'Croix' signifies decoration for war service, the Croix de Guerre, and 'Feu' means the fire of the front-line trenches.

De la Rocque's men are believed to be armed; moreover they have stolen a march on Hitler – at the analogous stage of growth of the SA – in that they have automobiles and lorries for transport, and seventy-three aeroplanes. The planes have taken part in their mass demonstrations in Algeria, but not in France. De la Rocque, at the triple demonstration on July 14, 1935 (Fascists, communist-socialists, and government all marched competitively on the same day), wanted to use his planes; Laval told him that if he did, the ministry of aviation would shoot them down. Yet there are whispers of a 'deal' between the two.[1]

The Croix de Feu does not, these days, march much in Paris; but it is given to a great number of sudden mass mobilisations with motor transport, at night in the environs of Paris. De la Rocque, a gallic pseudo-Hitler, talks of 'bloody revolution' to replace the 'mortal anarchy' of the chamber. But he announces no concrete programme. He waits. Perhaps he has waited overmuch. 'Men of destiny should not stand too long outside the door.'

Other Flowers of Fascism

The Croix de Feu, the most 'respectable' of the lot, overshadowed the other street groups, because the French, a respectable people, like their Fascism to be as mannerly as possible. (Incidentally, none of these organisations will admit to being 'Fascist'.) The only group which is openly pro-Hitler

[1] See below, Abyssinian chapter.

– commonly it is said to be subsidised by the Germans – is that of the 'Francistes'; they are small fry.

The Jeunesses Patriotes, considerably backed by heavy industry, are led by a deputy Pierre Taittinger. They are nationalist, anti-communist, and on the extreme Right. The organisation claims two hundred and forty thousand men, and among the leaders are some personages of consequence, like Deputy Ybarnégary. Marshal Lyautey was an honorary member; General Weygand is said to be.

The Solidarité Française was founded by Coty, the Corsican perfume manufacturer. It is more to the Right than the Croix de Feu, not so Right as the Jeunesses Patriotes. Coty was never a member of the financial oligarchy, and thus the Solidarité affects to despise the Banque. It is supposed to number one hundred and eighty thousand men.

The Union Nationale des Combattants, with nine hundred thousand adherents, is less inclined to street violence than the others; it is the Right offshoot of the far bigger and more important organisation the Federation des Anciens Combattants, with four million members, which is the *Left* veterans' association.

The royalists – were there enough space – should have a section to themselves. Their newspaper is, of course, the *Action Française*; their street outfit is the Camelots du Roi, organised in slugger squads, equipped with knuckle-dusters, and amplified – when recruiting goes badly – by unemployed Arab carpet-salesmen of the kind unfortunately known to all *habitués* of the Café du Dôme. The leaders are the sculptor Real del Sarte, the organiser Maurice Pujo, and the pamphleteers Charles Maurras and Léon Daudet. The royalists – supported largely by wealthy dowagers in the 'Association of royalist ladies' – are less important than the fantastic noise they make. The *Action Française* makes France a marvellously amusing country, journalistically; but its influence does not go much beyond that. The royal family itself has repudiated it.

The street groups have been unable to form a United Fascist Front. But – as we know – the Left, much to the annoyance of the Right, have, on the contrary, very successfully united in a common front against Fascism. In the middle, the

H1645-0179

government at the end of 1935 was faced with a problem not less serious for being familiar to democracies – whether or not a democratic cabinet was entitled to employ undemocratic means in order to suppress the Fascist leagues which would not hesitate to destroy democracy if they could.

Chiappe

The most dangerous man in France is probably not Weygand or De la Rocque, but little white-gloved Jean Chiappe, the ex-chief of police.

Chiappe (pronounced Kee-ahp) is, like Napoleon and François Coty, a Corsican. He got his start, strangely, through a radical cabinet; now he is on the extreme Right. His step-son-in-law, Horace de Carbuccia, another Corsican, is owner of a newspaper, *Gringoire*, violently reactionary. One of Chiappe's friends is Zographos, the manager of the Greek syndicate which specialises in gambling at Deauville, Biarritz, and Monte Carlo. Chiappe was very popular with his police during his term of office.

Bald, swarthy, squat, athletic – he is a notable duellist – Chiappe is a remarkably melodramatic character. A creature of cabals and vendettas, he seems to represent the romance of the Corsican bush in Paris. He looks like a vaudeville villain; a confidence man; a jolly but undersized professor of medicine; an animal trainer; a hirsute attendant at a Turkish bath. He is socially ambitious and prominent.

Chiappe's come-back in politics since his temporary eclipse after February 6 has been startling. He was, first of all, elected to the post of municipal councillor – alderman – in the Paris district of St. Germain des Près, part of the fashionable Faubourg St. Germain. Then he became president of the *conseil municipal* of Paris – mayor. He is expected to stand for senator in some wealthy constituency next spring. If subsequently he should get ministerial post in a Right cabinet, fur – the fur of MM. Daladier, Frot and all the socialists and communists – will fly. For the white-gloved Corsican is a notorious Red-hunter.

Chiappe had to admit to having 'met' Stavisky, the indirect

H1645-0180

but effective author of his downfall. But that he had anything to 'do' with him he denies.

Farmer Fascist

Henri Dorgères, whose real name is Henri d'Halluin, a new and remarkable phenomenon in French politics, is a peasant leader who has organised a militant agrarian movement, a modern Jacquerie, which is sweeping the countryside as the 'Front Paysan'. He is not in the chamber yet, though he missed succeeding to Chautemps's seat by only a few hundred votes. Instead of the chamber, he was, at the end of 1935, likely to go to jail – because he had just been sentenced to eight months imprisonment for seditious propaganda.

Dorgères, one of the best natural orators in France, is, according to his enemies, a fake; he is no true son of the soil, no peasant, but an aristocrat in disguise, the Viscomte d'Halluin. These stories are untrue. His name is Halluin, but he is no fake. His father was a cattle merchant in Lille. His policy is drastically counter-revolutionary: clean up the chamber of deputies by 'shooting the whole damned lot', 'liberate' the farmers, build a peasant-corporative state.

Janet Flanner has described him thus: 'An odd-looking butcher's boy with a small, beautiful, aristocratic face; neat, intense manual gestures; and a sensitive, sensible eloquence that recently brought eight thousand wheat- and sugar-beet-farmers through miles of mud to hear him speak in the town's Grain Hall.'

Warriors of the Left

The Socialist-Communist United Front, organised during 1934 and 1935, was a significant and in fact revolutionary step, marking the first effective creation of such a bloc in Europe. At first it seemed odd that socialists, to save democracy, should join forces with communists, pledged to eliminate democracy. But the events of February 6, interpreted by both socialists and communists as an attempt at Fascist revolution, made action necessary. The United Front now includes virtual merger of the two great French trade unions, long historical antagonists, the C.G.T. (Conféderation Générale du Travail), the socialist union, and the newer C.G.T.U. (Conféderation Générale du

H1645-0181

Travail Unitaire), the union of the communists. And it includes a sort of joint general staff, the C.U.A.A. – Committee of United Anti-Fascist Action.

Daladier, Frot, Cot, and other Fusiliers of February 6, who 'saved' the republic on that bloody day, joined the United Front in July 1935, carrying with them the Left wing of the radical party, greatly to the discomfiture of M. Herriot. Daladier favours as wide a Left coalition as he can get.

The United Front derived, in the first instance, not from Chiappe or the *Action Française*, but from Joseph Stalin. His policy of toning down world revolution permitted communists outside Russia, if they had such a romantic wish, to become 'respectable'. When Laval visited him in the spring of 1935, he announced that the comrades in France – I shall go into this in detail in the Russian chapter below – should call off the revolution, unite with enemies of Fascism, and support the French Government and army as long as necessary, in opposition to Fascist forces.

A subsidiary father of the United Front was a remarkable young political idealist, Gaston Bergery, who began his career as a radical, turned independent, and finally gave up a comfortable seat in the chamber in protest at the formation and conduct of Doumergue's national government. He was the only deputy to do so. He fought a gallant by-election at his constituency, Mantes, and was beaten after a tremendous fight by only a few hundred out of sixteen thousand odd votes.

Bergery is an acute and sophisticated young man, married to an American girl, Bettina Shaw Jones, an assistant at Schiaparelli's. She fought the election at his side, complete with dashing white toque – and pet marmoset! Mantes is an industrial, proletarian constituency, and opinion is divided whether the 'wheat trust', the instrument of Bergery's Right opponents, beat him – or his wife's monkey.

Bergery, before the United Front between the communists and socialists, founded a 'movement' – not an official party – of his own, called at first the Front Commun, then the Front Social, finally the Front Populaire. It embodied the identical aims as the United Front – coalescence of all Left forces in a fight to the last trench against Fascism and the military

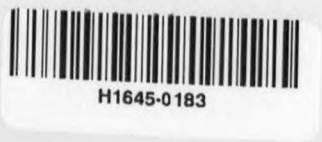
H1645-0182

leagues. This young man, not in the least doctrinaire, an exciting combination of idealist and practical politician, had the idea; the others worked it out.

As a result, Bergery came to be called the 'Lenin of France', the 'Nero of the French Republic' and a 'Marat and Robespierre' in one. Actually, he is neither a communist nor even a socialist. His movement, he says, is merely 'anti-capitalist'. He wants a merger of all the farmers, peasants, workmen, white-collar *bourgeoisie*, middle-men, who form ninety-five per cent of the population of France, against the five per cent of capitalists who exploit them. A cultivated aristocrat, he is no proletarian. He believes the role of the proletariat to be much exaggerated in the mechanics of socialism. And in France, he points out, only seven million out of forty-two million people are workers in the Marxist sense of the term.

What the Left in France needs is a leader. Bergery is not quite the man. As an intellectual, he is too limited, too vulnerable. Daladier is almost impossible, and likewise Blum. Thorez and Cachin, the communists, won't go down with anybody except communists. In France the usual situation of a man looking for a job is reversed. There is a job looking for a Man.

In November 1935, it was as impossible to say whether or not a Fascist coup would come in France as it would be to name, say, the republican candidate for the presidency in America in 1940. But the creation of the Front Populaire was an effective block to Fascism. It indicated that French democracy was organising to protect itself, and that Fascism can come to France only at the risk of civil war.


H1645-0183

CHAPTER XII

INTERLUDE IN SPAIN

SLIPPING down a Madrid side-street on a dark night in December 1930, was an odd-looking figure. Following him, you would have noted his hurried, furtive walk, his bulky body squeezing round corners. Closer, you would have seen an interesting face – big jowls, froglike eyes, a complexion like green dough. Also you would have seen a beard, which looked a little strange. It didn't quite seem to fit the face. And with reason. It was false. The heavy, hurrying, bearded gentleman, if you questioned him, would have had to admit being Don Manuel Azaña, an obscure civil servant and literary man. And no one would have believed it if you had said that in two years Don Manuel Azaña was to be prime minister of Spain.

That same evening another gentleman in a heavy motor-car happened to pass down another Madrid side-street. This second gentleman was tall, limber, with heavy pouches under his eyes and a queerly projecting lower lip. He was of distinguished lineage, this gentleman. Four or five hundred years of Habsburg and Bourbon ancestry had turned his blood quite blue. He was, in fact, the King. He stopped his car before a large crowd in front of a red-brick building. The crowd was laughing and shouting. 'Why are there so many people here,' demanded Alfonso, 'around the jail?'

That same evening, inside the jail, a very curious meeting was taking place. It was a cabinet meeting. The members were, in a real sense, ministers without portfolio. They had not been charged by the King to form a government. Quite the contrary. They were jailbirds – revolutionaries under arrest. But they were optimistic folk and they felt that it was only a question of time before they would be out of prison and in power. Why wait? They set up their government then and there – in jail.

Don Manuel Azaña continued his hurried, furtive way until

H1645-0184

he reached the house of a Mexican friend, Señor Martin Luis Guzman. Señor Guzman was a journalist, one of the members of the Madrid corps of foreign correspondents, the representative, in fact, of '*La Prensa*, San Antonio, Texas, Mexico.' Thus he had equal standing with correspondents of the London *Times*, the *Berliner Tageblatt*, the *New York Times*, and thus the police were not likely to search his house. During these weeks Don Manuel Azaña found it convenient to be living there.

King Alfonso likewise continued his way across Madrid and, stiffly saluted by the regal guard, reached his palace. Walking through interminable marble caverns and up grotesquely monstrous staircases, he came to his room, a small, whitewashed bedroom in which were a telephone, a couple of chairs, and an eight-pound brass bed. He communicated with various secretaries. Henceforth visiting hours at the jail for those ridiculous but confounded revolutionaries were to be curtailed. Alcalá Zamora, the chief of the convicts, was said to have received seventeen hundred visitors the day before! All entered on the pretext that they were 'relatives'. Such nonsense was to be stopped, said the King.

But it was not stopped. Seventeen hundred people came to Zamora, but seventeen thousand might have come. And they did, metaphorically, when a few months later, the jailbirds were freed after a perfunctory trial. Don Manuel Azaña, a sort of contact man who had stayed outside, now joined the deliberations of his convict colleagues. Revolutionary agitation began in earnest. The King, badly advised by incompetent and temporising officials, was flustered into calling municipal elections, the first elections that Spain had had in many years. Alfonso was paying the penalty of the years during which all expression of public opinion had been throttled by Primo de Rivera, his dictator. The elections went overwhelmingly republican.

The revolutionary committee, astounded at the extent of its own victory, met, of all places, at the house of a famous medical specialist, a research worker in ductless glands, Dr. Gregorio Marañon. Dr. Marañon had been one of the King's own medical advisers. The veteran Count Romanones, the politician closest to Alfonso and the richest landowner in

H1645-0185

Spain, was summoned and told that the King must go. Alfonso went. A monarchy five centuries old fell, and not a shot was fired. The dynasty of Spain disappeared into the dust of history, like an olive dropping off a tree.

Almost the most interesting thing in Spain to-day is a calendar. It lies carefully preserved on a small desk in Alfonso's study, open to the week of April 13, 1931. There are blank spaces for engagements. But the calendar was empty of any scribbling. Alfonso had no dates that week. All that happened was that he got kicked out of Spain.

Why did he go without a struggle, so meekly? First, to avoid bloodshed. Second, to protect the person of the Queen. Third, because two of his sons were victims of haemophilia, the terrible 'bleeding sickness' common to royalty, so that abdication to a healthy heir was difficult. Alfonso left for Cartagena by motor-car at night, swooping behind the funnels of the headlights across the peninsula of Spain. The Queen went to Paris by train next morning. The night before she and the children sat up all night. They kept all the lights on. Their pet canaries twittered the night through, frightened by the dancing glare of the hundreds of blazing, quivering candelabra. Outside, a mob watched.

Zamora organised a provisional government, and about one post there was no dispute. Don Manuel Azaña had not been in jail when the portfolios were passed round. He did not need to be. The most important job in Spain was waiting for him, the ministry of war. He took it. Squatting like a huge green frog, he warmed the blue ministerial bench in the Cortes parliament from July to October, and scarcely said a word. He spoke on his military estimates, but on little else. Instead he listened. A patient man, this Manuel Azaña. Twenty years before he had amused himself by an odd hobby – study of army organisation and military tactics. What an odd occupation for a literary-minded civil servant, people thought. One of his friends asked him once, 'Why do you bother over these dull army books?' 'Because,' Azaña answered, 'in twenty years I am going to be minister of war.'

In October 1931, the Zamora government was splintered by a serious crisis. Zamora, a Roman Catholic, hotly objected to clauses in the constitution dissolving the Jesuit order. He

H1645-0186

flashed into resignation. The country, thus, had no head of government. Things looked very unpleasant. Azaña heaved himself out of his corner on the blue bench, and squeezed his way into the lobbies. 'I will make a government,' he announced. He made one in thirteen minutes. Zamora was elevated to a post of much honour and little power, the Presidency of the Republic. Azaña became prime minister. Zamora, with a smooth yellow elliptical face, creased in the middle by a shallow nose, looks remarkably like a tortoise. Azaña, the frog, jumped on his back. And for two years thereafter he ran Spain.

Idealists on the Loose

The quality of the Azaña government, which gave hope to liberals the world over, was a bit peculiar. Few of its members had experience either of practical politics or the routine of administration. Most of them were intellectuals – professors, academicians, or literary men. The spiritual fathers of the republic were not politicians or army generals, but physicians like Dr. Marañon, philosophers like Miguel de Unamuno, essayists like Ortega y Gasset. Arms and cash make most revolutions. The revolution in Spain was founded on the A.B.C.'s.

You can judge a country pretty well by its ambassadors. Those of the new Spain were a fantastic lot. Suppose President Roosevelt should name H. L. Mencken, Upton Sinclair, and Sinclair Lewis to ambassadorial posts in London, Paris, and Berlin. Or suppose the British Government should give its best embassies to H. G. Wells, Aldous Huxley, and Noel Coward. Well, look at the Spaniards. To Geneva went Salvador de Madariaga, a professor and ex-newspaper man. To London went a distinguished novelist, Ramón Pérez de Ayala. The Germans got a Left-wing socialist and intellectual, Luis Araquistáin. Julio Alvarez del Vajo, who was *Manchester Guardian* correspondent in Madrid until Primo's dictatorship, went to Mexico. To Rome went Gabriel Alamor, a poet. To Chile went Ricardo Baeza, the translator of H. G. Wells's *Outline of History*.

Legitimately represented in the New Spain were, of course, some delegates of labour. For instance, Don Francisco Largo Caballero, the leading socialist member of the cabinet, was a

H1645-0187

house painter by trade. They told plenty of stories about him. In the early days of the republic he attended an imposing formal dinner. 'Ah, Señor Largo Caballero, I'll venture you have never seen the inside of a house like this before!' gushed his hostess. 'Madame,' bowed Caballero, 'I know this house as I do the palm of my hand. Look up at your ceiling. Five years ago I painted it.'

A well-known old guard politician, Melquiades Alvarez, found himself accosted in the Cortes. 'Hullo,' said a new deputy, 'welcome to parliament. You don't remember me? I'm the porter who carried your bags at Seville two years ago.' One deputy who was a janitor in an apartment building got an important government post. Another, at the age of thirty-three finally had leisure to go to – school.

This illustrated an important point, the lack of Men. The government had to contend very seriously with this difficulty. There were not enough men to go around. The republic, starting from scratch, with only a handful of faithful adherents, found itself sabotaged secretly in the army, the foreign office, the civil service. The old gang had to be cleared out. But many thousands remained.

The new government wrote down the programme of republican Spain in black and white. The first thing it did was compose a constitution. This was no novelty; there have been attempts to constitutionalise Spain for well over a century. It was a mistake: the youthful republic paid far too much attention to theory and wasted far too much energy in determining its aspirations – in writing – without attempting to put the aspirations into concrete effect.

Even so, the new constitution was a remarkable document. It exuded the pure cool aroma of Jean Jacques Rousseau and Thomas Jefferson. It disestablished religion and separated church and state; it declared Spain 'a worker's republic of all classes' and promised workers participation in the 'administration, direction, and benefits' of all enterprises. It abolished illegitimacy, made free primary education compulsory, and – in Spain! – gave women the vote. It permitted divorce on mutual consent or on just cause after one year of marriage. It was the first constitution of any national state to concede authority to the League of Nations; Spain was, for instance,

H1645-0188

forbidden to declare war except under conditions authorised by the League covenant.

The underlying philosophy of the new state was expressed with passionate earnestness by José Ortega y Gasset:

> 'The political doctrine which has represented the loftiest endeavour toward common life is liberal democracy. It carries to the extreme the determination to have consideration for one's neighbour. Liberalism is that principle of political rights, according to which the public authority, in spite of being all-powerful, limits itself and attempts, even at its own expense, to leave room in the State over which it rules for those to live in who neither feel nor think as it does, that is to say as do the stronger, the majority. Liberalism – it is well to recall this to-day – is the supreme form of generosity; it is the right which the majority concedes to minorities and hence it is the noblest cry that has ever resounded on this planet.'
>
> – *Revolt of the Masses*, p. 83.

And of course what happened was that the new constitution didn't work. The government was so concerned with fine phrases that it neglected concrete policy. Its enemies grew in strength because Azaña, a profound liberal, who believed in free speech even for those who would destroy free speech, was presently outmanœuvred, outvoted, and overthrown in the Cortes. Reaction beat him – because, like the Germany of Weimar, he neglected to defend himself against his enemies. He thought he could profoundly change the organisation of society without a revolution. He was wrong.

The Reaction

The republic knew that the monarchy had for many generations been supported by three pillars, those of nobility, army, and church. It moved against each, but not drastically enough. It went just far enough to provoke a fury of reaction. The lesson is that in a country like Spain, as in Russia, no revolution can succeed till the privileges of the propertied classes are not curtailed, but extirpated; that revolution is impossible without razing to the ground the entire structure of feudal society.

The republic sought to emasculate the nobility – by taking its pretty titles away. These mellifluous titles – 'Duchess of the Beautiful Pine-Trees', 'Marquis of the Calm Lagoon' –

H1645-0189

disappeared; but not the men holding them. The Duke of Alba, from twenty-six lines of fine type in the old official gazette, was reduced to plain Señor; but the Duke of Alba himself was not eliminated. A vast land reform scheme was worked out – in theory. All the land of all the grandees of Spain was to be expropriated without compensation – on paper.

As to the church, Azaña outlawed it without destroying it, he deprived it of exactly enough power and privilege to make it his relentless enemy for life. Nothing more drastic was known to Spanish history than Azaña's Religious Orders bill of June 1933. It separated church and state; nationalised all church property, valued at £100,000,000; dissolved the Jesuit order and severely restricted the activity of other orders; and forbade the clergy to work at gainful occupations or teach. But within two years, like a black, solid, and powerful mushroom, the church had protruded again into a dominant position in Spanish life.

Several positive accomplishments remain, however, to Azaña's credit. The labours of the man were prodigious; his failure, in the large, should not be sniggered at. First, he pulled Spain toward daylight by a tremendously ambitious educational programme. The country is forty-five per cent illiterate, the highest percentage of illiteracy in Western Europe. Azaña's education minister, Fernando de Los Rios, spread schools – ten thousand of them – through the land with mighty fingers. Second, Azaña thoroughly reformed the army by pensioning off almost ten thousand officers – men who for a generation had made Spain the prey of predatory impulses. Third, he more or less solved the Catalan question, which had been a bugaboo to Spanish politics for five hundred years.

The thing that most directly led to Azaña's downfall was the Casas Viejas affair. In this Moorish village near Cadiz the local cacique (boss) was a picturesque old radical Seis Dedos (Six Fingers) so-called because he had six fingers on one hand. A village brawl, whipped by winds of strife and strikes, became a sort of civil war. The ominous Civil Guard, the national constabulary of Spain, and the chief force of what was euphemistically called law and order in the Republic, invaded the town, shot it up. Seis Dedos and seven members of his family or close friends were burned to death in their cottage, fourteen

H1645-0190

other villagers summarily executed. No one could say that Azaña, in far away Madrid – the quintessence of liberal horror of bloodshed – was responsible; but he held the bag. And the scandal of the resultant investigation forced him from office.

Since the autumn of 1933 reaction has ruled Spain. A turncoat politician, Alejandro Lerroux, was its titular leader; its activating force was a blindly doctrinaire young Catholic, Gil Robles. They jockeyed for position in various coalitions, with the nobility, the bankers, and above all the church behind them. First Lerroux took office, ostensibly a republican still, a Protestant and a Freemason, but anxious to remove the anti-Catholic colour of the revolution. Then he was compelled to admit into his government representatives of the C.E.D.A. (Federation of Autonomous Parties of the Right), led by Gil Robles.

Lerroux, inveterately ambitious, had left Azaña's cabinet because he would not sit in the cabinet with socialists. He intrigued against Azaña almost from the beginning, but always in the guise of an old and 'true' republican. His political instinct was sound. Paying lip-service to the revolution he courted the old Spain. His siren song was 'no radicalism' (though he was head of the 'radical' party!). Agrarian reform? Of course, but in a generation. The lay state? Of course, but with the greatest respect for Catholic tradition and the priestly conscience. Catalan autonomy? Of course – but not as radically as Azaña envisaged it. Army reform? Of course – but only to a limited degree. His 'Mongols' – invaders of the early moral frontiers of the republic – were a competent gang of self-seekers, their fingers or ears in every part of the political machine.

The counter-revolution of Lerroux and Gil Robles took place only at the cost of civil war. They spent much more blood upsetting the republic than did Azaña and his men installing it. Azaña indeed – excepting Casas Viejas – never spilt a drop of blood. But in the fighting of October 1934, almost 1,400 men were slain, including 1,051 civilians; about 3,000 were wounded, including 2,051 civilians; well over a 1,000 buildings were destroyed. The horrors of the 'revolt' were smothered in the world news by the assassination at the same time of King Alexander of Jugoslavia and French Foreign

H1645-0191

Minister Barthou at Marseilles; it was a tragically important event, which never got the attention it deserved.

Spain was – and is – very pink. The poverty-blanched landless peasantry of Andalusia and Extramadura, the industrial proletariat of the Basque coast and Catalonia, are, and have been since the days of Bakhunin, a fertile field for radicalism. Under Azaña a great irrigation of Leftist thought was permitted and indeed encouraged. In any bookshop in Spain in those days you could buy the red-backed volumes of the 'Carlos Marx' library. *Das Kapital* was serialised in popular illustrated pamphlets like the Wells History in western countries. Once in the Puerta del Sol, in two minutes, I bought the following freely available periodicals:

La Batalla, organ of the Communist Iberian Federation.
Solidaridad Obrera, official syndicalist daily.
Unidad Syndical, organ of the Central Syndicalist Union.
El Libertario, anarchist periodical.
Frente Rojo (red front), official communist daily.
Tierra y Libertad, anarchist weekly.
La Tierra, agrarian communist daily.
El Soviet, Trotskiest organ.

Barcelona, capital of Catalonia, is the stronghold of an immense and powerful labour union, the C.N.T. (Confederación Nacional de Trabajo) of the syndicalists. Spain is the only country in Europe where syndicalism is still an actual force; it took root in Catalonia after Marx and Bakhunin split on anarchism in 1872. The syndicalists were the deadly enemies of the conservative socialists, represented in the rival union, the U.G.T. (Unión General de Trabajadores). In Barcelona an anarchist group, the Federación Anarquista Ibera, has infiltered the syndicalist union and probably controls it. Elsewhere in Spain communists are fairly active, both of the orthodox variety and Trotsky secessionists; Trotskyism is stronger in Spain than in any other European country.

Most of these Left groups coalesced to fight Lerroux. They were joined by Catalan nationalists; the Catalans wanted to defend the republic, because Azaña had given them autonomy. When Lerroux took three Gil Robles men into his cabinet, black Catholics all, revolt broke out. The chief centres of fighting were Barcelona and Asturias, the bleak north-west province of Spain. It took almost three weeks to crush the

H1645-0192

rebellion; in Asturias, indeed, where miners and workers offered heroic resistance to the army and Civil Guard, fighting went on for months. Thereupon terror struck Spain. Lerroux compensated for the gentleness of Azaña. At the end of 1935, some twenty-five thousand socialists and other Left-wingers were still in jail, awaiting trial. So died the Rousseau-Jefferson 'revolution'.

Pale-Green Incorruptible

Azaña, like no fewer than six other members of the first republican government, was a Freemason. This contributed in no small measure to his downfall. Masonry, as in France, has played a powerful role in politics in Spain, though one dislikes to simplify the issue too much, to talk too glibly of the dividing line between Masonry and Catholicism as the major *motif* of the revolution. Indeed the line is illogically awry. Lerroux, the Freemason, and Gil Robles, the Jesuit, are allies. But it is undeniable that in the early days of the republic the Catholic reaction successfully used the label of Masonry to discredit the new régime.

Manuel Azaña was born January 10, 1880, at Alcalá de Henares, the birth-place of Cervantes. He went to the ordinary schools and to Paris for graduate study. Had he never been prime minister he would yet be pretty well known wherever Spanish is read by intellectuals. He wrote incessantly – essays, plays, novels. One of his chief works was a labour of love, a translation into Spanish of George Borrow's *Bible in Spain*. Of anything Spanish or to do with Spain, he is a passionate connoisseur.

No one knows Azaña well. Perhaps for this reason gossip against him flourished, because Spain will not endure privacy in the lives of its eminent men. I met people who have been acquaintances of his for twenty years, who said, 'Ah, I have known Don Manuel since he was a child – and I do not know him at all.'

If Azaña had been a man like Kamal Ataturk, he might have made a real republic; there are startling analogies between pre-revolutionary Turkey and pre-revolutionary Spain. If only he had been less legalistic! But he chose a democratic parliament as a weapon of revolution – and failed.

H1645-0193

Azaña was clapped in jail by the reaction. Out again, he may become the leader of the united Left.

Don Ale

Don Alejandro Lerroux, comparatively little known outside of Spain, is one of the most fantastic creatures in modern Europe. There is a note of the picaresque and bizarre in everything about him. Called the *caudillo* (boss) he was born in 1863 in La Rambla, a village in Cordoba, the son of an army horse doctor. He was one of ten children, and the names of all began with 'A' – Arturo, Alfredo, Alberto, Armando, Adriana, Aurelio, Amelia, Amador, and another Armando to replace the first one, who died. The family came originally from Tarascon. And indeed Lerroux's early career was that of a Tartarin.

The Lerrouxs lived the semi-destitute nomadic life of minor military families. Young Alejandro followed his father in the army, then dropped it. He sold leather goods, wrote a cook-book, and became a *croupier* in a gambling den, then its bouncer. He got a job on a republican paper, *El Pais*, as bodyguard secretary to the proprietor, and fought six duels as his proxy. Word got around that he was a professional duellist imported from France, and following one scrape more serious than the others he decamped suddenly to South America.

He returned to Spain and settled in Barcelona, as a republican agitator, newspaper editor, and man of the street. His prestige among Catalonian workmen was enormous; he was known as the Emperor of the Paralello, that amazing district of Barcelona which is Montmartre and Barbary Coast and a little more. He wore fantastic clothes; his black moustaches twirled at enormous length; two broad stripes of red and yellow, the national colours, adorned his hat. He issued a famous manifesto, *'Rebeldes, Rebeldes'* appealing to the masses to rebellion. 'Young barbarians of to-day,' he wrote, 'revolt against everything; because there is nothing good. Revolt against everybody; because there is no one just. Sack this miserable and decadent civilisation, pull down its temples, destroy its gods. . . .' For a time Lerroux seems to have been almost an anarchist.

Vain, flamboyant, a braggadocio and swashbuckler, he deve-

H1645-0194

loped an astonishing oratorical manner. He was sonorous, smoky, lurid. An indignant mob once stormed the offices of *La Publicitat*, his newspaper in Barcelona. 'Where's Lerroux? Bring him out!' men shouted. And the *caudillo* stepped on the balcony, blue shirt open on the black hairy chest. 'Here I am,' he called back, 'and what about it?'

He happened to be in Paris in 1914 when the first German plane flew over the city. He sprang to his feet, pointed with his stick at the raider, and shouted, 'Frenchmen!' Other guests on the terrace of the café looked with some anxiety at the stranger with the tremendous voice and wide moustachios. 'Frenchmen!' Lerroux roared again. 'Do not have fear, because *I* am here, *I*, Alejandro Lerroux!'

Marcelino Domingo, one of the founders of the radical-socialist party and an early comrade, formally charged him with betraying the other republican leaders to the police in the abortive revolution of 1917. Miguel de Unamuno, the great Basque philosopher, sardonically suggested that Lerroux still claimed to be a republican so that everyone else would stop being republican. 'In this man's paunch,' wrote one of his ex-editors, 'were established the seven deadly sins.'

The story went in the early days of the republic that a citizen filling out an application form wrote after 'Antecedents', 'Neither criminal nor *Lerrouxista*.' His two chief cronies, Iglesias and March, were expelled from the Cortes for 'moral incompatibility' with that body. Lerroux was never trusted by his colleagues in the first days of the republic; yet his organisation was so strong that he had to be given jobs. Fourteen *Lerrouxistas* have been, at one time or other, cabinet ministers since 1931.

In the famous manifesto of his early years Lerroux wrote: 'There they are: tradition, routine, vested interests, conservatism, *caciquismo*, clericalism, the dead hand, centralism, the stupid framework of parties and programmes conceived by empty brains in the framework of religious dogma and political despotism.' These were the factors in Spanish life which Don Ale was pledged to destroy. And they are exactly the factors he represents to-day.

H1645-0195

H1645-0196

Gil Robles

This young man – he was born in 1901 – is stronger meat than the veteran and worn-out Lerroux. José Maria Gil Robles was the son of a professor at the University of Salamanca; he entered a Jesuit school at the age of six. His scholastic record was exceptional. At the amazing age of twenty-three he was appointed professor of public law at the University of La Laguna in the Canary Islands. But the appointment lapsed because he decided to go into journalism in Madrid.

Like his father, he was a militant Catholic and reactionary. He had an unusual trait for a Spaniard – energy. He got a job on the great Jesuit newspaper, *El Debate*, and the editor, seeing that this young man had a future, sent him abroad to prepare himself. He studied modern catholic organisation in France, Belgium, Germany, Austria. He studied journalism in the United States, where he spent a few weeks in the office of the *New York Times*. Then he returned to Spain, married the daughter of an aristocrat-landowner, and entered politics.

Gil Robles was elected deputy to the Cortes from Salamanca – where, like his father, he had become a professor – and established himself at once as the leader of the Reaction by his maiden speech. The right of his party to hold seats was challenged. Gil Robles met the challenge. 'If this is indeed a revolution and laws are suspended,' he said, 'then you will do well to deprive us of our seats. Do it. But if you have respect for law, as you claim, you *must* validate our election. If you deprive us of the right to sit here, then your revolution has no claim to democracy or legality.' This nailed the issue squarely. Gil Robles was not expelled by the timid socialists. And thereafter he profited by the republic's tolerance to roll up opposition to it.

He and his men walked out of the chamber when the bill dissolving the Jesuit order was passed, and from then on he openly boasted of his desire to destroy the government. 'The republic is like a case of measles; we will live through it,' he said. And he has admitted in the Cortes that he demanded participation in the Lerroux cabinet in 1934 with full know-

ledge that it might provoke armed resistance. Thus he was partly responsible for the civil war.

Like many Spaniards, Gil Robles is pasty-faced, almost green in complexion. He is rather stout; his scanty eyelashes and brows give him an egg-like look; his hands are small, puffy, delicate. A formidable enough speaker, he lacks what the Spaniards call *elevaçion*; he has vehemence instead of emotion, anger rather than indignation. He is clever in a small, vicious sort of way. He is thoroughly sibylline in most of his pronouncements: a trait very much esteemed in Spain, where the Jesuits have left their mark on character; frankness is considered unpardonable *naïveté*. Gil Robles is highly ambitious. A dangerous man politically: and on the make.

The President

Niceto Alcalá Zamora, the president of the republic, was a former minister of the crown; he only turned republican in 1930. The republicans made him their first chief because Lerroux was impossible, and Zamora gave respectability to the movement. When he left the cabinet to become the chief functionary of the country, Caballero and the socialists expected that he would at least play fair with them. He didn't.

But Zamora, detested by the Left, is also hated by the Right. The old aristocracy snubs him. He works at the old royal palace, but refuses to sleep there, and his meals are brought in on a tray from the corner coffee-house. He earns a tidy sum – 2,250,000 pesetas a year (about £64,000) and returns part of it to the treasury, being unable to spend it all, a lonely and unhappy man.

Foreign Affairs

The foreign policy of Spain is very simple. It is to stay behind the Pyrenees.

H1645-0197

H1645-0198

CHAPTER XIII

MUSSOLINI

'I shall make my own life a masterpiece.'
– BENITO MUSSOLINI.

'I am desperately Italian. I believe in the function of Latinity.'
– BENITO MUSSOLINI.

BENITO MUSSOLINI, tempestuous and ornate, a blacksmith's son, the creator of modern Italy and the author of the Abyssinian war, was born July 29, 1883, at Dovia di Predappio, a village in the Romagna. His career is that of the most formidable combination of turncoat, ruffian, and man of genius in modern history.

The obvious motivations, except poverty, are lacking. His father, a revolutionary socialist, was the anarchist of the village square, yes; but no tragedy occurred in Mussolini's life to compare with the execution of Lenin's elder brother, or Pilsudski's. His mother, a school-teacher, like the mothers of most great men, was an exceptional woman, but her influence on Mussolini was, it seems, slight; adoration of her never made him, like Hitler, a prisoner of infantile fixations. Kamal Ataturk's mother was ill-treated by the Greeks, and thus, years later, the Turkish dictator drove the Greeks into the sea; in Mussolini's life there is no such dramatic and direct impulse to redemption.

Nor can one easily discover any extraordinary personal accidents without which the Duce might have lived and died a blacksmith's boy in Forli. It is quite possible, as Bertrand Russell has pointed out, that the revolution in Russia might never have occurred had not a German general permitted Lenin to travel across Germany in a sealed train. It is quite probable that Soviet Russia would have never had a Five-Year Plan, had not Trotsky succumbed to a fit of pique and refused to attend Lenin's funeral. The Dollfuss dictatorship in

Austria was, as we shall see, made possible because a socialist deputy went to the bathroom during a crucial parliamentary vote. Such personal accidents, which play a large part in history, are not prominent in Mussolini's life. He made his own luck. His career has been a growth, steady and luxuriant, like that of some monstrous weed.

The chief personal influence on Mussolini as a young man was probably that of a Russian exile in Switzerland, Madame Angelica Balabanov. She took care of him in his early revolutionary days, mended his health, gave him food of both the body and the spirit. Mussolini, a bricklayer, apparently met Lenin through Balabanov. Years later Lenin rebuked the Italian socialists for having 'lost' Mussolini, their best man.

Every man is an arena, a pool, of forces. Those in Mussolini's early life were mostly literary and intellectual. Voraciously intelligent, he read Marx, Hegel, Machiavelli, La Salle, Nietzsche, Pareto, Sorel. He absorbed them like a blotter. From Nietzsche he learned to hate the mob, from Marx to love it. He records that in his early days he kept a medallion of Marx in his pocket.

Bombastes Furioso

The son of Alessandro Mussolini (who named him after Benito Jaurez, the Mexican revolutionist who ordered the execution of the Emperor Maximilian) and of Rosa Maltoni who was the school-teacher of the village, he grew up in the most crushing poverty. He never tasted coffee until he was twenty. He slept on a bundle of hay instead of a mattress, and the bedroom in his birth-place, which has been made a museum, preserves this symbol of extreme indigence. Mussolini often returns to his native village, and has built a model farm in the vicinity. Unlike Hitler, he takes some interest in the lives of his surviving relatives.

Though his father was a blacksmith, the family for generations had tilled the soil. Speaking to an assembly of peasants in October 1935, he said: 'The sort of people who like to rummage among old papers thought they would please me by discovering that my ancestors were of noble birth. So I said to them, "Stop it." All my grandfathers, all my great-grand-

H1645-0199

H1645-0200

fathers were tillers of the soil, and to remove all doubts of it I stuck a tablet on the wall of the old farm which says that generations of Mussolinis before me have always tilled the soil with their own hands.'

Mussolini, at his mother's insistence, went to a religious school (like Stalin and Kamal Ataturk), though his father was an extreme anticlerical. Then he taught school himself, at a wage of 56 lire (then £2 5s.) per month, until he fled to Switzerland when he was nineteen. He earned a living as a mason and a labourer in a chocolate factory; he was hungry often, and Balabanov describes how on one occasion he snatched at food from two Englishwomen picknicking in a park. At night he studied socialism. Becoming an agitator, he got into trouble with the police, and was jailed and expelled from one Swiss canton after another. Altogether, in Italy as well as Switzerland, Mussolini was arrested eleven times.

He hated jail; he despised the moral obloquy and physical discomforts of confinement. Once he was finger-printed by the Geneva police; he has loathed Switzerland ever since, and it is not fanciful to assume that his dislike of the League of Nations was partly conditioned by this early Genevan insult. Certainly Mussolini's prison experiences caused his present pronounced claustrophobia. Once he refused to enter the Blue Grotto in Capri. And it is obvious that his famous predilection for enormous rooms, like his office in the Palazzo Venezia, which is sixty feet by forty by forty, is over-compensation for early confinement in small prison cells.

Mussolini returned to Italy in 1904 at the age of twenty-one and spent ten years as a red-hot socialist.

He earned a living the while by teaching school and by incessant journalism. Not as great a pamphleteer as Shaw or Trotsky, he is nevertheless one of the best journalists alive. An early venture into creative writing, a novel called *The Cardinal's Mistress,* was not successful; it was, however (I quote Francis Hackett), 'hard, violent, cynical, proud, strong, and troubled'. He also wrote a biography of John Huss. At Forli in 1909 he founded his own paper, *La Lotta di Classi* (The Class Struggle), and it made him known among socialists and revolutionaries all over Italy. In 1912 he became editor of the *Avanti,* the official socialist daily, and he trebled its cir-

culation in three months. Previously he had spent some time in Trento, then in Austria, and this experience in irredentism awakened something cardinal in his character – nationalism.[1] In 1914 he was one of the organisers of 'Red Week', an attempt at socialist uprising in the Romagna.

The immense catastrophe of the Great War amputated his socialist career. The orthodox socialists wanted Italian neutrality; Mussolini stood for intervention on the side of the allies. 'To know why he became a warrior,' says Dr. Finer in his penetrating and exhaustive *Mussolini's Italy,* 'it is hardly necessary to do more than observe his physique.' On political nationalist grounds and purely personally through love of adventure, Mussolini wanted war. He gave up the editorship of *Avanti* and was expelled from the socialist party. When his former comrades howled him down, he shouted, with rare psychological discernment, 'You hate me because you still love me.' A few months later, he founded the newspaper he still directs, *Popolo d'Italia.* French money – since France was eager to drag Italy into the War – helped him.

Mussolini, so recently an anti-militarist, sounded a violent call to arms. 'We must distinguish between war and war,' he said, 'as we distinguish between crime and crime, between blood and blood. . . . We are not, and we do not wish to be, mummies, everlastingly immovable. We are men, and live men, who wish to give our contribution, however modest, to historical creation' (Finer, p. 101). He did not, however, go to the Front himself until December 1916, and he had only thirty-eight days in the trenches when he was severely wounded by the explosion of a trench mortar. He was in hospital for seven months. This, at least, is the official version of the incident.

After the War, on March 23, 1919, Mussolini formed the first *Fasci di Combattimento,* mostly from men who had joined him early in the War demanding intervention. He was still a socialist, though not a member of the party; his first

[1] He was arrested by the Austrian police and deported. The man who got him out of jail was the Viennese socialist Ellenbogen, who, twenty-five years later, was himself arrested following the February 'revolt' in Austria, which was the result of Mussolini's Austrian policy.

H1645-0201

programme asked an eighty-five per cent tax on War profits. He disliked and distrusted the *bourgeoisie* and capitalist aristocracy. 'Fascio' is simply the Italian word for group or bundle; to Mussolini it conveniently symbolised the 'Fasces' of Imperial Rome. The original Fascists were augmented by local correspondents of the *Popolo d'Italia* in Lombardy, who organised the movement. It was not a party at first, but a militia. Its chief strength was among ex-soldiers, especially the *arditi*, front-line volunteers. 'We, the survivors, who have returned,' Mussolini wrote, 'demand the right of governing Italy.'

The movement developed speedily. Its roots were those which grew analogously in Germany and produced Hitler later: unemployment among the ex-soldiers, the weakness of democratic cabinets, parliamentary corruption, powerful nationalist feeling, restlessness on the Left coupled with dissatisfaction at orthodox international socialism. As Mussolini became stronger, the army backed him, exactly as the Reichswehr backed Hitler. The politicians, watching him warily, tried to buy his movement; Giolitti was the Italian Papen. The industrialists, precisely as in Germany, prepared to give his machine support.

Labour troubles shook Italy in 1920 and 1921. The workmen rose against intolerable wages and living conditions. Mussolini appears to have first supported the 'Occupation of the Factories', when six hundred thousand workers in the industrial north attempted to take over the means of production. The Occupation was a failure, partly because socialist leadership was weak. This made it easier for Mussolini to appeal to the mob. But the legend that he 'saved' Italy from Bolshevism was nonsense. Even Italians do not believe this any more.

By 1921 and 1922 Mussolini steadily expanded his influence, and by a weapon which later dictators were to imitate – violence. He became a sort of gang chieftain. (He was still an active journalist, however; he covered the Cannes Conference in 1922 and sought interviews with Briand and Lloyd George. This trip taught him, he records, his first lesson in the mysteries of foreign exchange, when he discovered to his shame that an Italian lira was not worth as much as a French

H1645-0202

franc.) Mussolini's gangs slugged their way to power in half a dozen districts. Balbo in Ferrara and Faranacci in Cremona attacked the 'reds'. Virtual civil war, of a minor guerilla type, terrorised Italy. Mussolini still claimed, theoretically, to be a socialist, but to gain power he had to have an enemy; thus he fought the working classes, under the pretence that he was 'liberating' them.

The full reaction – and more violence – came after the March on Rome, in October 1922. As prime minister he was simply a gang leader who had become big enough to bluff the government into submission. He did not demand full power until he was quite certain that the army would not oppose him and when he was sure that the King would make him prime minister. The March on Rome was not, of course, a March on Rome at all; the Fascists took possession of a number of cities, with the army, 'neutral', standing aside. Mussolini travelled to Rome by sleeping-car, and the fifty thousand Fascists who had assembled in Rome were quietly dispersed the next day.

After 1922 Mussolini's history is familiar. He formed a coalition government, then, like Hitler ten years later, kicked the non-Fascists out. He was supported by Morgan loans. His only severe crisis till the Abyssinian war in 1935 was the Matteotti affair. Most critics nowadays do not think that the Duce directly ordered the assassination of Matteotti, the socialist leader, but his moral responsibility is indisputable. What happened, good informants think, is not only that Mussolini threatened Matteotti in the chamber, but angrily denounced him in private, spurting irritably at mention of his name. One can easily imagine him exploding to his underlings, 'That Matteotti –!' (Similarly, by a chance remark, Henry II caused the murder of Thomas a'Beckett.) The underlings, taking the hint, and thinking to gain favour with the Duce, went ahead on their own initiative and kidnapped and murdered the young socialist. Such a sequence of events is convenient for a dictator; if the business turns out 'well', the result is simple gain, if it turns out badly, viz., makes a scandal, the dictator can disclaim complicity. Mussolini, however, was bold enough to admit his responsibility; and he had to concede that the murderers were Fascists of 'high station'. Indeed

H1645-0203

some of his closest associates were involved. In a famous speech to the chamber he blustered his way out as follows:

> 'But after all, gentlemen, what butterflies are we looking for under the arch of Titus? Well, I declare here before this assembly, before all the Italian people, that I assume, I alone, the political, moral, historical responsibility for everything that has happened. If sentences, more or less maimed, are enough to hang a man, out with the noose! If Fascism has only been castor oil or a club, and not a proud passion of the best Italian youth, the blame is on me!'
>
> – (Mussolini's *Autobiography*, p. 231)

This, be it noted, is almost the same technique that Hitler followed after the June 30 murders. He too assumed all responsibility; and in Italy and Germany both, this removed the burden of bad conscience from large quarters of the nation. The Matteotti affair, however, shook the Duce deeply. But on the whole it was of great value to him, because following it he was able to isolate and thus the more conveniently destroy the opposition.[1]

'And Changes Fill the Cup of Alteration'

It is interesting in the light of the Abyssinian campaign to think back to the Italo-Turkish war of 1911–12 and recollect that Mussolini vigorously opposed it. This war, also fought in Africa, seemed to Mussolini, then a socialist, an imperialist crime. He organised an anti-war strike in Forli, and spent five months in prison as a result. The Lybian war, he wrote, and newspaper articles which it provoked, were 'manifestations, typical, qualified, and cynical, of nationalist delirium tremens'.

In one editorial in the *Avanti* he wrote words which read strangely at the end of 1935:

> 'We are in the presence of a nationalist, clerical, conservative Italy which proposes to make of the sword its law, of the army the nation's school. We foresaw this moral perversion; it does not surprise us. But those who think that preponderance of militarism is a sign of strength are wrong. Strong nations do not have to descend to the sort of insane carnival in which

[1] The actual assassins of Matteotti got very light sentences. One was an American gangster from St. Louis.

H1645-0204

the Italians are indulging to-day; strong nations have a sense of proportion. Nationalist, militarist Italy shows that it lacks this sense. *So it happens that a miserable war of conquest is celebrated as a Roman triumph.*' (Italics mine.)

– (*Daily Express*, October 19, 1935.)

Dr. Finer has unearthed a precious quotation of similar vintage. 'Imagine an Italy,' wrote Mussolini indignantly in 1912, 'in which thirty-six millions should all think the same, as though their brains were made in an identical mould, and you would have a madhouse, or rather, a kingdom of utter boredom or imbecility.'

To which the detached observer might reply, Even so!

Man Mussolini

Most people meeting Mussolini are surprised at his shortness of stature. He is, like Napoleon, only five feet six. His shoulders are powerful and his hands finely formed and almost delicate. His smile is gritty. Usually he wears the uniform of a corporal in the Fascist Militia.[1] He works in the Palazzo Venezia, in the centre of Rome, and lives about ten minutes away by car, in the Villa Torlonia, a comfortable villa with a luxuriant garden on the Via Nomentana, near the Porta Pia. A Roman aristocrat, Prince Torlonia, offered the villa to Mussolini because he couldn't afford its upkeep; now he would like to have it back but Mussolini has fallen in love with the place, especially the garden.

For some years his wife, Donna Rachele Guidi, resided in Milan, but lately she moved to Rome and now lives in the Villa Torlonia. Donna Rachele, whose origins are obscure, was, according to one story, a waitress in a Forli pub, according to another the servant of Mussolini's father after he retired from blacksmithing. She has borne Mussolini five children.

Indeed Mussolini is the only contemporary dictator conspicuously fecund; he is also the only dictator with a very strong regard for family life. Like Napoleon (and Hindenburg) he trusts members of his immediate family, and not many other people. For years his only friend was his brother Arnaldo, who succeeded him as editor of the *Popolo d'Italia*:

[1] Note the Napoleonic significance.

H1645-0205

Mussolini telephoned him from Rome to Milan almost every evening. Arnaldo's sudden death was a serious blow to the Duce. His daughter Edda, who is his living image, is the only person who dares to twit or heckle him; he adores her. Her husband, Count Galeazzo Ciano, became Mussolini's Press-director, and then the leader of the *Disperata* squadron of bombing and pursuit planes in Ethiopia. Mussolini's two elder sons, Vittorio, nineteen, and Bruno, seventeen, also went to the war as aviators. As if to give the two younger children, Romano and Anna-Maria, a touch of the air, Mussolini himself piloted the plane which gave them their first experience off the ground.

At fifty-two Mussolini is in powerfully good health, partly as a result of attention to a severe régime. Shortly after he became prime minister he was desperately ill with a stomach ailment; he eats very little nowadays but milk and fruit. He told a recent American interviewer, pointing to a basket of fruit on the table, 'That is the secret of my continued health – fruit, fruit, fruit. In the morning I have a cup of coffee and fruit; at noon I have soup or broth and fruit, and at night I have fruit. I never touch meat, but sometimes I have a little fish.' He loves exercise, and takes a lot of it: riding in the Torlonia gardens, fencing, swimming, hiking. He neither drinks nor smokes. He was fond of women in his younger days, but for the last few years he has paid little attention to them.

Mussolini is built like a steel spring. (Stalin is a rock of sleepy granite by comparison, and Hitler a blob of ectoplasm.) Mussolini's ascetic frugality is that of a strong man who scorns indulgence because he has tasted it often and knows that it may weaken him; Hitler's that of a weak man fearful of temptation. Stalin, on the other hand, is as normal in appetites as a buffalo.

The Duce has no social life. When, as foreign minister, it is incumbent on him to entertain, he greets his guests not at the Palazzo Venezia or the Villa Torlonia but in a hotel he hires for the occasion. No friend of the rich, he despises the decadent and profligate Roman aristocracy. He gave up the theatre, of which he was very fond, because he could not spare the time; he sometimes has private cinema shows at home. In

H1645-0206

his autobiography, written in 1928, he says that in his first six years of power he never once passed the threshold of an aristocrat's salon or even of a coffee-house.

As a rule, Mussolini works very hard for five or six hours a day – except when a crisis makes more time necessary – and spends the rest of the day in reading, meditation, or exercise. He is neat, precise, orderly; as Ludwig[1] records, he hates the *à peu près*. His work is systematised to the ultimate detail; he is a perfect executive, considering the floriferousness of other aspects of his character; he never leaves the Palazzo Venezia till the day's work is done.

He cares very little for money, though his large family makes him less impervious to financial considerations than other dictators. His official salary is 8,000 lire per month (about £135), but he has a drawing account, 'small, unspecified, and variable', at the treasury. For his autobiography he received £5,000 in America; he gave some of it to the Rome poor. For a long period his chief source of income was reputed to come from the Hearst press; early in 1935, however, he gave up writing regular articles because international politics were so delicate that he could not express himself frankly. He gave a share of his Hearst income to Margherita Sarfatti, his biographer, who helped him prepare the articles. Mussolini's brother Arnaldo was rich, because the *Popolo d'Italia* was – and is – a prosperous newspaper; its director now is Mussolini's nephew.

The Duce is the only modern dictator who has come to terms with religion. In 1929 the Lateran Treaty adjusted the relations of church and state in Italy. Shortly thereafter Mussolini and the Pope, strong characters both, clashed over the education of Fascist youth; in 1932 the Duce went to the Vatican, knelt in prayer, and, it is believed, took holy communion. He was an avowed atheist, like his father, in youth; latterly he has become very religious. He prays daily. His wedding-gift to Edda was a golden rosary; his youngest child, Anna-Maria, was his first to be given a religious name.

The most accessible of Europe's statesmen, Mussolini (like Beneš of Czechoslovakia) sees an enormous number of people. His first visitor every day is the chief of police; (Alexander of

[1] cf. *Talks With Mussolini*, by Emil Ludwig, a fascinating record.

H1645-0207

Jugoslavia likewise saw a security official the first thing every morning). The Duce, pervasively curious, interested in human nature, and an accomplished brain-tapper, like Franklin Roosevelt, enjoys his visitors. Finer quotes him as saying that he has given over sixty thousand audiences; he has interested himself in 1,887,112 individual 'affairs of citizens'.

Mussolini listens to people – but he seldom takes advice. He alone makes decisions. When he wishes, he can make himself as inaccessible as a Tibetan Lama. During the Geneva crises in 1935, when he was in a roaring temper, no one could get near him. Baron Aloisi and others made reports; he listened or not, as he chose. Several diplomats in Rome, like the British ambassador, Sir Eric Drummond, dislike talking to him; he terrifies them. Mussolini is proud of having thousands of acquaintances, and – with Arnaldo dead – no friends; he told Ludwig that he trusted 'no one'. This remark was expurgated from the Italian translation of Ludwig's book, since many Italians have served the Duce well and think that they deserve his trust.

A very good journalist himself, he likes newspaper men. But he is very much a *prima donna*, and needs careful handling. He is never 'charming'; he is contemptuous of all but the most skilful flattery; he may be brutal, gruff, cheerful, or stentorian, depending on his mood, which he seldom bothers to gloss over or conceal. He pays intelligent interlocutors the compliment of interviewing them; sometimes he asks many more questions than he answers. Boldness is the best avenue to his favour. I remember seeing Francis Hackett after his interview for the *Survey Graphic*, a little breathless because he had dared to ask a supremely audacious question: 'Where, your excellency, would you have been in *your* career, if you had applied to yourself the Fascist virtues of discipline, loyalty, and obedience?'[1]

Interviews, Mussolini knows, are the best of all possible forms of propaganda; thus he is so lavish with them. Most newspaper men – and their editors – cannot resist the flattery of conversation with a dictator or head of a state; once they have been received by Mussolini or Hitler, they feel a sense of obligation which warps their objectivity. It is very difficult

[1] Rather weakly Mussolini replied that 'the War' had changed things.

H1645-0208

for the average correspondent to write unfavourably about a busy and important man who has just donated him a friendly hour of conversation.

A British interviewer saw Mussolini recently and, rare phenomenon, Mussolini laughed at one of his remarks. Preparing a draft of the interview, the correspondent wrote, 'The Duce's laughter encouraged me to make one criticism of the Fascist régime, that it permitted very little expression of humour.' Reading the draft for approval before publication (as he does with most interviews) Mussolini sternly elided the reference to the fact that he had laughed. Dictators never laugh!

Two newspaper men were the source of the only recorded instance of public embarrassment of the Duce. He was in Locarno to initial the security pact of 1925. (Incidentally, this is one of only three occasions that he has left Italy since 1922; he attended the Lausanne conference of that year, and in 1923 fleetingly visited London.) His régime had just taken over the great liberal newspapers of Italy; the corps of international correspondents resented this, and boycotted his Press conference. Annoyed, pouting, Mussolini found himself surrounded in the hotel lobby by the journalists who had slighted him. He addressed George Slocombe of the *Daily Herald*, a conspicuous red-bearded figure, whom he had met covering the conference of Cannes. 'Ha!' exclaimed Mussolini surlily. 'How are your communist friends getting on!' Slocombe replied with perfect good temper, 'I am not a communist, *Monsieur le President*, but a socialist.' 'Ha!' Mussolini snorted again; 'then I am mistaken.' Whereupon a Dutch correspondent, George Nypels, piped out, 'And it is not the first time.'

Mussolini reads all the time; no modern statesman except perhaps Masaryk is so well acquainted with current literature. He keeps a systematic note-book of his reading. He astounded Ludwig by the range and accuracy of his historical knowledge. Like most people who like to read, he likes to write, and he writes extremely well. He compressed in the dozen pages of his pamphlet on Fascism what it analogously took Hitler six hundred pages to express in *Mein Kampf*. He is easily the best educated as well as the most sophisticated

H1645-0209

of the dictators – he is the only modern ruler who can genuinely be termed an intellectual – and he taught himself both French and German, which he speaks expertly. In about 1925 he began to learn English, so that he might read the political leaders in *The Times*. He chose an English newspaperwoman, Miss Gibson, as his teacher. He writes often – anonymously – for the *Popolo d'Italia*; he is part author of one play, *Campo di Maggio*, dealing with Napoleon during the Hundred Days, and the author of another, not yet produced, about the chief of his heroes, Julius Caesar.

The things that Mussolini hates most are Hitler, aristocrats, money, cats, and old age. He detests old people, especially old women. He dislikes references to the fact that he is a grandfather; and when, on July 29, 1933, he reached the age of fifty, the Italian Press was not allowed to mention it. The things that Mussolini loves most are the city of Rome (he has assiduously fostered the 'cult of Rome'), his daughter Edda, peasants, books, aeroplanes, and speed.

He is apt to straddle a motor-cycle, and like the late Colonel Lawrence hurl himself across country at night. He learned to pilot an aeroplane shortly after the War, and recounts in his autobiography a number of crashes and forced landings, from which he escaped miraculously, and which intensely exhilarated him.

'The Race by Vigour not by Vaunts is Won'

From the complex strands of Mussolini's character one may draw bright and brittle threads indicating the sources of his power.

He has, first of all, spine and starch, in a country sometimes lacking both.

For all his bombast and braggadocio,[1] his intelligence is cold, analytical, deductive, and intensely realistic.

His flaming egoism, his *sacro egoismo*, is cherished by Italians. His vanity is, as is obvious, extreme; for instance he stabilised the lira at nineteen to the dollar, far too high a rate, mostly to better the figure chosen by the French. He was called a paranoiac as far back as 1910.

[1] My colleague F. A. Voigt has noted that only the countries where grand opera flourishes have produced Fascism.

H1645-0210

Overwhelmingly he is a man of action. The single episode that amazed him most about the 30th of June in Germany was that Hitler consumed five hours *talking* to a man (Roehm) who was potentially a traitor.

His intuition, personal and political, is sensitive. He says, 'I cannot change myself. I am like the beasts. I smell the weather before it changes. If I submit to my instincts, I never err.'

He is an orator of the pen. He *wrote* his way to power.

Like all dictators, he is implacable. No Hitler, no Stalin, no Mussolini, has ever forgiven an enemy.

He is no hypocrite. He never made any secret of his ambition, which, he said frankly, was to seize power and stay in power as long as possible. On the other hand, he insists that he is no mere 'profiteer in patriotism'. *Duty* to Italy is his passion. 'Is it lust for power that possesses me?' he once said. 'No, I believe, in all conscience, no Italian thinks this. Not even my worst adversary. It is duty. A precise duty towards the revolution and towards Italy.' (Finer, p. 295.)

His histrionic ability is extreme. No modern politician except possibly Trotsky is so good an actor.

He distinctly has a 'world sense' of politics, as Frances Gunther has pointed out. Hitler thinks of Germany as a separate world; Mussolini knows well – and it has got him into trouble – that the world contains much aside from Italy.

Above all, he possesses a passionate physical magnetism. His vitality expresses itself in every gesture; when he salutes, for instance, he shoots out his arm with such intensity you think the hand may fall off. This vitality is readily absorbed by others. When he arrives before troops ready for review, his presence has almost the effect of an electric shock.

Among more negative qualities in Mussolini the following might be mentioned:

He is intensely touchy. A journalist well known to him, whom he admired, visited Italy in August 1935 and wrote a quite objective story saying that the Abyssinian campaign was not universally popular. Mussolini saw it (he reads most of his press cuttings) and cancelled the appointment for an interview, a few hours before it was to take place. Again, a minor instance, he caused the Italian number of *Fortune*, which was

H1645-0211

H1645-0212

very fair to him, to be suppressed in Italy, largely it is believed because of one remark, quoting him (in his early days) as follows: 'What do I do first when I wake up? Jump straight out of bed! No matter how beautiful the head beside me on the pillow.'

He is superstitious. Early in his career he had accepted among the thousands of gifts which poured in on him, an Egyptian mummy. Then Lord Carnarvon, excavator of the Tomb of Tutankhamen, died. Mussolini ordered the mummy to be removed. He woke up the staff of the Palazzo Chigi (where he then worked) to have it instantly taken away, his fright of it having descended on him late at night.

His claustrophobia I have mentioned. It is possible also that his reckless addiction to speed and violent movement is compensation for the days when prison cells bound his steps to six feet by four.

He is, like many Italians, inclined to be suspicious. For instance when the King telephoned him from Rome to Milan offering him the premiership, he did not disbelieve the message, but refused to act on it until it should be confirmed by an official telegram.

He is not strikingly original. Almost all his ideas are derivitive. Ideologically, Fascism is the distorted creation of Marx, Nietzsche, and Sorel. Mussolini did not invent the Fascist salute,[1] which was a suggestion of D'Annunzio's; he did not devise the symbol of the Black Shirt, which he copied from the uniform of the *arditi*.

He is occasionally capable of humility. 'A man in my position,' he told Ludwig, 'must be stupid at least once a week.'

Mussolini, who is quite aware of the complexities of his character, read with interest a serial discussion of it in a Fascist newspaper. Then he telegraphed the local prefect: 'Be so good as to send for the editor and ask him to close his series of articles with the following statement! "Inasmuch as Mussolini himself says that he does not know exactly what he is, it is somewhat difficult for others to find out." '

After his visit to Rome in 1926, Francis Hackett wrote, 'Mussolini is an Italian masterpiece, all shade and all sun,

[1] The cruel joke was that the Italians raised one hand in salute because they were tired of raising both in the War.

H1645-0213

concrete, bold, and tangible. . . . He is the hero of one of those terrific dramas of upstart genius which in England lead to Parliament Hill and in Italy to Vesuvius. Mussolini is Vesuvian. He is capable of a rush of blood to the head, a tower of rage, a surge of demoniac wilfulness, that may end in smoke, lava, destruction.' Hackett wrote with Corfu in mind. Eight years later came Abyssinia.

Violence

'There are those who have to be crushed by truth before they can understand it.'
– MUSSOLINI.

'Not believing in force is the same as not believing in gravitation.'
– TROTSKY.

Mussolini's first published work, written when he was twenty-one under the strong influence of Nietzsche, was an essay on the philosophy of force. The concept of force has always fascinated him. Yet, as he says, violence should be 'surgical', not 'sporting'; defining the terror in Italy as 'national prophylactics', he wrote that certain 'individuals should be removed from circulation as the doctor removes an infected person from circulation'. At one point in his career, early in 1921, he resigned – extremely temporarily – the leadership of the Fascist movement, in protest at violence which he considered excessive by *squadristi* bands. He did not, however, abolish the *squadristi* till 1927, when their work with castor oil and clubs was safely done.

Mussolini's considered opinion on the subject of violence is the following:

> 'Was there ever a government in history that was based exclusively on the consent of the people and renounced any and every use of force? A government so constituted there never was and there never will be. Consent is as changeable as the formations in the sands of the seashore. We cannot have it always. Nor can it ever be total. No government has ever existed which made all its subjects happy. Whatever solution you happen to give to any problem whatsoever, even though you share the Divine wisdom, you would inevitably create a class of malcontents. . . . How are you going to avoid that this discontent spread and constitute a danger for the solidarity of the state? You avoid it with force – by employing force inexorably whenever it is rendered necessary. Rob any

government of force and leave it only with its immortal principles, and that government will be at the mercy of the first group that is organised and intent on overthrowing it.'

There have been five or six attempts to assassinate Mussolini; he is a profound fatalist, but not so much so that severe precautions to guard him are not taken. The story is that only one man in Rome, the chief of police, can or cannot tell Mussolini what to do; the Duce obeys him in regard to routes he takes. There are some streets in Rome he never travels on. On the other hand, he travels daily from home to office without special guard.

Hitler, the story goes, keeps a small revolver in his desk drawer. Suicide would be understandable with Hitler if his régime collapsed. Not so the Duce. Mussolini, a compact gorilla, will not perish by such facile means.

Psychograph

Dr. Wilhelm Stekel, the Viennese psycho-analyst, has made a fascinating study of Mussolini. His will to power, his intense sense of great historical mission, may, according to Stekel, derive from bipolar tendencies of love and hatred of his father. Mussolini père was the first man of the native village. So young Mussolini became the first man of Italy. The boy, as a socialist, identified himself with his father; then differentiating himself, he kicked socialism overboard. The turning-point of Mussolini's life was, Stekel believes, his flight from Italy to Switzerland, which may well have been a flight from paternal influence. His father was sent to prison by the local police; now Mussolini sends father substitutes to prison.

Mussolini must always lead. As a schoolboy he sat at the third table, the one reserved for the poorest boys; he has never forgotten this humiliation. Climbing mountains, he records that his only pleasure is getting on top and resting there, the victor of the heights. As a bricklayer, he wanted always to put the very topmost brick in place. The fact that he was a mason is of psychological significance, Stekel believes. He was a builder first of houses, then of the house of Italy.

Throughout his whole life there has been conflict between the journalist in him and the artist. Like all newspaper men,

H1645-0214

he wanted to write novels and dramas. He learned to play the violin.[1] The men he chiefly admires, aside from Caesar and Napoleon, are imaginative writers – Shakespeare, Goethe, Balzac, Petrarch, Pascal. He himself was a failure as a poet; therefore he set out to make his life a work of art. He became a dictator partly because great creative art was denied him.

His life, Stekel says, has been to some extent a regression to childhood; he wants to be a stoic, to compensate for juvenile humiliations and defeats; he is fascinated by the history of Rome, which was the youth of his own country. Julius Caesar he thinks was the greatest man who ever lived. He has identified himself with Caesar closely. (Like Caesar, a minor but interesting point, he is sensitive to bad weather.) The only rival to Caesar in his political affections is Napoleon, whom he always thinks of as an Italian. It is of some significance that his Napoleonic play described the Hundred Days: the period when Napoleon, returning from Elba, flung himself finally against destiny.

Mussolini hates Hitler because he can tolerate no rival dictator. There must be no second Duce. He has striven not only to check and defeat Hitler (as in Austria after the Dollfuss murder) but to outdo him. Hitler left the League of Nations; but Mussolini, in effect, made war on it. Hitler asked meekly for colonies, and got none; Mussolini set out to carve one from Ethiopia.

In Caesar's time, as Mussolini showed Rome in the gigantic new historical tablets he has conspicuously set up near the Forum, Britain was merely an outpost of the Roman empire. In the eighteenth century Britain beat Napoleon, humiliating him at Elba and St. Helena. And in modern times Britain has sought to transform the Mediterranean, the Roman sea, *Mare Nostrum*, into a British lake. It is not entirely fanciful to think that Mussolini has visions of vindicating Caesar and avenging Napoleon.

The Abyssinian war, Dr. Stekel thinks, has many explanations, and among them is the father conflict again. The Negus, to Mussolini, is the black man, the devil, the bad father, and perhaps personification of his own violent tendencies.

[1] In a vivid interview with George Seldes he explained what music – especially Italian music – meant to him.

H1645-0215

Mussolini made Italians slaves, and, an interesting example of bipolarity, he now fights slavery.

What Fascism Is

When Mussolini took power he had no programme except to retain his job. He admits this candidly. But he quickly found a programme, which derived from a desire to replace the class struggle, which – certainly – he had done more than most men to intensify, by some sort of class collaboration. This was the origin of Fascism in practice. The contrast to Hitler is striking. Hitler came to power with a very definite programme, and soon lost it; Mussolini, devoid of programme, quickly invented one.

The outlines of Fascist economy are known to everyone. Private property, private profits, are preserved, but under strict state control. The entire productive capacity of the country, theoretically represented by employers and employees both, is organised into a series of twenty-two 'corporations',[1] from which deputies to the lower chamber of parliament will be chosen. Representation will be on a basis of occupation instead of geography; a deputy will represent, say, the hotel business instead of the province of Turin.

The scheme was put forward cautiously, and expanded very slowly; at the end of 1935 it was still an embryo structure. Every corporation contains three supervising delegates of the Fascist party; each corporation is headed by a member of the cabinet or an under-secretary, appointed by Mussolini. The deputies, moreover, are 'voted' into the chamber from an approved list chosen by the Grand Fascist Council; electors are privileged simply to say Yes or No to the whole list. Mussolini's two general 'elections' have been grossly dull affairs.

The state, being supreme, regulates economy for its exclusive benefit. Fascism may be, spiritually, 'an attempt to make Romans out of Italians', but physically it made Italy a prison. 'Fascism is a series of ideas turned into a person,' according to

[1] 1, cereals; 2, garden products; 3, wine and grapes; 4, oils; 5, sugar; 6, husbandry and fishing; 7, timber; 8, textiles; 9, metallurgy and mechanics; 10, chemicals; 11, clothing; 12, paper and publications; 13, building trades; 14, public utilities; 15, mining; 16, glass and pottery; 17, credit and insurance; 18, the free professions; 19, shipping and aviation; 20, internal communications; 21, theatre; 22, hotels and restaurants.

H1645-0216

Gentile; and the peculiar person and character of Mussolini determined the repressive shape it took.

Mussolini told an English publicist late in 1935 that he would find no orthodox capitalism surviving in Fascist Italy. And in a famous speech to the National Council of Corporations he announced that the world economic crisis of 1931–34 had bored so deeply into the capitalist system that it had become an organic crisis of the system itself. 'To-day,' he said, 'I declare to you that the capitalist method of production is finished.'

Indeed one may assemble a seemingly impressive list of anti-capitalist forces in the corporative state. No employer may discharge labour without government consent. No capitalist may undertake such comparatively minor independent activity, as, say, enlarging his factory, without state approval. Wages are determined by the government; the employer may hire labour only at government labour exchanges. A factory owner may not liquidate his business without state permission; the government controls his sources of credit; and it takes a large share of his income in Draconian taxation.

On the other hand, the disadvantages to labour under Fascism are infinitely more severe. Workers have lost their right to bargain; their trade unions have been dissolved; they are the weaker party vis-à-vis the employers in the syndicates; they are still subject to the crises of capitalist economy; their wages may be (and have been) mercilessly deflated by decree; above all, they have lost the right to strike. The capitalist, on the other hand, even if he has suffered inconvenience, maintains his fundamental privilege, that of earning private profits. Fascism as Mussolini introduced it was not, probably, a *deliberate* artifice for propping up the capitalist structure, but it had that effect. The restriction on the mobility of capitalism was in effect 'a premium which the capitalists were willing to pay in order to get full security against the demands of labour'. The whole colour and tempo of the Fascist revolution, in contrast to that in Russia, is backward.

Mussolini, in his essay on Fascism in the *Enciclopedia Italiana*, begins by saying how a series of 'aphorisms, anticipations and aspirations' were welded by time into 'an ordered expression of doctrine'. He sketches the history of Fascism by describing the things it combatted: (1) Pacifism, (2) Marxian

H1645-0217

H1645-0218

Socialism, (3) Liberal Democracy. 'War,' he writes, 'alone brings up to its highest tension all human energy and puts the stamp of nobility upon the peoples who have the courage to meet it.' He attacks the materialist conception of history; 'Fascism, now and always, believes in holiness and heroism.' And as to democracy: 'Fascism denies that the majority, by the simple fact that it is a majority, can direct human society; it denies that numbers alone can govern by means of a periodical consultation, and it affirms the immutable, beneficial, and fruitful inequality of mankind.'

His best passage is devoted to Fascism as the totalitarian expression of the state:

> 'No doctrine has ever been born completely new, completely defined, and owing nothing to the past.... The foundation of Fascism is its conception of the state, its character, its duty, and its aim. Fascism conceives of the state as an absolute, in comparison with which all individuals or groups are relative, only to be conceived of in their relation to the state.... The state, as conceived of and as created by Fascism, is a spiritual and moral fact in itself, since its political, juridical, and economic organisation of the nation is a concrete thing; and such an organisation must be in its origins and development a manifestation of the spirit....
>
> 'The Fascist state is unique, and an original creation. It is not reactionary, but revolutionary, in that it anticipates the solution of the universal political problems which elsewhere have to be settled in the political field by the rivalry of parties, the excessive power of the parliamentary régime and the irresponsibility of political assemblies; while it meets the problems of the economic field by a system of syndicalism which is continually increasing in importance, as much in the sphere of labour as of industry; and in the moral field enforces order, discipline, and obedience to that which is the determined moral code of the country.'

And he ends the essay by an urgent appeal to imperialism: 'For Fascism, the growth of empire, that is to say the expansion of the nation, is an essential manifestation of vitality.'

Liberty, under a totalitarian system, ceases; the question for the individual is whether the merits of the régime compensate its loss.

If Mussolini gave his people liberty *plus* his system, he might get a big free vote of confidence; but instead he gave them suppression, privation, and the obscenity of war.

H1645-0219

CHAPTER XIV

WHO ELSE IN ITALY?

'If I advance, follow me; if I retreat, kill me; if I die, avenge me.'
– MUSSOLINI.

'There is no revolution that can change the nature of man.'
– MUSSOLINI.

MUSSOLINI is three things: the *Duce* (leader) of the Fascist party, the *Capo del Governo*, or prime minister, and the head of the Grand Fascist Council, the highest organ of government in Italy. The three posts, quite distinct, merge in his person. As *Capo del Governo*, he is theoretically responsible to the King; as Duce of the party, he appoints the Grand Fascist Council and presides over it. The Grand Fascist Council controls parliament. Hitler, in Germany, has united party and state; he is *Reichsführer*. Not so Mussolini, though the effect is the same. In the U.S.S.R., Stalin, in contrast to Mussolini, is – in theory – appointed by and is responsible to the other members of the central committee of the communist party, whereas in Italy the members of the Grand Fascist Council are Mussolini's underlings. Stalin, however, like Mussolini, keeps party and state theoretically separate.

The Duce is the only dictator who, so far as is known, has made arrangements for his succession. The Grand Fascist Council numbers about twenty-five men; its membership, except for ex-officio and life members, shifts continually and is secret, and it meets in secret. (The secretary of the party and certain other dignitaries are members so long as they hold their party or cabinet jobs; the three surviving quadrumvirs of the March on Rome – Balbo, De Bono, and De Vecchi – are life members.) If Mussolini dies, the Grand Council has the duty of submitting a list of men from which the King will choose a successor. Three names are, at present, understood to be on the list, selected in advance – of course – by Mussolini.

H1645-0220

Mussolini told Ludwig that there will never be a second Duce; he meant obviously that there will never be a second Duce like himself. The men around him are, indeed, small fish. There is no Goering in Italy, no Kaganovitch. Whenever a subordinate like Grandi or Balbo becomes too prominent, Mussolini, who doesn't like the luxury of seconds in command, contrives to get rid of him. De Bono was removed from Abyssinia as soon as he had captured Adowa and Makale. The present secretary of the party, Starace, holds on to his job by almost unique tactics of subservience; if unwisely he becomes too powerful, he will get the sack.

The Duce *is* the Fascist system; if he dies, can it survive him? The temptation is to answer in the negative, but one should not forget the precedent of other countries. Four post-War dictators have died: Lenin, Dollfuss, Alexander of Jugoslavia, and Pilsudski. In each case the systems they established – they differed enormously, of course, in scope and spirit – survived.

Dux and Rex

The King provides assurance of some sort of continuity – if he wants it – because he still has the right to name the new prime minister. Mussolini differs from all other dictators in that he preserved a symbol of permanence above him.

Vittorio Emanuele III, born in 1869, is the doyen of European kings, having reigned thirty-five years in 1935. He acceded to the throne on the assassination of his father. His formative years were spent in the army. He married a Montenegrin princess, Elena. The two great decisions of his life were the dismissal of Giolitti in 1915, which brought Italy into the War, and his acquiescence to Mussolini's March on Rome. He is an enthusiastic numismatist. He is mild, well educated, and, like almost all Italians, intelligent. His salary is 11,250,000 lire per year, or roughly £200,000. His relations with Mussolini are, contrary to gossip, excellent.

Nevertheless the little story is told that Vittorio Emanuele greeted the Abyssinian war with satisfaction.

'If we win,' he is reported to have said, 'I shall be King of Abyssinia. If we lose, I shall be King of Italy.'

H1645-0221

Orderlies and Underlings

The job of the secretary of the Fascist party is to make the mistakes. Mussolini gives him all the inside work to do; when he has made himself sufficiently unpopular by exerting discipline, refusing promotions, picking out men for jobs, and so on, he is dismissed and replaced by someone else. Since 1919, when the party was organised, there have been six secretaries; in other words it takes an average of two and half years for one to outlive his usefulness. Bianchi, one of the quadrumvirs, the first secretary, was involved in the Matteotti business, and Mussolini dropped him. His successor, Giunta, was one of D'Annunzio's legionnaires in the attack on Fiume. The next was Roberto Faranacci, boss of Cremona; he was too violent even for the Duce and to-day he is an obscure and forgotten figure. Next came Augusto Turati, a more capable and respectable man, who managed to hold the job for four years; he is now, however, in internment on the island of Rhodes. Following him with Giurati; he was the author of the Fascist Ten Commandments. The present incumbent is a cautious yes-man and watch-dog, Achille Starace.

It happens that Starace has exophthalmic eyes, somewhat like Mussolini's, and he is accused of slavish physical imitation of his master when, as often happens, his eyes pop and roll. A minor victim of megalomania, within safe bounds, he maintains an imposing office, and is supposed to exercise his fingers with a mechanical device in order to strengthen his handshake. Starace, as long as he holds to the secretaryship, is deputy chairman of the Grand Council, and his influence on party personnel is great. He is also the head of the *Dopolavoro* movement which is an effort to supervise Fascist leisure as well as working hours. His job makes him unpopular; his honesty is however admitted. Starace has made only one blunder so far, his announcement that letter writers should say *Evviva Il Duce* in their correspondence. The next day one of Mussolini's typical anonymous and scornful editorials in the *Popolo d'Italia* repudiated the idea; he didn't want to copy the *Heil Hitler* of Nazi Germany.

Much closer to Mussolini personally is Count Galeazzo Ciano, his son-in-law, who was minister of propaganda, and a

very efficient one, until he went to Abyssinia. His father, Count Constanzo Ciano, a former minister of communications, is president of the chamber of deputies, and one of Mussolini's closest associates; Count Ciano, Senior, is supposed to be one of the three men on the succession list of the Grand Fascist Council. The younger Ciano entered the diplomatic service and worked first as secretary of embassy in South America, then as consul-general in Shanghai. He is intelligent, adaptable, and considering his job, popular with the newspaper men in Rome.

His friends, however, were somewhat shocked at his lighthearted description of the modern technique of massacre. Interviewed after one of his bombing exploits in Abyssinia, young Ciano was reported to have said:

> 'When you see a concentration of Ethiopian troops, you give them a few rounds with a machine-gun and they scatter and hide in the long grass. Then, when you fire a few more rounds at random, each of them thinks the bullets are falling near him, and they promptly emerge and run in all directions, when you can pop them off in real earnest.'
>
> – (*Evening News*, October 17, 1935.)

Another comparatively powerful subordinate is Edmondo Rossoni, under-secretary to the Duce in his capacity of *Capo del Governo*, who spent many years in America as a labour organiser. Rossoni was the man who built up Mussolini's labour syndicates.

Balbo

Italo Balbo, reputedly the inventor of the castor-oil treatment for recalcitrant non-Fascists, 'a Fascist from the first hour' and Mussolini's whilom 'right hand', was still, in December 1935, exiled in Lybia, of which province he was governor. He was given no part in the Abyssinian campaign, of which, it is believed, he (like the general staff) strongly disapproved. Balbo was packed off to Lybia in June 1933, after his dramatic and successful flight to Chicago from Rome. His name may not be mentioned in an Italian paper more than once a month.

The story was that Mussolini exiled Balbo first because his spectacular success in aviation had made him too popular.

H1645-0222

But another reason was apparently Balbo's close friendship with Umberto, the Crown Prince. In 1932 and 1933 Umberto had anti-Fascist leanings; grimly Mussolini changed the army oath of allegiance, cutting out the reference to the King's 'royal successor'. The report was heard that the Duke of Aosta, a great favourite with the régime, might displace Umberto as heir-apparent. Balbo at the time was Umberto's 'man'. Now, most of those well-informed think, the King has prevailed upon Umberto to see the foolishness of his ways. But Balbo still is very close to Umberto; every once in a while he flies from Lybia to Naples, where the Crown Prince lives, and conspicuously stays in the palace for a day or two.

Balbo is the only man in Fascist Italy who even now, within limitations, does what he pleases. Once, when he was air minister, the Duce disapproved of his aviation budget; Balbo, arriving in the Palazzo Venezia, saw that the usual chair next to Mussolini's desk was missing, while his master remained seated. This meant that Balbo was being disciplined like a schoolboy; he would have to talk standing up. So promptly he sat down – *on* Mussolini's desk.

Tall, copper-bearded, a picturesque as well as arrogant figure, Balbo was born in Ferrara, near Bologna, in 1897. He enlisted in the army as a boy, and won decorations in his 'teens; he founded a newspaper at twenty; he took part in the D'Annunzio adventure and was among the first to join Mussolini in 1919. In the braggadocio days, he was conspicuous among the bludgeoners; he captured Ravenna from the socialists, besieged Parma, and for a time was expelled from the party. At the age of twenty-six he was first commander of the Fascist militia; then he became under-secretary of national economy, finally secretary for air. Before his flight to Chicago he had organised and led similar formation flights to Odessa, around the Mediterranean, and to Brazil.

Recently Balbo was quoted as saying that the Duce, infuriated by the difficulties of the Abyssinian war, was 'not to be approached these days, let alone argued with'.

Balbo is quoted in Finer with a passage which strikingly shows the similarity between the early Fascists and their subsequent analogues in Germany:

H1645-0223

> 'When I returned from the war – just like so many others – I hated politics and the politicians, who in my opinion had betrayed the hopes of the soldiers, reducing Italy to a shameful peace and the cult of heroes. To struggle, to fight in order to return to the land of Giolitti, who made a merchandise of every ideal? No. Rather deny everything, destroy everything, in order to renew everything from the foundations.'

Marshal Emilio de Bono, another of the quadrumvirs, was the first commander-in-chief of the Italian forces in Abyssinia. Born in 1866, a generation older than Balbo, he had a long career as a regular army officer; he was the commander of Mussolini's regiment in the War. Disgusted at the 'collapse' of Italy in 1919 and 1920, he resigned his command of the army corps at Verona and joined the Fascist movement. An amateur musician, he wrote the first marching song of the Black Shirts. He was governor of Tripoli for a time, then minister of colonies.

The Other Warriors

In November 1935, Mussolini replaced De Bono by Marshal Pietro Badoglio, Italy's most distinguished soldier. The reasons for the shift were several. For one thing, De Bono had done his job, even though the campaign was going slowly. For another, appointment of Badoglio made the business an affair squarely of the regular army, not merely of the Black Shirts. And it was also said that Mussolini was not averse to removing Badoglio from Italy, because the marshal, the King's best friend and trusted by the army, would be a natural counter-leader to Mussolini if the Abyssinian adventure should collapse. Cleverly, the Duce saddled Badoglio with responsibility for making the war succeed.

Marshal Badoglio had a routine but brilliant military career. He was born in 1875, and joined the artillery in 1890; he has fought in every Italian war since, and was one of the survivors of Adowa in 1896; he has been decorated for bravery seven times. After the Great War he was variously a senator, ambassador to Brazil, chief of the general staff, and president of the army council. He could have crushed the March on Rome had the King given assent. It is generally believed that at the beginning he opposed the Abyssinian war; the general

H1645-0224

staff prepared a report on the possibilities of the campaign which Mussolini, it is said, tore up in rage.

General Rudolfo Graziani, the leader of the Somaliland forces, knows Africa well; he spent seven years as junior officer in Eritrea, and from 1926 to 1930 he was the 'pacifier' of Cyrenaica. Military experts call him Italy's best soldier. . . . General Attilio Teruzzi, chief of staff of the Fascist militia for seven years and in 1935 the commander of the Black Shirts in Abyssinia, is an army officer who turned politician. Like De Bono, he gave up military life to join Mussolini after the War. A vigorous man with a heavy black beard, he has been a deputy, an under-secretary of the interior, and governor of Lybia. . . . General Giuseppe Pavone, a regular officer with much experience in Africa, joined the D'Annunzio freebooters and was cashiered by the Nitti government; Mussolini restored his rank. He invented the black tasselled cap, something like a fez, which is part of the Black-Shirt uniform. It was Pavone who organised the forced march of the Padua division to the Austrian frontier after the Dollfuss murder. Pavone's father was sentenced to death for a patriotic plot against the Bourbons in Naples in 1848. He is known as *diavolo nero*, black devil. In Abyssinia he commands the native Eritrean troops, the Askaris.

Diplomats

Baron Pompeo Aloisi, the man who represented Mussolini at Geneva, did well with a stiff and ticklish job: he had to maintain a modicum of self-respect and persuade others of the independence of his judgment while he was, in the strenuous days of October 1935, merely the Duce's mouthpiece. His ferocious master raged in the Palazzo Venezia; at the Council table in Geneva Aloisi had to give the impression of steadiness and poise. Mussolini gave him impossible orders like the injunction to accuse the Abyssinians of 'aggression', which he had to present plausibly and with a straight face.

Born of a noble Roman family in 1875, Aloisi began life as a naval officer, then turned to the diplomatic service. He had wide experience; in 1919, far from the *squadristi* in Tuscany and the Emilia, he was Press officer of the Italian delegation at the Paris peace conference. He was a *diplomat de carrière*,

H1645-0225

H1645-0226

one of the few whom Mussolini retained, and he served as minister or ambassador in Copenhagen, Tirana, Bucharest, Ankara, and Tokio. He was the agent of Mussolini's penetration of Albania; in Japan, a cultivated man, he found time to write a book on Japanese art. The Duce sent him to the League in 1932. He worked well as chairman of the League committee organising the Saar plebiscite.

For a time the Duce's favourite for work in foreign affairs was Dino Grandi, but at the Lausanne reparations conference the French and British composed an agreeement excluding Italy, and Grandi was punished by being sent to London as ambassador – there, presumably, to learn better the manners of the subtle British. Mussolini was supposed to have been furious at him in the summer of 1935, because Grandi had not warned him that the British would take the lead in imposing sanctions against Italy. But many besides Grandi were deceived. Grandi, once a *squadristi* leader, has long since lived down his salad days. He is connected with the Sorima company of Genoa, which recovered the gold from the submerged liner *Egypt*, one of the most remarkable of modern marine exploits. A man of great personal charm, he is probably the most popular of the ambassadors at the Court of St. James's.

The under-secretary for foreign affairs, Fulvio Suvitch, well known for his foppish clothes, was born in Trieste, then part of Austria. During the War he crossed the lines from the Austrian to the Italian army. He is of no consequence nowadays even in execution of policy; Aloisi has replaced him as the Duce's chief foreign expert.

'Jesters do oft Prove Prophets'

'There is a widespread belief,' wrote the *Manchester Guardian* recently, 'that dictators are iron-souled and thick-skinned; the truth is that they are the most sensitive creatures in the world. . . . It is the leaders of the democracies who are tough and wiry. They can stand criticism, and either bear it in good part or put up with it. Not so the dictator; an unfriendly remark or even good-humoured banter is so intolerable that the very sinews of the state are felt to shake dangerously in response to the jangled nerves of the dictator.'

H1645-0227

Jokes in the U.S.S.R., as we shall see, mostly deal with the rigours of the Five-Year Plan; German jokes are based most often on the Terror;[1] jokes in Italy perhaps significantly – aside from those international jokes which are applied indiscriminately to all the dictators – deal mostly with corruption. Mussolini himself is above any whisper of financial irregularity, but if the current of suppressed laughter in Italy is any indication, the rank and file Fascists think poorly of the integrity of petty bosses and sub-leaders. The party, of course, controls all the best jobs; on this fact the wits flourish.

Most Italian jokes hinge on the word *mangiare*, which means two things, 'to eat' and 'to graft'.

Little Romano Mussolini, for instance, says to the Duce at the dinner-table. 'Father, what must I do to become a great man like yourself?' Mussolini answers, *'Mangi e taci'* (Eat and be quiet).

The most Fascist of animals is the elephant; because it first makes the Fascist salute – and then eats. The Fascist insignia have been placed on all locomotives – because they 'eat up' the road. Mount Vesuvius was recently given an honorary degree, because it opened its mouth – to eat. A traveller stops a policeman, 'Where can I eat best in this town?' Reply: 'At the party headquarters.'

Another type of story goes like this. At a congress of veteran Fascists someone calls out, 'To whom does Italy belong?' Chorus: *'A NOI!'* (to us). 'To whom belongs victory?' Chorus: *'A NOI!'* 'To whom the Duce?' Chorus: *'A NOI!'* Then a voice interrupts: 'To whom belongs work?' (*A chi il lavoro?*) The chorus stops in embarrassment, then begins to sing the Fascist anthem, *Giovinezza.*

No street has ever been named for Mussolini. This is because the word *via* means not only street, but 'away'.

[1] For instance, a family of Jews writes to a friend abroad, 'We have a marvellous life under Hitler. Not the hair of a head of a Jew has been harmed. Atrocity stories abroad are lies. Uncle Max, who expressed the opposite opinion, was buried last week.'

H1645-0228

CHAPTER XV

WAR IN ABYSSINIA

'Our future lies to the east and south, in Asia and Africa.'
– MUSSOLINI.

'Statesmen only talk of fate when they have blundered.'
– MUSSOLINI.

'If it wasn't for myopia,
We could see to Ethiopia.'

IN October 1935 the campaign against Abyssinia began. Mussolini, cold-blooded as only an Italian can be, set out, 'in violation of covenants he was pledged to support, to rob and conquer a country he had promised to defend'.

For years he had threatened a push to the east. The campaign should have surprised nobody. He had cast hungry eyes at Tunis; an arrangement between Soviet Russia and Turkey prevented an adventure some years ago in Anatolia. He needed room – colonies – for Italy to expand in. But his habit of bluster, had, lamentably enough, persuaded folk in Western Europe that he was bluffing. Why did he choose 1935 as the time for the adventure he had long foretold? And why, as proof that his bite was worse than his bark, did he pick Abyssinia?

One must pause a moment to describe Italy's fundamental realities, Mussolini or no Mussolini, in economics.

Italy has forty-two million people, as many as France, crowded into one-third the arable land of France. The population increases by the astounding total of four hundred and fifty thousand births per year. 'We are hungry for land,' Mussolini himself put it, 'because we are prolific, and intend to remain so.' Of the forty-two million Italians, overwhelmingly the largest proportion are engaged in agriculture; the country is only ten per cent industrial. No less than twenty-one per cent of the population is illiterate. The country cardinally lacks raw materials; it has no rubber, tin, nickel,

H1645-0229

tungsten, mica, or chromium; it is dependent on imports from abroad for ninety-nine per cent of its cotton, eighty per cent of its wool, ninety-five per cent of its coal, ninety-nine per cent of its mineral oil, eighty per cent of its iron and steel, ninety-nine per cent of its copper. Despite Mussolini's 'battle of the grain', it does not produce enough food for its own requirements; it must import fifteen per cent of its meat, and twenty per cent of its grain. Finally, Japan excepted, Italy has the most exposed coastline of any country in the world.

Mussolini's job in the first years of Fascism was, in general terms, an attempt to transform a country so meagrely favoured by nature into a great power. He succeeded, but at a frightful cost. Taxation increased till it ate up no less than thirty-eight per cent of the total national income. The trade balance remained monstrously adverse. The budget deficit increased from a modest £11,000,000 in 1930–31 to £60,000,000 in 1932–33, and £107,000,000 in 1933–34, which was twenty-five per cent of the total national revenue. The preparations for the Abyssinian campaign, before the war began, cost two thousand million lire, or roughly £33,000,000. The Italian gold reserve was halved; Mussolini, who had sworn to defend the lira to the 'last drop' of his blood, was forced in effect to leave the gold standard. In London in December the lira was selling at an eight per cent discount, with forward quotations forty per cent off for three months; in other words, the banks were willing to bet any person any amount of money that the Italian national currency would have depreciated thirty-two per cent by early spring.

Now it is quite true, as H. R. Knickerbocker and Dorothy Thompson have pointed out, that under dictatorships the economic laws which apply in democratic countries may be simply suspended. Hitler or Mussolini can do tricks with money that are impossible under orthodox *laisser-faire* capitalism. Economics under Hitler and Mussolini became purely a political question; the only issue was how long the people would bear the merciless strain of dictatorial manipulation. Even so, the internal situation of Italy, towards the end of 1934 and the beginning of 1935, contributed to make an 'external diversion', so popular among dictators, necessary. The very reasons why he should not have made war were those

H1645-0230

why Mussolini did. 'It was not a question of whether he could afford to fight, but whether he could afford not to.'

I do not think, however, that Mussolini (who like Hitler is not much interested in economics) was prompted to war exclusively by economic factors. They were immensely buttressed by politico-nationalist considerations.[1] Mussolini is not the man who thinks of countries or frontiers predominantly as functions of economic stresses. His mind much more directly seized on territory as a symbol of political prestige. One should never forget the secret treaty of London, which tempted Italy to break the Triple Alliance and enter the War on the side of the allies. By that treaty Italy was promised more spoils of victory than it got.

Mussolini's foreign policy was, on the whole, a failure. He had a difficult double job to perform; Italy, one of the victor powers, wanted treaty revision just the same. The French blocked him off from Tunis; his penetration of Albania was a costly and not very lucrative experiment; his Four-Power Pact, an attempt to form a sort of twentieth century Holy Alliance on quasi-revisionist grounds, was still-born; he extended his sphere of influence to Austria and Hungary only at the price of losing German friendship; he played the wrong side in the Arabian wars; he tried to keep the Balkan pot boiling, and was defeated by a Balkan Pact virtually uniting Jugoslavia, Rumania, Turkey, and Greece against him.

But politics alone might not have sufficed to cause the war. The climate of Fascism is high and strenuous. Like all dictators, Mussolini was 'a prisoner of prestige'. He had to keep on doing something. Hitler was stealing far too much space from him in world headlines. He was *personally* a warrior and imperialist; he talked of 'imperialism as the eternal and immutable law of life'.[2] Every rational or objective consideration told Mussolini, a strikingly intelligent man, that the Abyssinian war was a difficult and dangerous business. It had long been a truism in European politics that Italy was permanently condemned to dependence on Great Britain,

[1] Nationalism is, of course, partly an economic phenomenon.

[2] Also he knew that an Italian generation had grown to manhood *since* the Great War, ignorant of its horrors, and fed on bellicose threats and promises; then too war might solve his unemployment problem.

because of its exposed coastline and the control of the Mediterranean by the British fleet. Mussolini flouted this truism. An interesting example of the importance of personality, perhaps of megalomania, in politics. The Duce was not alarmed by the pessimistic reports of the geologists in Abyssinia. He knew what its chief crop was – glory.

'Upon What Meat Has This Our Caesar Fed?'

Mussolini himself would lift an eyebrow at it, but parenthetically one should quote the following manifesto by the well-known Italian futurist, F. T. Marinetti, called 'War Has a Beauty of Its Own':

> 1. Because it fuses strength and kindness. Strength alone tends to cruelty and kindness to debility, but the two together 'generate solidarity and generosity'.
> 2. Because it assures the supremacy of mechanised man, equipped with gas-masks, megaphones, flame-throwers, and tanks, over his machines.
> 3. Because it begins the long-dreamed-of 'metalisation' of man.
> 4. Because it completes the beauty of a flowery meadow with its machine-guns, 'passionate orchids'.
> 5. Because when the symphony of rifle fire and artillery bombardment stops, the songs of soldiers can be heard and the perfumes and odours of putrefaction can be perceived.
> 6. Because it 'genially remoulds terrestrial scenery' with its inspired artillery.
> 7. Because it creates new architecture, such as the heavy tank.
> 8. Because it exceeds in violence the battles of the angels and the devils.
> 9. Because it definitely cures man of individual fear and collective panic, with a refined and stylised heroism.
> 10. Because it rejuvenates the male body and renders the female one more desirable.
> 11. War has a beauty of its own because it 'serves towards the aggrandisement of the great Fascist Italy'.
>
> – (*Manchester Guardian*, November 15, 1935.)

Another factor was that intangible and elastic concept known as national 'honour'. The same factor, we have seen, helped bring Hitler power in Germany. Italians, despite Mussolini, still smarted under the humiliation of Adowa where the Abyssinians had massacred them in 1896, and of Caporetto, where the Austro-German army had broken through in the worst defeat suffered by a western power in the Great War.

H1645-0231

Mussolini, like Hitler, was avenging an earlier degradation, returning to Italy, as on a bloody salver, its self-respect.

The Dogs of War

Why did Mussolini choose Abyssinia? For the simplest of reasons, that Italy grew up too late to join the other imperialist powers picking colonial fruit, and Abyssinia was the only territory left. Why had Abyssinia been spared the colonial 'attentions' of Great Britain and France? Because it was a country where settlement by Europeans was costly, where the wealth of natural resources was dubious, and where, above all, peculiarly impregnable warrior tribes made military conquest difficult. Dislike of the Italian campaign should not make anyone think that the Abyssinians are a gentle or charming people.

As to difficulties of settlement, the following excerpts from an article in the *New Republic* (August 7, 1935), are illuminating:

> 'An Italian settler going to Ethiopia to engage in farming would need to take with him complete supplies, including building materials for his home. Ethiopia could not serve as an outlet for Italy's surplus population unless the government heavily subsidised each emigrant. For about forty years, Italy has made sporadic attempts to colonise Eritrea, which, in the uplands, resembles much of Ethiopia. The present European population of Eritrea is 4,565, most of whom are government officials. . . .
>
> 'There is another drawback to mass emigration to Ethiopia – with an estimated native population of ten million. Many natives develop into highly skilful workmen, as has been demonstrated on two Belgian coffee plantations already established there. . . . Throughout Africa, the individual white farmer, depending on his own labour, has never succeeded in competing with the native worker under white management. An Italian peasant farmer in Ethiopia would either drop to the native standard of living or starve to death.
>
> 'In attempting to use Ethiopia as a source of raw materials, Italy will be confronted with its obdurate geography. . . . For years adventurous white men have prospected in Ethiopia and tried to interest European capital in their supposed discoveries. None of them[1] has yet told a story convincing enough to obtain backing. . . .'

[1] Except Francis W. Rickett, whose oil concession of August 31, 1935, was shelved.

H1645-0232

But Abyssinia's 'obdurate' geography did not prevent the great powers from the usual imperialist aggressions. As far back as 1891 and 1894, Britain and Italy set up 'spheres of influence' in Abyssinia; that of Italy was not very valuable, but the British sphere included the Lake Tsana region, from which flow the headwaters of the Blue Nile, which irrigates the Sudan and Egypt. In 1906, although Abyssinia's independence was recognised by Italy, a Tripartite agreement formally partitioned the country into French, British, and Italian spheres; this was a typical pre-War imperialist treaty. Abyssinia protested against it, but no one paid attention.

In 1915 the secret treaty of London, mentioned above, provided that 'in the event of France and Great Britain increasing their colonial territories in Africa at the expense of Germany, those two powers agree in principle that Italy may claim some equitable compensation, particularly as regards the settlement in her favour of the questions relating to the frontiers of the Italian colonies of Eritrea, Somaliland, and Lybia'.

Abyssinia entered the League of Nations in 1923, with France and Italy as her godmothers. Italy was particularly eager to press Abyssinian membership, in order to forestall suspected encroachments in Ethiopia by Great Britain. This was a frightful mistake of Mussolini's. Anyone who tries to hoodwink the British suffers for it – in the long run. Had not Abyssinia been a member of the League, the British could not have mobilised world opinion to harass Italy in the 1935 war.

In 1925 Sir Austen Chamberlain and Mussolini negotiated an agreement confirming their respective spheres of influence in Abyssinia. Referring to this document, Mussolini angrily stated in September 1935, that 'it divided – you understand me – virtually *cut up* Abyssinia'. The British wanted to build a dam near Lake Tsana. In return for Italian approval and support, they promised 'to recognise an exclusive Italian economic influence in the west of Abyssinia' and to support an Italian project for a railway through Abyssinia connecting Eritrea and Somaliland. But Abyssinia was a member of the League in 1925 and the Emperor Hailé Selassié (then the Regent) protested so vigorously at Geneva that the agreement lapsed.

In 1928 Italy signed a treaty of 'friendship, conciliation, and

H1645-0233

arbitration' with Abyssinia. In Article Two, each government pledged itself 'not to take any action detrimental to the independence of the other'. Then seven years passed, until Mussolini struck.

The initial incident, that of Walwal on December 5, 1934, was called a 'frontier' squabble, but in reality, as even Italian maps showed at the time (they have been hurriedly changed), Walwal is about a hundred miles from the Somaliland border, well inside Abyssinian territory. The fight began when a joint Anglo-Abyssinian frontier commission discovered an Italian military detachment camped at Walwal. The British retired; the Abyssinians fought. Thirty-two Italians, one hundred and ten Abyssinians were killed. This was probably the pretext Mussolini was waiting for; at any rate a flaming ultimatum, in the Corfu manner, descended on Addis Ababa; the Duce – it was all very 'pre-war' – demanded that the Abyssinians apologise, salute the Italian flag, and pay £20,000 indemnity.

What happened thereafter is well known. The British Empire began to move.

Albion Perfide?

Mussolini must have assumed that Great Britain would not object to his adventure. Otherwise it is doubtful if even the Duce would have launched it. It seemed in December 1935 that Britain and Italy would come to some sort of amicable arrangement of the affair, but prospects of a *complete* old-fashioned partition of Abyssinia had been dimmed by the extraordinary events of the summer, when the British fleet filled the Mediterranean and Italy and Britain were on the edge of war. The British may allow Mussolini to retain some Abyssinian territory; but not as much as he had wanted by a good deal.

Mussolini accuses the British of having seriously misled him. On January 29, 1935, he sent Signor Grandi to the Foreign Office, 'inviting the British Government to consider specific agreements for a harmonious development of the Italian and British interests in Ethiopia'. He was, he said, willing to 'table his case'. The British answered 'evasively'. The Foreign Office did not, apparently, look with favour on

H1645-0234

the Duce's proposal; on the other hand it seems to have given no very definite warning of opposition.

When it became clear that Britain was opposing him and lending the immense weight of its influence to the League, Mussolini began to storm and bluster. He snarled at one interviewer that he was 'not a collector of deserts',[1] when the Committee of Five proposed minor territorial adjustments. He threatened to leave the League 'at once' if sanctions against Italy were applied; and did not do so. While Eden, Laval, and Aloisi put their heads together in Paris, he mounted a howitzer shouting encouragement to his Black Shirts, saying that he would go forward 'with Geneva, without Geneva, or against Geneva'. Sir Samuel Hoare made a historic speech to the League assembly, pledging Britain to 'collective maintenance of the Covenant in its entirety, and particularly for steady and collective resistance to all acts of unprovoked aggression'.

Mussolini's reply to this was twofold. First, he proceeded with the war, and on October 3 invaded Abyssinia. One of his rare hypocrisies, he claimed that Hailé Selassié was the aggressor, who, as Vernon Bartlett ironically put it, 'by ordering withdrawal of his own troops in his own territory, had committed a provocative act'. Second, he issued a series of tumultuous statements and interviews which, for Mussolini, were remarkably plaintive in tone.

'We are on the march,' he told the *Morning Post*. 'It is too late now to tell us to stop. . . . Look at Portugal, and Belgium, and Holland. They all have fruitful colonies. Surely Italy must have fruitful colonies too. As soon as we get such colonies, Italy will become conservative, like all colonial powers. . . .' To the New York *Sun* he complained: 'Why are we condemned for what you yourselves do whenever the need arises? You never hesitated about war when your interests were involved. Think about Mexico and Cuba and your own civil war between North and South. How did the United States end slavery?' He said in one speech, 'The wheel of destiny moves towards a goal – the rhythm has become faster

[1] He told Ward Price of the *Daily Mail*, 'I got 110,000 square miles of Sahara desert from the French a little while ago. Do you know how many inhabitants there are in that desolate area? Sixty-two!'

H1645-0235

H1645-0236

and cannot now be stopped. An attempt is being made to commit the blackest injustice against Italians, that of refusing them a little place in the sun. Until it is proved to the contrary, I refuse to believe that the people of Great Britain wish to shed their blood and to drive Europe towards catastrophe to defend a barbarous country unworthy of ranking among civilised peoples.'

He foamed with rage at England. Britain, he did not need to point out, while sitting on roughly one-quarter of the world, while dominating an empire of 450,000,000 people (384,000,000 of whom represent coloured races), was frustrating his tiny adventure, a colonial adventure of the kind that Britain had herself so many times indulged in. It was no use trying to explain to him that the British Empire was built up before the War, that the Covenant of the League of Nations put a different face on the piracy of new territory. Britain had fought the Boer War. Britain suppressed the 320,000,000 people of India. Britain had not stopped Japan in Manchuria. Mussolini raged.

And indeed others than Mussolini were able to assemble a list of British imperialist adventures.

From 1788 till 1925 Great Britain fought, it was calculated, approximately twenty campaigns or wars to keep the route to India open.[1] The British fought Napoleon on the Nile, at Trafalgar, at Aboukir, and indirectly in Copenhagen, which they wantonly bombarded. The British intrigued in Egypt, annexed Aden, invaded Abyssinia, penetrated Persia, and joined the Turks against Russia in the Crimean War. The British acquired Cyprus, extended their control of Egypt, advanced into the Sudan, and fought the Great War to prevent the German *Drang Nach Osten*.

In October the French newspaper *Gringoire*, an organ of the Right, published an article entitled 'Should England be Reduced to Slavery?' Its unamiable strictures caused a minor diplomatic incident, and M. Laval apologised to the British ambassador. 'England's policy,' murmured the *Gringoire*,[2]

[1] Britain was not, of course, the only country with an imperial policy. The United States of America in the same period acquired Texas, the Panama Canal, the Philippines, etc.

[2] Janet Flanner's translation in the *New Yorker*.

'consists of troubling the earth so that she can rule the seas. . . . I think English friendship the most cruel present the gods can give a people. When I see England, the Bible in one hand, the League of Nations Covenant in the other, upholding the cause of the weak or righteous, I can't but believe she has her own reasons. . . . I have seen His Majesty's police slashing Egyptian students in the streets of Cairo. I saw the Lord Mayor of Cork dying in London in a criminal's cell. I saw convicts, disguised by Lloyd George as soldiers, shooting down the Balbriggan martyrs at their cottage doors. . . . Is it indispensable for human happiness that the route to India be British?'

Recently the *New Leader* printed a list of 'independent territories' which the British Government has annexed since 1870. Baluchistan. Burma. Cyprus. Wei-hai-Wei. Hongkong. Koweit. Sinai. North Guinea. South Guinea. East Guinea. Solomon Islands. Tonga Islands. Sudan. Uganda. British East Africa. British Somaliland. Zanzibar. Transvaal. Orange Free State. Rhodesia. British Central Africa. Nigeria. In addition the British Empire was in effect enlarged by mandated territories acquired by the peace settlements of 1919. Palestine. Transjordan. Tanganyika. Togo. Cameroons. South-West Africa. Apparently the British themselves began to think this was a little too much. And the Italians greeted with interested scepticism Sir Samuel Hoare's careful hints in his Assembly speech of September 11, 1935, that colonial raw materials were inequitably distributed.

Sanctions

British policy in regard to sanctions that might be applied to Italy for violation of the Covenant of the League of Nations[1] did not become clear till late in the teeming summer of 1935. At the beginning the government took no strong line to *prevent* war. 'It was,' wrote the anonymous author of *Inquest on Peace*, 'passionately sincere in its desire that the lion and the lamb should lie down together. But it was hazy whether the lamb ought to be outside or inside the lion.' Once Mussolini had committed himself too far to go back, with a hundred thousand troops in Abyssinia, British

[1] For the League itself see Chapter Thirty-one below.

H1645-0237

H1645-0238

policy sharpened. The Admiralty filled the Mediterranean with warships, and Eden pushed economic sanctions at Geneva. Thus it was commonly bruited about that the British were 'out to bust' the Duce. This was far too blunt a way to put it. What happened was that Britain was perplexed by the difficulty of the decision it had to make. Its policy, founded on a double negative, was equivocal. It did not want a war; at the same time it did not want permanently to affront Mussolini. On the one hand, the British disliked the rupture of peace entailed by the Abyssinian campaign; on the other they did not want to rupture the collective security system by forcing Mussolini out of the League, and into the hands of Hitler.

Germany, as always, remained the chief preoccupation of British foreign policy in Europe. A perfectly good case for or against sanctions against Italy may be made with only the German imperative in view. One may favour sanctions, on the ground that vindication of the League system and a sound setback to Mussolini in Abyssinia will discourage Hitler from breaking the peace later. Or one may oppose sanctions, on the ground that they will weaken Italy, shake up Central Europe, and give Hitler an excellent chance to expand and profit.

There was also the question whether Britain could stop Mussolini without risking a much bigger war than the Abyssinian one. The British cabinet was divided on this issue. Mussolini himself provoked a preliminary decision against Italy, by rashly filling Lybia with Italian troops and giving the impression of Italian designs on Malta and Egypt. The British fleet did not concentrate in the Mediterranean until after at least several Italian divisions, for no purpose connected with the actual campaign in Ethiopia, had been sent to Lybia and Cyrenaica. This was probably the worst of all Mussolini's mistakes.

The reasons for the sanctions policy finally adopted were, roughly, the following:

First, as indicated above, the Abyssinian crisis was interpreted as a 'final' test of the League system. The issue was quite clear, whether the League would go into the discard for good, or be made to work. The very fact that Japan in Man-

H1645-0239

churia had successfully defied the League made it the more necessary for the League powers to assert themselves against Mussolini. Defiance of the Covenant had occurred, without penalties, in distant Asia. Ethiopia – in Africa – was nearer home. Let the Italians succeed in Ethiopia, and aggression would break out in Europe next. Sanctions against Italy were in effect sanctions against Germany later.

Second, the British Dominions, which since the Statute of Westminster have the right to secede from the British Empire, and which are bound together only by the symbol of the crown, were vigorous in support of sanctions policy. There was plenty of idealism at Geneva in September and October in 1935, and Canada supplied a fair share of it. It became clear to the seasoned and wary brains of Whitehall that the League of Nations might turn out to be an inestimably valuable agency for keeping the Empire solid.

Third, liberal opinion in England, which hates Fascism, was eager to down Mussolini on moral-political grounds.[1]

Fourth, an extraordinary informal plebiscite, the 'Peace Ballot', was taken in June in England by the League of Nations Union, under the powerful leadership of Lord Cecil. 11,500,000 people voted, and no fewer than 10,088,000 of them favoured economic and non-military sanctions against an aggressor, and actually 6,748,000 were willing to support, 'if necessary', military sanctions. Now the average total vote in a British general election is only about 20,000,000; obviously the government could not afford to dismiss this registry of opinion by one half of the electorate. The Peace Ballot greatly strengthened the hands of the pro-sanction members of the cabinet, like Anthony Eden, and confounded those like MacDonald who disliked the League. Lord Cecil, as it was shrewdly put forward, became the potential leader of the opposition to Baldwin; with over ten million voters, he could go a long way toward embarrassing the government if it showed tendencies to make a dishonourable settlement with Italy.

[1] Dean Inge, writing to *The Times*, expressed his fear of this. 'I think all friends of the League,' he wrote, 'should beware of their involuntary association with socialists who care nothing for Abyssinia or the League, but who wish to embroil us with Italy because they hate and fear Fascism. If Russia were attacking Afghanistan they would sing a very different tune.'

Fifth, the labour party, the official opposition, obligingly and overwhelmingly approved a sanctions policy.

Sixth, General Smuts pointed out that the Abyssinian war might be interpreted in Africa and elsewhere among British colonies as a war between white and black, something disastrous to British interests.

Seventh, it seemed that Germany, anxious to keep British good opinion, would not wantonly sabotage League sanctions.

Eighth, public opinion in the United States of America vigorously advocated action against Italy.

Ninth, British imperial interests, as outlined above, became involved. Idealism and what is called 'character' play a certain role in British policy, but idealism alone would not have prompted the extraordinary vigour of British response to Italian aggression. Idealism plus Egypt, the Red Sea and India turned England against Italy. The conflict was between an old and surfeited and a new and untried imperialism. As soon as Mussolini began to mass troops near Egypt, the British jumped.[1] Sir Samuel Hoare – till he lost his job – was the luckiest foreign minister in modern times; he was able to write a policy in which idealism and imperialism exactly coincided. Not only God, but the British route to India, was on his side.

Sanctions started, however, slowly and half-heartedly. At the beginning oil was not included in the embargo, and British companies actually furnished some of the petrol feeding Count Ciano's planes. And it was clear that, if Mussolini should confess himself partly beaten and throw his hand in, the British – with *their* sphere of interest in Abyssinia still untouched – would give him easy terms. The 'mad-dog' view of Mussolini is held in some British quarters, but not all. The Foreign Office would not like to see him crash, if the result were to be anarchy – or socialism – in Italy.

And at no time up to the end of 1935 were *military* sanctions – or closure of the Suez Canal (which would have stopped the war instantly) – contemplated by the British. In December Hoare and Laval arranged a compromise, which promised Italy a good deal as a bribe to call off the war. But the

[1] At Geneva the story went that 'S. d. N.' (*Societe des Nations*) really stood for 'Source du Nile'.

H1645-0240

pressure of Lord Cecil's peace balloters and certain Tory influences like that of Sir Austen Chamberlain forced the British Government to give up the scheme, and Hoare, pitched overboard like a 'blood sacrifice', resigned.

Around the Field

The Abyssinian adventure had percussions on every country in the world. Mussolini became a world statesman – at last.

In France the Protean Laval, as we have seen, desperately sought to avoid the call to sanctions. He did not want to weaken Mussolini, his ally; he did not want to offend his friends and supporters on the French Right, who adore the Duce. His final gamble was desperate. If, Laval said in effect, the Left threw him out of office on the sanctions issue, the lads in the Croix de Feu might make a coup.

In the U.S.S.R. sanctions found full if uneasy support. Reason: the application of Article Sixteen of the Covenant was a tremendously important precedent. If Germany or Poland should attack the U.S.S.R. in the east, it could claim collective defence through the League.

Germany, of all powers, greeted the Abyssinian adventure with some satisfaction, because Hitler stood to gain no matter how it turned out. If Mussolini won his war, the vitality of Fascism was vindicated. If he lost, Germany's dangerous rival in Central Europe was eliminated. So Hitler sat aloof – and waited.

Mussolini, a reckless and powerful gambler, set the Italian people on new paths. But the future of Italy, like that of Germany, depends on the British Empire. The cruel and youthful obstreperousness of the Fascist States must sooner or later come into conflict with the mature vitality of England. So now we pause in this counter-clockwise tour of Europe and turn to Britain.

H1645-0241

CHAPTER XVI

ENGLAND: THE RULING CLASSES

'England is not to be saved by any single man.'
– WILLIAM PITT.

'This royal throne of kings, this sceptred isle,
This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars,
This other Eden, demi-paradise. . . .'

AT one and the same time, England, a puzzling nation, is the world's firmest monarchy, strongest oligarchy, and freest democracy, and its empire is the only one that survived the War. It is also an island of country houses, built on a foundation of coal, which, in spite of the strenuous difficulties of the age, remains prosperous. Two per cent of the property owners of England own sixty-four per cent of the national wealth. These persons comprise a fluid and impregnable ruling class, or caste, which is one of the most remarkable phenomena of the world to-day.

It was produced partly by geography; it supports itself by ownership of land or by trade in all the markets of the world; it pays service to conscience and religion; the House of Commons and the House of Lords are its clubs; it believes in freedom of speech and the democratic process; it responds very sensitively to public opinion; among its bastions are the Navy, the Bank of England, and the civil service; it lives in public schools and country houses; its empire is its greatest pride.

The ruling classes absorb an acutely disproportionate share of the national income and of economic power. Take, for instance, the land of London. One peer owns no less than two hundred and seventy acres in the West End. Only about forty thousand of the eight million inhabitants of London own any land at all, and the really valuable slices are in the hands of about twenty men.[1] There are about one hundred thousand men and women in England with incomes

[1] See Hugh Dalton, *Practical Socialism for Britain*, p. 151.

H1645-0242

over £2,000 per year, who take sixteen per cent of the national income; there are eighteen millions whose wages, under £250 per year, are only fifty-six per cent of the national income. Of those who die in England, 'only one in four leaves as much as a hundred pounds' worth of property'.

The House of Commons represents a considerable concentration of wealth; a writer in the *Sunday Express*, found, for instance, that in 1934 170 members of the House of Commons held 650 company directorships. One M.P. had 34. The *New Statesman* recently published an analysis of the occupation of the 729 peers who comprise the House of Lords. 246 owned land. 112 were directors in insurance companies, 74 in financial or investment houses, 67 in banks, 64 in railway companies, 49 in shipbuilding or engineering companies, and so on. Interestingly enough, of the 729 peers, 371 or more than half, never once spoke in any debate in the House of Lords from 1919 to 1931; 111 of them never voted in a single division; the average number taking part in a division was 83.

The most important basic fact in British public and political life is geographical. The British Isles are islands. And, as the schoolboy put it in a famous definition, 'an island is a piece of land entirely surrounded by the British navy'. The English, a mixed race – composed of Angles, Saxons, Jutes, Romans, Normans, Teutons, Celts – grew up and coalesced in comparative isolation. Since Elizabeth they have been free from intrusion by others and were free to intrude themselves upon others. And their island heritage gave them a long view, because for generations they looked out to the sea. Geography has produced, in this imperial race, some magnificent provincialisms. Two or three winters ago a heavy storm completely blocked traffic across the Channel. 'CONTINENT ISOLATED', the newspaper posters couldn't help saying.

The weather has in fact – the same thing is true of many countries – been an important political factor. In Austria, for instance, as I shall try to show when we reach Central Europe, the enervating *Föhn* is responsible for many of the eccentricities of Austrian behaviour. So in England, fog and damp have chilled the national bones. I know that from one point of view the English climate is the finest in the world,

H1645-0243

because, as it has proudly been pointed out, you can play golf almost every day in the year; you may get wet, but you *can* play. The Englishman has his umbrella within reach almost from birth; growing up, he is conditioned to preparation for any emergency, not merely those in the realm of climate. The British Empire was the inevitable result of geographical and meteorological factors; anyone who has survived a few London winters knows why the Empire Builders sought the sun.[1]

England produces only about three-fifths of the food it needs and only about twenty per cent of the raw materials which it transforms into manufactured goods for all the markets of the world. But it is a country rich in the right things – coal and iron and steel. It is, of course, the most highly industrialised state in Europe. It produces so much wealth that roughly forty per cent of its trade is export trade. And it gives the world not only steel and shoes, cotton shirts and locomotive engines, razor blades and cantilever bridges, but ships, insurance, and financial services. I have mentioned the disproportion in individual British incomes. But the national income as a whole is much greater than that of any other European country; according to G. D. H. Cole, it is £87 per capita in England, as against, for instance, £46 for Germany, £43 for France, and only £28 for Mussolini's Italy.

The ruling classes make most of their money by trade. Some members live on the land, but trade is the predominant national occupation. 'The British,' it has been written, 'are serious about their trade. It is the one thing in life they are serious about. In England's case, uniquely, God and Mammon *are* one. Mammon's appetite is tempered by the knowledge that honesty is the best (paying) policy. God is goodness, justice, love, mercy, and five per cent on a sound investment.' Factors of many sorts contribute to make trade respectable and profitable; as Douglas Jerrold wrote referring to older days, 'No consideration of social justice must interfere with the right to buy cheap and sell dear.' Britain is one of the few countries in the world where the use of the Union Jack, the national flag, is permitted in the advertising of com-

[1] And a psychologist might say that the national instinct for the accumulation of wealth is associated with the concept of the *rainy* day.

H1645-0244

mercial products. Even the Crown Jewels pay interest; to see them in the Tower you pay sixpence.

For six days a week the Englishman worships at the Bank of England, and on the seventh day at the Church of England. For religion is a powerful force on the side of the ruling classes. Uniquely among modern nations, the country has a national church, 'an island religion', serving this one people. Associated with it, drawing strength from its cool and privileged ritual is the factor of morality. The standard of public life in England is the highest in the world; honour and idealism play a part in politics that the suspicious foreigner finds it difficult to understand. Honour and idealism do, of course, correspond as a rule with practical interests. The Germans not only broke a treaty by invading Belgium; they shot an arrow toward the channel ports. But the fact remains, as a diplomat of consequence remarked to a friend of mine, 'England is the most dangerous country in the world, because it is the only one capable of going to war on behalf of another country.'[1]

The ruling classes believe in freedom, in democracy, partly because, as Trevelyan says, freedom and democracy are so much more *efficient* than despotism. The English people, like the French, have paid a high price for freedom; to gain freedom they had to shed the blood of kings. The execution of Charles I made great inroads on the English conscience, and the constitutional privileges and prerogatives of parliament are, to this day, zealously guarded. One is astounded in reading English history to note the great number of men who had their heads chopped off for freedom. English democracy is conservative, and the Englishman defines the word 'conservatism' quite literally; it means to conserve things. Nothing but a great fire can destroy anything in England.

The parliamentary tradition of Westminster is the envy of the world; and with reason. In a dictatorship, the individual exists as a servant of the state; in democracies, the state is theoretically the servant of the individual. No Englishman forgets

[1] One may point out, on the other hand, that few of the many Britons who were profoundly shocked morally by the Abyssinian war noted that at the same time an army of no fewer than thirty thousand Anglo-Indians were 'cleaning up' the Afridis on the North-West frontier of India. Not that the two cases were analogous.

H1645-0245

this. And, as Stanley Baldwin said in one of his most famous speeches, England has had only ten years of dictatorship in the past three hundred years. The English parliamentarians play the game in the grand manner. After an election the opposing candidates shake hands, exactly as if it had been a game of tennis. When Baldwin became prime minister for the first time, one of the first things he did was to call on Lord Oxford, his most eminent adversary, to ask advice.

Most Englishmen, of course, prize England above party: which is one reason for British capacity for self-government. When a prominent Tory, like Lord Curzon, dies, the labour members eulogise him in the House of Commons. During the General Strike of 1926, as everyone knows, Welsh strikers and police took Sunday off to play football.

Even the poorest of the poor are loyal. Visitors from abroad to the Tyneside and Durham are incredulous that poverty of such miserable proportions does not produce revolution. There are two millions of unemployed in England, and of them perhaps a million can never hope to get jobs again; but not only is the thought of revolution an absurdity, but a good proportion of the unemployed vote conservative instead of labour. One reason is the fear of the middle classes that labour is not 'experienced' enough to form a successful government. Another is the social insurance and paternalistic legislation of modern England; the country buys off unrest by paying £2,000,000 per week to support the unemployed.

The instruments of domination by the ruling classes are several. There is, for instance, the Admiralty, which is a law unto itself. There is, for instance, the Bank, which, as Hugh Dalton says, is 'a most peculiar institution'. The elasticity of the nobility, which constantly enriches itself by vulgar blood, is another factor. So is the public school – the fetish of the 'old school tie'. Of the fifty-five members of the British cabinet and junior ministers, no fewer than sixteen went to Eton, six to Harrow, and seventeen to other public schools of recognised quality.[1]

'When the call came to me to form a government,' Mr.

[1] Of the ninety-seven ministers who have been in the cabinet since the War, forty went to either Oxford or Cambridge. But a university career is not quite so important ritualistically as education in a great public school.

H1645-0246

Baldwin has written in *On England*, 'one of my first thoughts was that it should be a government of which Harrow should not be ashamed. I remembered how in previous governments there had been four or, perhaps, five Harrovians, and I determined to have six. To make a cabinet is like making a jig-saw puzzle fit, and I managed to make my six fit by keeping the post of chancellor of the exchequer for myself. . . . I will, with God's help, do nothing in the course of an arduous and difficult career which shall cause any Harrovian to say of me that I have failed to do my best to live up to the highest ideals of the school.'

Another instrument of rule is the country house. No one should think that a group of aristocratic plotters spend the week-end putting their heads together for conspiracy or mischief. It is ever so much more casual and less sinister than that. But suppose that the editor of a great newspaper wants to meet a promising labour politician. The country house, like that of the Lady Astor at Cliveden, is the perfect place. Wealthy and influential people, often bored with their formal duties, go to the country in order to get out of London, the ugliest and most uncomfortable city in the world; they invented the long week-end to stay away as long as possible. Their *métier* is politics; they talk politics; and they make politics, quite spontaneously.

The Tories, it was explained to me when I arrived in London, make a practice of lassoing the best brains in England. When someone arises with brains who is not a Tory, the Tories promptly attempt to appropriate him. Social flattery is an excellent weapon. It was the country-house system that helped to divert Ramsay MacDonald from nationalisation of the mines to nationalisation merely of the cabinet. One must be to the country house born. Otherwise, it goes to one's head, feet, and tongue. Let any really intelligent and vigorous champion of the Left arise, and presently he will find his way thorny with the invitations of the rich.

Newspapers are also a powerful instrument of rule. The ruling classes pay little attention to Lord Rothermere of the *Daily Mail* or Lord Beaverbrook of the *Daily Express*, the 'Press lords' of the nineteen-twenties, who, for all their shouting – and despite Beaverbrook's impish attractive personality

H1645-0247

– are nowadays without conspicuous influence. Their ill-advised campaign to wreck Baldwin proved to be a boomerang. But Geoffrey Dawson, the editor of *The Times*, is certainly one of the ten most important people in England. And J. L. Garvin of the *Observer* is a potent influence, even though he took the unpopular side in the Abyssinian war.

Then consider the civil service, which is the incorruptible spinal column of England. My office boy, if he were reasonably presentable and adaptable, could conceivably fill the office of chancellor of the exchequer or minister of war; the permanent staff would carry on. Men like Sir Robert Vansittart, the permanent head of the Foreign Office, and Sir Warren Fisher, the head of the treasury, are among the characters who really rule England. About most of these all-but-anonymous men – Vansittart, who has published belles-lettres and poetry, is an exception – little is known. They avoid the limelight. They flourish in the shadows. And their power is immense. Consider, for instance, the indispensable quality of a man like Sir Maurice Hankey, whose very name is unknown to millions, but who combines in his person the posts of secretary to the cabinet, secretary to the privy council, and secretary to the committee of imperial defence. What is more, other Vansittarts, other Fishers, even other Hankeys, shadows behind shadows, are continually in course of training, to take over their masters' jobs after retirement. No man is indispensable. The mechanism is self-perpetuating.

England is a thicket of stylistic difficulties, and the ruling classes are able to entrench themselves behind a massive hedge not only of privilege but of tradition. In no country may a man be so easily penalised for *gaucherie*; and a young M.P. told me the other day that it had taken him about two years to master the intricacies of parliamentary procedure. What is one to say about a country where the 'Lord' Privy Seal may be a commoner, where the King's youngest son only became a peer after his marriage, where the monarch may not even enter the House of Commons? The English constitution is not a document. No British M.P. may resign (he must make application for the 'Chiltern Hundreds'). And the prime minister gets no salary as prime minister!

The ruling classes employ propaganda far more artful than

H1645-0248

any ever dreamed of by Dr. Goebbels. They often stoop to censorship, but always in the quietest possible way; it is usually censorship not by ukase but by voluntary conspiracy. Every editor in Fleet Street knew, for instance, the approximate strength of the British Fleet in the Mediterranean last summer; but no one printed it, not even the opposition papers. The method of persuasion is the only one employed. 'Look, my dear fellow,' an official of the Foreign Office may say, 'I can't ask you to do this for me, but it would be awfully decent if you would.'

The ruling classes, by virtue of the single-member constituency system, gerrymander elections in a manner which, if it happened in Bulgaria or Turkey, would make liberal editors explode in indignation. In the 1931 'National Government' election for instance, the Baldwin-Simon-MacDonald coalition got 556 seats for 14,500,000 votes, whereas the opposition, with the quite respectable total of 7,200,000 votes, got only 59 seats. In the election of November 14, 1935, the government polled only fifty-four per cent of the votes cast, but got 428 seats out of 615. If the voting had been by proportional representation, the government's majority would have been 48 instead of 250. But as it happened, the opposition got no less than forty-six per cent of the total poll – and was condemned to impotence for another four or five years.

The ruling classes, finally, despite the misery of the 'Special' Areas, have produced not only complete political stability but a striking measure of industrial recovery. There were Cassandras in the middle twenties who said that Britain was 'done'; they were wrong. Together with domestic strength came a renewal of predominance in international affairs. Britain, which had been tempted towards isolation by imperial preoccupations, joined once more, in full voice, the concert of European powers. And as if to strengthen his hand in the turbulent period that faced him, Baldwin cautiously inaugurated a modest programme of rearmament, called 'national defence'.

Miscellany

Among many other forces and counter-forces, players and counter-players, in the broad arena of English political life:

H1645-0249

Cricket and the ritualistic attitude to fair play that it has produced.

The nonconformist conscience.

The decline in the birth-rate, which, according to competent estimates, will reduce the population to thirty-three million by 1985.

Personalities like the Very Rev. W. R. Inge, the former Dean of St. Paul's, General Critchley, the patron of greyhound racing, and Lord Dawson of Penn, the King's physician.

The bold and irreverent cartoons of David Low, the greatest caricaturist in the world.

The open forum in Hyde Park, something unique and cardinal.

The father-to-son tradition in politics; not only does Randolph Churchill seek to follow Winston, but labour politicians pass on their hopes and aspirations: the son of Arthur Henderson is in the House of Commons. So are Lloyd George's children.

The publishing house of Victor Gollancz, Ltd.

The fact that politics are the first profession of the land.

Letters to *The Times*.

Willingness of party or personality to admit defeat, and play the game loyally thereafter. Winston Churchill fought his own party's India Bill with magnetic persistence for a number of years; soon after it became law he re-entered the party fold.

The rule of thumb.

Economists of various breeds: J. M. Keynes, Sir Arthur Salter, Sir Josiah Stamp, Sir Walter Layton.

The formidable severity of English law.

An ingrained pacifism in the younger men, who dislike their former military titles. Captain Duff Cooper, the new minister of war, is Mr. Duff Cooper; Captain Anthony Eden is Mr. Anthony Eden; Captain Ormsby-Gore, the attractive first commissioner of works, is Mr. Ormsby-Gore. Some years ago Major Walter Elliot went so far as to issue an announcement saying that he was to be known thereafter as Mr. Walter Elliot.

The intelligence service of the Admiralty.

Professor Harold J. Laski.

The death duties.

H1645-0250

The radicalism of many Oxford and Cambridge undergraduates.

The tradition of venerableness. A politician may be still a promising young man at fifty-five. Mr. Baldwin some time ago referred to the 'tender age' of one of his parliamentary secretaries, a stripling of forty-two. Baldwin himself did not enter the House of Commons until he was forty-one.

The habit of the Archbishop of Canterbury occasionally to write to *The Times* appealing for public prayer in regard to a political issue, e.g. in February 1935 when the India Bill was nearing completion.

The fantastic number of humanitarian societies.

The cathedral close.

Clubs.

Automatic anaesthesia to strictures from foreigners.

The Federation of British Industries.

The apparent disposition of women to have an Oedipus Complex on their fathers. The British is a masculine civilisation. Women wear mannish clothes; they hunt foxes; they are fierce parliamentarians.

The village pub.

The tradition of what is 'done', and the fact that everybody who is 'in' has known everybody else since childhood.

Imperialism, which extends beyond Empire bounds. Portugal for instance is almost as much in the British sphere of influence as Ireland. So – following the return of George II of the Hellenes – will be Greece.

Punch.

The high salaries paid judges, members of the cabinet, and ambassadors.

Inner Circle?

One should not be tempted to think that the ruling classes comprise a body which could meet in a room, elect a chairman, and perform the organic functions of domination. England possesses no close, tight oligarchy like that represented by the regents of the Banque de France. One might say that a certain number of persons comprise an 'inner-ring', for instance Mr. Baldwin, Lord Tyrrell (former ambassador to Paris), Lord Dawson of Penn, Geoffrey Dawson of *The Times*, Neville

H1645-0251

Chamberlain, Lord Derby, Montague Norman, and Sir Maurice Hankey. But no two observers would agree on the names to be included, Baldwin aside. The 'ring' is not a ring in other words: at least not a fixed immutable ring. Indeed the great strength of the ruling classes is fluidity. One may be a member of one of the oldest aristocratic houses in the British Isles, and yet not be 'in'; mere wealth has very little to do with privilege; brains alone are not enough; character may be.

Royal Family

Unlike most modern kings, the unassuming man of seventy who occupies the throne of England has made history. He was not ambitious as a youth, and the dominating note in his character has been a sound and cautious common sense. No one who has ever met him could dislike him, and his servants of state respect his kindness and his severe sense of public duty. The King is a great expert in the art of inspiring every man to do his best.

He made history, first, by supporting Mr. Asquith in the great struggle with the House of Lords in 1910, by agreeing to create enough new peers to inundate the old aristocracy, if the Lords persisted in their refusal to accept the 'People's Budget' of the Commons. Second, he 'sent for' Baldwin instead of Lord Curzon in 1923 to succeed Bonar Law as prime minister, and thus paved the way for the long Baldwin premiership later. The next year, though labour could form only a minority government, he named Ramsay MacDonald prime minister, making possible the first Socialist Government in British history. When, the story goes, a member of the court asked him how he regarded it, he replied, 'My grandfather would have hated it; my father would have tolerated it; but I march with the times.' Finally, on his own initiative the King travelled from Balmoral to London on August 22, 1931, in the middle of the financial crisis, and persuaded MacDonald to form a National Government.

The King – considerable tribute to the stability of British politics – had only five prime ministers in the twenty-five years of his reign which were celebrated by the Silver Jubilee last May. The Jubilee, silver in name, was worth its weight

H1645-0252

in gold. Not only did it symbolise the return of comparative prosperity to Britain (and incidentally bring millions of pounds in trade to London), but it expressed with great brilliance the affection with which the nation regarded the Royal Family. No one who saw them is likely to forget the multitudes in the streets around Buckingham Palace those warm May evenings, waiting for a glimpse of King and Queen. The King himself was intensely touched, and, since he is a modest man, astounded at the colossal mass emotion his presence evoked. The origins of the Jubilee are obscure. There was no precedent for the celebration of the twenty-fifth anniversary of the accession of a monarch. No one, when the matter was first discussed in the House of Commons, anticipated the depth and range of celebration that occurred.

The King is of great political importance, not only because he is a firm constitutionalist in domestic affairs, but by the fact that since the Statute of Westminster his person is the chief link between England and the Dominions. The Palace is a gyroscope stabilising the machinery of government. It is, naturally, the ultimate citadel of the ruling classes. To be invited to Sandringham or Balmoral is still the supreme honour that can befall a British politician. The men who rule England live in widening concentric circles around the throne.

H1645-0253

H1645-0254

CHAPTER XVII

BALDWIN

'Is Mr. Baldwin the luckiest of incompetent politicians or the subtlest of competent statesmen?'

– WICKHAM STEED.

'Mr. Baldwin has the Englishman's genius for appearing an amateur in a game in which, in fact, he is a superb professional.'

– HAROLD J. LASKI.

'Dictatorship is like a giant beech-tree – very magnificent to look at in its prime, but nothing grows underneath it.'

– STANLEY BALDWIN.

STANLEY BALDWIN, the most powerful of contemporary European democrats, is an example of the triumph of character over circumstance. This man was so obscure fifteen years ago that a very prominent leader of the conservative party confessed that he didn't know Baldwin by sight when he became prime minister.[1] To-day he is in the middle of a career which may be Gladstonian, at least in length. The simple secret of his power is that people trust him – or at least they did until the Abyssinian peace plan fiasco.

Stanley Baldwin is certainly not an 'intellectual'; neither is he strikingly clever nor energetic. But he is the personification of John Bull: solid, sober, ponderous, the embodiment of *substance*. Baldwin is sixty-eight, and no one has ever seen him excited. Nothing has ever flustered him; he speaks only when speech is necessary; he is unshakable in his mild convictions. 'The spiritual home of Stanley Baldwin,' it has been written, 'is the last ditch.'

But Baldwin is more than a mere John Bull; he is, as a friend who knows him well told me, a sort of Scandinavian mystic. He gropes rather than thinks; no one ever reached decisions by less ratiocination. He responds to emotion easily,

[1] Baldwin himself records that 'a well-known lady of society' asked one of his friends, 'Is the new prime minister what you would call an educated man?'

H1645-0255

and is capable of arousing strong emotion in even English listeners. But he is a profound puritan. Half the strength of his character comes from 'spiritual' values.

Career

Baldwin was born at Bewdley in Worcestershire – the constituency he represents to-day – in 1867. His father, Alfred Baldwin, was chairman of the Great Western Railway and head of Baldwins Ltd., one of the great iron works of England; the Baldwins founded the company and had operated it for four generations, since the middle eighteenth century. Baldwin is a typical Englishman: that is to say, his mother was of Scotch descent, his father Welsh. His maternal grandfather, a Wesleyan minister, G. B. Macdonald, was an ardent prohibitionist, who wrote tracts against alcohol. Of his mother's sisters, one married the painter Burne-Jones, another Sir Edward Poynter, and a third was the mother of Rudyard Kipling. Baldwin and Kipling are first cousins.

Baldwin has described[1] how he failed in the entrance examinations for the Fourth Form Room at Harrow. He was disappointed, but, he says, 'I got over it in subsequent years when I learnt that two of the most distinguished men in public life to-day had shared my fate.' One was F. E. Smith, who later became Lord Birkenhead. Baldwin, reminiscing, said that it was the first time he had ever been classed with first-class brains. This was, of course, an effective retort to the brilliant but unstable Birkenhead, who had scoffed at Baldwin once, saying his brains were 'second-class'. After Harrow Baldwin proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he was thoroughly inconspicuous. 'I did nothing at the university,' he records. And in one of his speeches he said, 'I attribute such faculties as I have to the fact that I did not overstrain them in youth.' Far cry from Trotsky or Mussolini!

He entered his father's iron foundry and no record exists of any public speech or activity for almost twenty years. 'I lived in a backwater,' he says. His father died in 1908, vacating the parliamentary seat he had held since 1892; the younger Baldwin, at the age of forty-one, succeeded to it in a by-election.

[1] Perhaps not altogether seriously, he wrote once that one of his early ambitions was to be a blacksmith.

H1645-0256

He waited for four months to make his maiden speech in the House of Commons; it was in opposition to the eight-hour day for miners. He was so little noticed that Hansard, as if detecting no difference between father and son, called him 'A. Baldwin' by mistake. In his first nine years in the House he made only five speeches.

When the Canadian-born statesman Bonar Law became chancellor of the exchequer in 1916 he made Baldwin his parliamentary private secretary. This, the legend said, was because Bonar Law knew that Baldwin was too honest to intrigue against him, and not clever enough to get in trouble. In reality he was suggested to Bonar Law by a Scottish conservative M.P., J. C. C. Davidson, an old friend of Baldwin's. In 1917 Baldwin was promoted to be financial secretary of the treasury – the threshold to the cabinet – on Davidson's recommendation. Bonar Law, according to Wickham Steed,[1] at first demurred. 'He doubted whether Baldwin deserved ministerial rank or "carried enough guns" for the job.'

After the War occurred the famous incident of the letter to *The Times*, wherein Baldwin announced his intention of anonymously donating one-fifth of his fortune to the state. The letter was signed with the intials 'F.S.T.', and Steed records that Baldwin's card was enclosed; but no one for some time guessed that 'F.S.T.' stood for Financial Secretary of the Treasury, and the editor of *The Times* kept the secret well. The letter is of such importance to an understanding of Baldwin's character that it should be given in full:

> SIR,– It is now a truism to say that in August 1914, the nation was face to face with the greatest crisis in her history. She was saved by the free-will offerings of her people. The best of her men rushed to the colours; the best of her women left their homes to spend and be spent; the best of her older men worked as they had never worked before, to a common end, and with a unity and fellowship as new as it was exhilarating. It may be that in four and a half years the ideals of many became dim, but the spiritual impetus of those early days carried the country through to the end.
>
> To-day, on the eve of peace, we are faced with another crisis, less obvious, but none the less searching. The whole country is exhausted. By a natural reaction, not unlike that which led

[1] In *The Real Stanley Baldwin*, an acute and dispassionate study.

H1645-0257

to the excesses of the Restoration after the reign of the Puritans, all classes are in danger of being submerged by a wave of extravagance and materialism. It is so easy to live on borrowed money; so difficult to realise that you are doing so.

It is so easy to play; so hard to learn that you cannot play for long without work. A fool's paradise is only the ante-room to a fool's hell.

How can the nation be made to understand the gravity of the financial situation; that love of country is better than love of money?

This can only be done by example, and the wealthy classes have to-day an opportunity for service which can never recur.

They know the danger of the present debt; they know the weight of it in the years to come. They know the practical difficulties of a universal statutory capital levy. Let them impose upon themselves, each as he is able, a voluntary levy. It should be possible to pay to the Exchequer within twelve months such a sum as would save the taxpayer fifty millions a year.

I have been considering this matter for nearly two years, but my mind moves slowly; I dislike publicity, and I hoped that someone else might lead the way. I have made as accurate an estimate as I am able of the value of my own estate, and have arrived at a total of about £580,000. I have decided to realise twenty per cent of that amount or, say, £120,000, which will purchase £150,000 of the new War Loan, and present it to the Government for cancellation.

I give this portion of my estate as a thank offering in the firm conviction that never again shall we have such a chance of giving our country that form of help which is so vital at the present time.

Yours, etc.,

F.S.T.

An unfriendly critic would have to decide for himself what other considerations, if any, beside patriotism, prompted Baldwin to this extraordinary letter. Did he not know that the secret of his identity was bound to be revealed, with resultant publicity *wie noch nie*? Had he not, possibly, a pang of conscience that Baldwins Ltd., like all similar firms, had boomed during the War, and was he not protecting himself from a possible charge by his inner self of profiteering?[1]

In 1921 Baldwin reached cabinet rank as president of the

[1] Very few people followed Baldwin's lead in surrendering part of their fortunes to the treasury. The total realised was less than half a million pounds.

Board of Trade; he was as mute in cabinet as in the Commons. Then in the next year the turning-point of his life occurred. The Lloyd George coalition was breaking up; the conservative party split on whether or not to continue support of the prime minister, and Bonar Law and Baldwin led the dissidents who chose revolt. By rashly threatening a war with Turkey Lloyd George had made his position especially vulnerable. But he was sufficiently a 'dynamic force' to exercise strong fascination on the bulk of the conservatives. A meeting was called at the Carlton Club to consider the position. In an astonishing speech Baldwin (Bonar Law was ill) turned the tide against Lloyd George; the Tories withdrew their support from the government, and Lloyd George has been out of office ever since.

Baldwin's Carlton Club speech should be quoted in part:

> 'A dynamic force is a very terrible thing; it may crush you, but it is not necessarily right.
>
> 'It is owing to that dynamic force [Lloyd George] that the liberal party, to which he formerly belonged, has been smashed to pieces; and it is my firm conviction that, in time, the same thing will happen to our party. . . . I think that, if the present association is continued, the old conservative party will be smashed to atoms and lost in ruins.
>
> 'I would like to give you just one illustration to show what I mean by the disintegrating influence of a dynamic force. Take Mr. (now Sir Austen) Chamberlain and myself. Mr. Chamberlain's services to the state are infinitely greater than any that I have been able to render, but we are both men who are giving all we can give to the service of the state; we are both men who are, or who try to be, actuated by principle in our conduct; we are men who, I think, have exactly the same view on the political problems of the day; we are men who, I believe – certainly on my side – have esteem and, perhaps, I may add, affection for each other; but the result of this dynamic force is that we stand here to-day, he prepared to go into the wilderness if he should be compelled to forsake the prime minister, and I prepared to go into the wilderness if I should be compelled to stay with him. . . . I do not know what the majority here or in the country may think about it. I said at the time what I thought was right, and I stick all through to what I believe to be right.'

Thus one of the most obscure public men in England brought down Lloyd George through a largely moral and emo-

H1645-0258

tional appeal. The lumbering tortoise tripped the bright sharp fox – and the era of Versailles was over.

Baldwin became chancellor of the exchequer in the conservative Bonar Law cabinet that replaced Lloyd George, largely because in the attenuated Tory ranks (Chamberlain, Churchill, Birkenhead, Sir Robert Horne, departed with Lloyd George) no one else was available for the job. He went to America and, faithful to the conviction that the Briton pays his bills, negotiated a debt settlement on what in England were considered extremely onerous terms. Bonar Law, horrified, said that the agreement would depress the standard of living in England for a generation. Baldwin thought that he would lose his job. Bonar Law summoned him and talked it over with George Harvey, the American ambassador. Baldwin's political life, as Steed puts it, was at stake. 'Never once did he open his mouth,' Harvey said; 'not the slightest attempt did he make to defend himself or the settlement he had accepted.'

Bonar Law was too ill to work and early in 1923 resigned. He recommended no one to be his successor, and the King had to decide between Lord Curzon, the foreign minister, and Baldwin. He chose Baldwin, both on personal grounds and because labour had become the largest opposition party, which made it almost impossible for the prime minister to be in the Lords. Curzon was stunned. 'Not even a public figure,' he wailed, referring to Baldwin. 'A man of no experience. And of the utmost insignificance!' Baldwin received journalists after he had visited the palace. 'I don't need your congratulations,' he said, 'but your prayers.'

'The Methodist Machiavelli'

Baldwin sees few people nowadays; Worcestershire, Downing Street, and Chequers circumscribe his life. The chief personal influence on him is undoubtedly his wife, Lucy. Even if he should want to do so, he would have small chance of straying from the strict line of nonconformist probity while his wife was at his side. Once at least it was her firm character which kept him from resigning the headship of the party, when the attacks of the Press lords had depressed him. The

H1645-0259

Baldwins' son, Oliver, a vigorous socialist, has been a political grief to them.

The prime minister usually lunches and dines alone; he is not what you would call gregarious. Of his friends most are youngish men, political protégés more or less known as 'Baldwin's men'. One is Anthony Eden; the prime minister wrote an introduction for Eden's book of travel. Another is Duff Cooper, who fought a tremendous by-election at St. George's, Westminster, in 1931, when the issue was Baldwin's leadership of the party. Another is Geoffrey Lloyd,[1] formerly his parliamentary private secretary, now under-secretary in the Home Office.

Baldwin writes all his own speeches; he is supposed never to read the newspapers; his favourite reading is Thucydides; he takes no exercise; he smokes a pipe. The pipe has become, of course, the symbol of his 'personality', but ten years ago, before the Baldwin legend grew, caricatures usually portrayed him pipeless. He always has enjoyed a pipe; now he *has* to smoke one, and on all occasions.

'The pose of simplicity,' Professor Laski wrote, 'which Mr. Baldwin affects ought to deceive no one; a simple man has never been prime minister of England. His pigs and his pipe are simply the technique of propaganda. Like the orchid of Mr. Chamberlain or the ringlets of Disraeli, they create an image which the multitude can remember, and they give a satisfaction to innumerable followers who believe that a common interest in pigs and pipes is a permanent basis of political adequacy.'

Most of his life the prime minister has seemed to show bad conscience about the responsibilities of wealth. He opposed the eight-hour day; but he paid out of his own pocket the wages of workmen at Baldwins Ltd., during a post-War stoppage. He is apt to think of industrial management as a personal responsibility of employer to labour, as a manorial business within family walls. His government passed the Trade Union Law of 1927, 'the first legislation hostile to trade unions in over a century of British history'; but his extreme Tory opponents have called him a socialist. Steed records as

[1] Oswald Mosley referred to Lloyd as 'Baldwin's little private jackal' when Lloyd vigorously denounced Fascist violence at Olympia.

H1645-0260

characteristic 'both of his generosity and his love of doing good by stealth' a remarkable incident when Baldwin, tramping in Gloucestershire, overheard two old ladies discussing how they could scrape enough money together to maintain an asylum for feeble-minded girls. He collected two hundred dirty one-pound notes, wrapped them in a bit of old newspaper, and sent them to the ladies with a purposely badly-written letter as a gift of 'a passing vagabond'.

He has his salary as first lord of the treasury, £5,000 per year; but he has to live, he says, on capital and borrowings. In May, 1928, he said: 'For every shilling I had when I took office I now have something less than a penny,' and his remark that he exists 'on an overdraft' has been widely quoted. Yet, according to the *Sunday Express*, (May 12, 1935) he held 181,526 ordinary shares in Baldwins Ltd., and 37,591 preference shares, which at the market price at the time were worth roughly £100,000. No one, of course, knows what his obligations may be. He has no expensive hobbies. The things he likes best are books.

A familiar criticism of Baldwin is that he is lazy. Another is that he is sly. Another, less made now than formerly, is that he is too supine, too 'passive'. His meekness at times has been, indeed, astounding. He told a friend once that the cabinet took what he thought was a wrong line, but he allowed himself to be overruled: 'Winston came along with his hundred horse-power brain, and what was I to do?'

When really aroused, however, he can make mincemeat of his enemies. It takes a great deal of unpleasantness to stir him to protect himself; when he does so, he is irresistible. Twice he has surmounted major crises within the party, once when the Press lords sought by every possible means to deprive him of the leadership; second, a less overtly dramatic but inwardly more serious struggle, when Churchill and some of the greatest dignitaries of the party sought to oust him because of his liberal attitude to India – liberal, at least, compared to theirs.

He moves slowly; but it didn't take him long to get rid of Simon as foreign secretary and replace him by Samuel Hoare. In November 1935 he dropped Lord Londonderry from the

H1645-0261

cabinet; and the great reception in Londonderry House traditionally given on the eve of the opening of Parliament did not occur. Londonderry had been severely heckled during the election campaign for a remark he had made as air minister and which pursued him with ghoulish zest. Referring to the disarmament conference, he told the House of Lords, 'I had the utmost difficulty at that time, amid the public outcry, in preserving the use of the bombing aeroplane even on the frontier of the Middle East and India.'

Baldwin disappointed the hopes of that rare adventurer Winston Churchill of inclusion in the cabinet. Churchill's speeches in the campaign were in his best flamboyant style, and he pointed vigorously to the peril of German rearmament. But Baldwin, cautious, knew that however valuable Churchill would be in vitalising matters of defence, his presence in the government might be a diplomatic liability. Baldwin did not want a full-blast arms policy. Also his majority was so great that he didn't need the support of Churchill's wing of diehards.

Baldwin is no backslapper; he has described his discomfort at the electioneering expected from him in his first contest and which he erased from his soul by reading Horace or the Odyssey every evening. He dislikes rhetoric; but he is capable of a good deal of it. He confesses that he is of a 'somewhat flabby nature', who always 'prefers agreement to disagreement'; but the Quaker strain in his blood would make him go to the stake, he says, rather than give up a principle. Rather enviously he quotes Seneca to the effect that 'a strong man matched with fortune is a sight for the gods to witness'. His speeches harp again and again on the loss to Britain of the generation killed by the War which should now be the flower of public life. And he says, 'Success is not necessarily a matter to which you should devote your whole life.'

Baldwin seldom promises anything unless he is sure he can make the promise good. This is one source of his power. He is almost quixotically generous; for instance he made Malcolm MacDonald, Ramsay's son, secretary for colonies when Ramsay gave up the premiership. He is loyal: never did he intrude on Ramsay's prerogatives as prime minister during the first phase of the National Government, although he, Baldwin,

H1645-0262

held the real power. He is capable of great detachment; for instance, during the election campaign of November 1935 he paused to make a speech on peace, in fulfilment of an engagement made long before, in which he gave at least the impression of having eliminated the electoral struggle from his mind. His political discernment is vivid; he was the first man to seize on and dramatise the new phase of international relations which accompanied Hitler's rise to power, by his speech stating that Britain's frontier had become the Rhine. Finally, he stays put. As Lady Oxford said, 'We know where we are with him, and that *he* is where he is.' And, above all, he is one of the shrewdest politicians alive.

One of his early speeches, delivered to the Classical Association in 1926, gives insight to his character:

> 'I remember many years ago standing on the terrace of a beautiful villa near Florence. It was a September evening, and the valley below was transfigured in the long horizontal rays of the declining sun. And then I heard a bell, such a bell as never was on land or sea, a bell whose every vibration found an echo in my innermost heart. I said to my hostess, "That is the most beautiful bell I have ever heard." "Yes," she replied, "it is an English bell." And so it was. For generations its sound had gone out over English fields, giving the hours of work and prayer to English folk from the tower of an English abbey, and then came the Reformation, and some wise Italian bought the bell . . . and sent it to the Valley of the Arno, where after four centuries, it stirred the heart of a wandering Englishman and made him sick for home.'

Three Times Prime Minister

His first premiership, in 1923, lasted less than a year; he was feeling his way, with only a slim majority, and decided to go to the country – to the horror of most of his colleagues – on the issue of protection. The country was not ready for tariffs; he was turned out of office. It was during this administration that he made the remarkable statement, 'Well, having been prime minister will have been an interesting experience to have had.'

Ramsay MacDonald formed the first Labour Government and lasted only a year; the Zinoviev letter crushed him and Baldwin returned to the premiership with a tremendous

H1645-0263

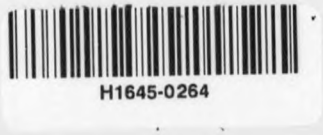
majority; his first act was to forgive his enemies in the party, and bring Churchill, Birkenhead, Chamberlain back from the wilderness and give them his best portfolios. He was in office from 1924 to 1929, by which time his majority had dwindled away; he went to the country on a 'Safety First' slogan – which was strange politics – and was roundly beaten.

The 1924–29 administration has lessons for the student because in 1935 Baldwin similarly held office with the promise of power for five uninterrupted years. The example of 1924–29 is not auspicious. The prime minister, who hardly seemed interested enough in his job to keep a grip on things, succumbed to inertia, to muddle, to bad advice. He mishandled the coal situation, which is insoluble except on the basis of nationalisation of royalties, and reaped the harvest of the General Strike. He flirted with a project to 'reform' the House of Lords, viz., make it stronger, so that J. L. Garvin covered acres of space in the *Observer* calling his government 'Doomed!' His foreign secretary, Sir Austen Chamberlain, signed the Locarno Treaties, but otherwise the government's foreign record was a list of blunders. It threw over the Geneva protocol, humiliated Germany by delaying her entrance to the League, encouraged Mussolini in Albania and Abyssinia, signed the Kellogg Pact only after drawing the life out of it, annoyed the United States by the Anglo-French naval compromise, and botched the Geneva naval conference so badly that Lord Cecil resigned from the government in protest.

But when Baldwin became prime minister again in 1935 he had an immense majority once more. His manœuvre in calling an election on November 14, in the very middle of a grave international crisis when the people were inevitably bound to support a strong, 'safe', government, was called vulgar; but it was, of course, shrewd politics. And the results were a great tribute to Baldwin personally. The people were not voting so much for the Tory party or for the National Government; they were voting for a man. And for the thing Baldwin said he stood for – peace.

Oratory

His cousin Rudyard Kipling, Steed has said, is wont to


H1645-0264

twit Mr. Baldwin by calling him the 'literary member of the family'. Certainly the prime minister has a considerable gift of phrase. 'Rhetoric which filled the bellies of his people with east wind,' was his description of a speech by Kerensky, and in one address he described how a prime minister 'sees human nature bare as a pole'. And certainly he knows, speaking, exactly how to sound the note precisely appropriate to his audience; his addresses, two volumes of which have been published,[1] typify the English tradition which unites statesmanship and literature.

He speaks often of the function and virtues of democracy. For instance:

> 'The great task of this generation, in my view, is to save democracy, to preserve it and to inspire it. The ideal of democracy is a very fine one, but no ideals can run of themselves, and if democracy is to be preserved and yield the fruits that those who believe in it would fain see, the only way it can be done is by all the individuals, according to their power, equipping themselves sufficiently to keep the whole mass sweet and true, and to preserve in their plenitude and sanity the ideals that inspire them.'

England, he said once, has never sought a second Cromwell. But it may yearn for other Baldwins.

His reputation, however, was disastrously shaken by his muddled handling of the Hoare-Laval 'peace plan' crisis in December 1935.

[1] *On England* sold 26,000 copies at the original price.

H1645-0265

H1645-0266

CHAPTER XVIII

MEN OF WHITEHALL

The Débâcle of MacDonald

'What we have to do is to pile up and pile up and pile up the income of the industry in this way and that way and the other way.'
– Mr. MACDONALD, quoted in the *Manchester Guardian.*

'Because thou art neither cold nor hot will I spew thee out of my mouth.'
– Quoted at Seaham Harbour by LADY HOUSTON.

JAMES RAMSAY MACDONALD, the creator and the despoiler of the labour party, despicable or heroic as you choose, a man of Olympian or Stygian loneliness, was born in Scotland in 1866 of obscure parentage. The fact of his humble origin has been of profound psychological importance in his career. All his life he sought compensation for the miserable poverty of his boyhood. When, according to Philip Snowden, he became prime minister of the National Government and chuckled, 'To-morrow every duchess in London will be wanting to kiss me,' he was no more than finally squaring the accounts of his arduous and unhappy youth.

The record of his career until and during the War was conspicuously honourable. He left school in Scotland when he was fourteen to earn a living; penniless in London, he found a job in a warehouse, working as a clerk for 12s. 6d. a week; he studied science and economics at night. On August 3, 1914, he had courage enough to stand up against the whole House of Commons and denounce the War. He seemingly ruined his political career; even now extreme Tories like Lady Houston, in the *Saturday Review,* print with objurgation the socialist manifesto, which he prominently signed, urging support of the Russian revolution in 1917. During the War a ship's company threatened to strike rather than carry MacDonald, a militant pacifist, to the Stockholm peace congress. He was forced to resign from his golf club at Lossiemouth; his

meetings had to be protected by the police. And, be it noted, in those days the bulk of the socialist party deserted *him*.

Twice MacDonald owed great good fortune to chance. In 1900, the story goes, 'Mr. James R. MacDonald' was elected secretary of the newly-formed labour representative committee, which later became the labour party. But many of the delegates, according to the *Daily Herald* (February 27, 1932), were under the impression that they were voting for a *different* MacDonald – one Jimmie MacDonald, a prominent member of the London trades union council. The name proposed was J. MacDonald. Two J. MacDonalds were present. Mr. J. Ramsay MacDonald won.

More than half a generation later, in 1922, he was elected leader of the party in parliament by a majority of two over J. R. Clynes, and thus, as leader of the opposition, he became prime minister the next year. The Clydesiders, radicals from Glasgow, supported him because they thought he would undertake a genuinely Left policy. He was, indeed, when he first reached the premiership, a picturesque and challenging personality. His rich Scottish eloquence, his instructive air of leadership, his poise and parliamentary skill, his undoubted courage and facility in negotiation, made him – the first labour prime minister in British history – a world figure. And at the Foreign Office he joined Herriot to inaugurate a new era in post-War affairs by a peaceful policy toward Germany.

But even within his own party, even in the early days, MacDonald was not popular. 'He was never,' Robert Bernays wrote,[1] 'at ease in the world he had conquered.' Inordinately proud and vain, he walled himself off from his subordinates; the story is told that he never spoke even to Arthur Henderson, his worthy second in command, except in cabinet. 'No prime minister of modern times has been on less intimate terms with his colleagues.' Like Woodrow Wilson he could not bear criticism. And his followers began to complain of his 'insufferable superiority'.

MacDonald, born without much sense of humour, a creature of angular and obstinate desires, with a highly oblique vision of his fellow men, full of Scotch mists and tempests,

[1] *Great Contemporaries*, p. 260.

H1645-0267

H1645-0268

required, above all, adoration. And adoration was hardly the emotion he could inspire in his hard-headed and individualist colleagues. His wife, whom he had worshipped, died in 1911; he was an extremely lonely man. It was inevitable that he should turn to 'society'. He was 'taken up' by people like the Londonderrys, and few things mattered to him more than lionisation.

He became capable of profound ridiculousnesses. In 1929, *en route* to visit the United States, he is said to have wirelessed London for advice as to what he, the first socialist prime minister, should wear at the reception. The Foreign Office, terrified that he might step off the boat in a deerstalker hat or leather stockings or something else he would consider appropriate, wirelessed back that a top hat and morning coat would see him through.

In 1935, after the Stresa conference and when he was prime minister in the National Government, he warmly shocked a group of quite friendly journalists by asking them to leave the public restaurant-car until he had concluded his dinner. Everybody was hungry, but Ramsay, rolling towards Geneva, wanted to be alone.

A 'National' Government is a convenient device by which the leading party exploits a crisis by giving other parties representation in the cabinet, but on disadvantageous terms. Its result is permanently to split and weaken the opposition; it rubs down party lines, but maintains the pretence of comprehensive party support. MacDonald became prime minister in the first National Government in 1931. Possibly he thought that his labour colleagues would follow him *in toto*. Probably he didn't much care if they did or not. They didn't.

The financial crisis of 1931 was caused, basically, by the shrinkage of British exports and the decline of British shipping and overseas investments. The City of London had borrowed money on short-term, and lent it on long-term; it made money by paying three per cent on loans from France, and receiving six per cent on it from Germany. This process was a happy one until Germany, caught by the crisis, could not repay; London found itself with only £55 millions in gold, and with £250 millions in immediate outstanding liabilities. The London bankers might, they thought, save themselves by

a loan from New York, but Wall Street refused to advance credit until the British budget, swollen by perfectly legitimate expenses of the social services and the famous but misnamed 'Dole', should be balanced. MacDonald went to the country on a promise to stick to gold and clean house. Campaigning, he descended to un-British demagoguery by exhibiting German banknotes of the inflation period, and threatening that presently a million British pounds would not suffice to buy a postage stamp. The country, frightened, gave him immense support. And then the cabinet was forced to do just what MacDonald had sworn it never would do. Britain devaluated her currency.

The National Government, of which Baldwin and not MacDonald soon became the leading power, helped to kill the disarmament conference, and repudiated the American debt; the world economic conference held under its auspices was a grisly failure. On the other hand, it revolutionised British tariff policy by introducing protection, which stimulated industrial recovery; it inaugurated a sort of empire customs union by the Ottawa agreements; it converted £2,000 millions of War Loan bonds from five to three and a half per cent.

Midway in his administration MacDonald's health began to fail. His eyesight troubled him, and he became seriously ill.

At about this time an incredible woolliness became noticeable in his public utterances.

Regarding unemployment, he described the problem to the House of Commons as follows:

> 'Schemes must be devised, policies must be devised if it is humanly possible to take that section (i.e., those unemployed who are unlikely shortly to be reabsorbed into industry) and to regard them not as wastrels, not as hopeless people, but as people for whom occupation must be provided somehow or other, and that occupation, although it may not be in the regular factory or in organised large-scale industrial groups, nevertheless will be quite as effective for themselves mentally, morally, spiritually and physically than, perhaps, if they were included in this enormous mechanism of humanity which is not always producing the best result, and which, to a very large extent, fails in producing the good results that so many of us expect to see from a higher civilisation based upon national wealth.
>
> 'That is a problem that has got to be faced.'

H1645-0269

H1645-0270

Regarding disarmament, he told the general committee of the disarmament conference the following:

> 'You are faced with the problem of what to do in respect to this question, to that question, and to the other question, but perfectly obviously, after you have faced the more superficial aspects of the separate questions, you want to know in relation to a complete plan what you are actually giving and what you are actually getting. Therefore, when the departmental, or compartmental, exploration has gone on to a certain extent it cannot be finished until somebody, co-ordinating all your problems, sets out in one statement and declaration the complete scheme that this Conference can pass in order to give security, to give disarmament, to give hope for the future – until that scheme has been placed before you, you cannot complete your examination of compartmental problems and questions. . . .'

Lady Astor asked him in the House if he would consider appointing a woman to the front bench. He replied:

> 'I should be very glad not only to have one in the administration, but half a dozen, and if my Noble Friend will find that there are not quite so many, or even perhaps worse than that, I, having made that statement to her and given her that assurance, am perfectly certain she will not blame me for the result.'

Mr. Churchill, during these unhappy days, called MacDonald 'the boneless wonder'; the prime minister, he said, possessed the 'gift of compressing the maximum of words into the minimum of thought'. Trotsky, be it remembered, has accused MacDonald of 'complete mental bankruptcy'; he called him a 'sober and timorous curmudgeon, in whom there is as much poetry as in a square inch of felting'.

MacDonald had by this time seemingly lost all traces of socialism. He was howled down by his former colleagues, during the Means Test debate, as a 'mountebank' and 'a swine', 'a low, dirty cur who ought to be whipped out of public life'. He spent his time alone, brooding, or in the parlours of the rich. At a public dinner he once excused himself with the remark, 'I am sorry to leave this congenial company, but I must preside at a Coal committee.' And the wits said, 'Ramsay has finally succeeded in nationalising something – the government.'

One sentiment is to his credit; in the spring of 1935 he took a strong line against Hitler; he realised how dangerous Germany was becoming. But apparently it was not only the persecution of pacifists or socialists like (theoretically) himself in Germany which turned him against the Nazis, but – a more or less emotional consideration – his horror that the German Government had executed two handsome and aristocratic women spies.

In November 1935 MacDonald was beaten for re-election at Seaham – to the relief of some millions of his countrymen.

Hoare

Rather arch, rather delicate, bookish, fond of sports like ice-skating, Sir Samuel Hoare, until recently the foreign minister, gives an impression of primness which his inner character belies. He was an active air minister; he flew twice to India and back. As secretary of state for India he wrote the India bill, the longest in the history of the British parliament; with supernal industry he answered 15,000 questions about it, made 600 speeches, read 25,000 pages of reports and participated in a debate which lasted seven and a half years and comprised 15,500,000 words in Hansard, which is equivalent to twenty books the size of the English Bible.

Moreover, during most of this labour, his chief antagonist was Winston Churchill, the most accomplished and tenacious debater in the House of Commons.

Hoare became foreign minister in June 1935, partly because Baldwin knew his abilities, partly as reward for his prodigious Indian labours. The bill itself, a typically Baldwin measure, was a middle of the road affair. It outraged Indian nationalists and diehard Tories both, by extending a measure of self-government to India while retaining the essentials of British control.

Mr. Gandhi liked Hoare, because, as he said, Hoare said No when he meant No, instead of evading direct statement with pious platitudes, as MacDonald did. The great Indian leader once told Lord Irwin, the former viceroy, whom he deeply admired despite their political antagonism, 'You know, I trust that man Hoare as I do you' – which was as high a compliment as existed in Gandhi's vocabulary.

H1645-0271

Hoare comes from an old banking family. He learned rudimentary Russian (his teachers were the translators to the then Imperial Russian Embassy in London and the cantor of the Orthodox Church), and went to Russia during the War, as a member of the British Intelligence Service. He was so expert at his job that – as he himself revealed in a speech in 1933 – the Czar accused him of foreknowledge of the murder of Rasputin. Hoare left Russia in February 1917, and went to Italy with Lord Milner, as a general staff officer. After the War he spent some time in Czechoslovakia and he has been president of the Anglo-Czech Society in London. Meantime, he has uninterruptedly been a conservative M.P. for Chelsea since 1910.

Hoare's literary affiliations with France are close. I read in the *Evening Standard* recently that his wife's grand-aunt, Aimée de Coigny, inspired André Chenier's *La Jeune Captive*. Like the permanent under-secretary, Vansittart, he is widely read in French literature, and he speaks French well. He mildly startled the House of Commons in October 1935, by being the first foreign minister ever to quote Marcel Proust there. Emotionally, Hoare is very much closer to the French than to the Germans; and considerations like these are apt to play a certain role in policy.

. . . . . .

British foreign policy, which is extraordinarily constant, changing little (as Hoare himself recently said) from generation to generation, is based, broadly speaking, on the concept of the balance of power with Britain holding the balance. 'All our greatest wars,' Sir Austen Chamberlain put it, 'have been fought to prevent one great military power dominating Europe, and at the same time dominating the coasts of the channel and the ports of the Low Countries.' Trevelyan has said, 'From Tudor times onwards, England treated European politics simply as a means of ensuring her own security from invasion and furthering her designs beyond the ocean.' In modern times, following this policy, Britain has tended, when France was stronger than Germany, to support Germany; when Germany was stronger than France, to support France. Since the War the League of Nations has been a convenient mechanism to this end; if the League ceases to serve British

H1645-0272

purpose, Britain ignores it. Since, with great shrewdness in 1919, Britain obtained the entrance of the Dominions (and India) into the League as separate States, she is always able to dominate its deliberations. Before the War it was a cardinal principle of British politics not to commit the nation to any action on the continent in regard to hypothetical future contingencies. This has been changed by the Treaty of Locarno, which, a perfect example of balance of power politics, pledges Britain to defence of either Germany or France, depending on which country is the subject of aggression. All these considerations are, of course, dominated by the principle of Pax Britannica; Britain, a great trading nation, wants peace. When the sanctions crisis arose, as Walter Duranty put it, 'the British did not want a war to such a degree that they were prepared to fight to avoid it'.

Another and very curious minor factor should be mentioned. It causes much puzzlement to observers on the continent. The British think even of foreign policy as a sort of game. Unlike the Germans or the French, to whom politics is a matter of life or death, the British are capable of extreme detachment in the direction of their complex foreign affairs. Europe is a sort of stage; the play that is going on *is* a play. And if someone misses his cue, or blunders with his lines, the average Briton always assumes that the drama is merely in rehearsal, and can be played over again – better.

Roughly there are two groups in the Foreign Office. The first comprises pro-leaguers who are idealists. They hope through a system of collective security to bring Germany into the amicable concert of great powers. They view war as a literal horror; the Abyssinian crisis meant to them the collapse of moral law in Europe. The second group, mostly represented by older men, are willing enough to give the League a bit of rope, but they distrust the efficacy of the collective security principle, and put their hopes in (1) a powerful navy, and (2) isolationism. The opinions of this group served to encourage Germany, because isolation – non-interference in Europe – is tantamount to taking the German side.

Strong pro-German influences exist in England, even since the dictatorship of Hitler. Here is a summary of them:

(*a*) Many Tories fear Bolshevism, and stupid ones think of

H1645-0273

H1645-0274

Hitler as a sort of guarantee against future encroachments westward on the part of Russia. England and Germany should be allies against Russia, the great communist enemy. Moreover, Russia has always been a 'traditional' foe; communism serves to make it doubly dangerous.

(*b*) The City of London, with enormous investments in Germany, allows itself to be dazzled by the brilliance of Dr. Schacht.

(*c*) A great many powerful persons in Britain dislike France and the French, and therefore tend to be pro-German.

(*d*) A group of personalities around Lord Lothian (formerly Philip Kerr, Lloyd George's *alter ego* at the Peace Conference), admire Hitler; they think that a stable Germany, under Hitler, will ensure peace. Lothian is a Christian Scientist, and Christian Scientists, who do not believe in death or evil, find it easier than members of other religions to accept at face value Hitler's promises.

(*e*) *The Times* (Lothian and Geoffrey Dawson, its editor, are close friends), is of course, irrefragably independent; its Berlin correspondence has performed noble service in revealing Nazi brutality and prejudice; but it detests the communists more than the Nazis; and it sometimes has rather more than given Hitler the benefit of the doubt in matters of foreign policy.

(*f*) A tendency exists in England to be sorry for Germany in its role of conquered but honourable foe. (By contrast, the French will never forgive *Germany* for the injustices of the Treaty of Versailles.)

(*g*) Oddly enough, powerful forces in the labour party are pro-German. It is obvious that British socialists and trade unionists under Naziism would suffer even as their German colleagues, but labour foreign policy in Great Britain was erected on dislike of the Versailles Treaty and plea for fair play to Germany, and even outrages performed upon labour by Hitler did not much modify pro-Germanism in some circles of the British Left.[1]

[1] Harold Laski mentioned the other day that Woodrow Wilson was responsible for this, because he invented the demarcation between the ruler of Germany and the German 'people'. To many labourites and liberals Hitler to-day is Wilson's Kaiser Wilhelm.

If war with Germany should come, influences like the foregoing will have borne some responsibility for it, because just as in 1914 the delusion that Britain could afford to remain neutral might be the one thing prompting Hitler to hostilities.

The British reply to Hitler's programme of rearmament was a typical compromise; first, the British bought off competition at sea by the famous Anglo-German naval pact; second, the cabinet announced measures to triple the British Air Force.

I have heard one highly fanciful explanation of the naval pact (which was more an affair of the Admiralty than the Foreign Office). It runs as follows. Britain fought Germany in 1914 because the Germans were underselling Britain in world markets, with consequent industrial depression and unemployment at home. Now Japan is in a position to do precisely the same thing. The Anglo-German naval treaty gives Germany command of the Baltic;[1] Britain knows that Japan will attack the U.S.S.R. only if Germany is strong; if Japan and Germany join to make war on Russia, all three will be weakened, much to Britain's imperial advantage.

At the end of 1935, of course, Britain, France, and the U.S.S.R. were united by common interests vis-à-vis Germany. Eden's trip to Moscow put Anglo-Soviet relations on a new footing. But no one should assume that this arrangement will last indefinitely.

In Chapter Fifteen below I outlined British policy on sanctions in regard to Italy and Ethiopia. Hoare, to an astounding extent, had the whole country behind him. The only people in the British Isles opposing sanctions were, it seemed, idiosyncratic prophets like Mr. Garvin, angelic pacifists like George Lansbury, labour leaders like Sir Stafford Cripps who refused to be the agent of British imperial interests,[2] Mr. Bernard Shaw (who is in a class by himself), and last ditch isolationists

[1] Even the Polish foreign minister, Colonel Beck, was somewhat shocked at the degree to which the pact strengthened Germany.

[2] Aneurin Bevan, labour M.P. for Ebbw Vale, put it this way: 'Britain's policy is that of the successful burglar turned householder who wants a strong police force. If I am going to ask any worker to shed his blood, it will not be for medieval Abyssinia or for Fascist Italy, but for the making of a better social system in this country.'

H1645-0275

like Lord Castlerosse, of the *Daily Express*, who denounced the 'peace jingoes' and 'fireside fusileers' by quoting Macaulay to the effect that an acre of Middlesex was worth a principality in Utopia.

Then, in the middle of December, when it did really seem that British idealism could write a new note into the permanent record of international affairs, when the whole world was eagerly applauding British leadership, an astounding turnabout occurred; Hoare and Laval negotiated a compromise 'settlement' which virtually gave Mussolini all he wanted in Abyssinia. Britain rose in bewilderment, indignation, and alarm. Baldwin muttered excuses in the House of Commons; Hoare, ill, went off to rest in Switzerland; and Eden got the unpleasant job of explaining to his friends in Geneva how the British and French Governments planned – after all – to sell the Abyssinians down the river.

The reasons for the somersault were obscure at the time. First, it was believed, the British felt that Mussolini was losing the war, and if he lost it he might collapse in Italy, which would shake the whole European structure. Second, it was said, oil sanctions might make Mussolini angry enough to perish in a cloud of glory by attacking the British fleet. Third, people said, Baldwin wanted 'peace by Christmas' – at any price. Then the force of British public opinion asserted itself. The storm of indignation at the 'dirty deal' forced Baldwin to drop Hoare from office; the prime minister, in an amazing week, first repudiated his election pledges, then repudiated his foreign secretary. And the Hoare-Laval plan died – a quick and painful death.

But there was no telling when a similar compromise might be newly launched.

Eden for One

No one need go far in seeking the sources of Anthony Eden's sincerity in the cause of peace. Two of his brothers were killed in the War, Edward, the eldest son of the family, in France, and the youngest, William Nicholas, who, a midshipman at Jutland, perished at sixteen.

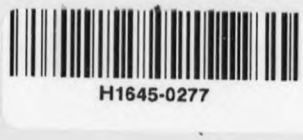
Eden, one of the most attractive figures in British politics today, who succeeded Hoare as foreign minister, was born in

H1645-0276

1897. His mother was a famous society beauty, his father, Sir William Eden, a terrifyingly 'county' baronet who, interested also in art, once quarrelled famously with Whistler. His family connections are typical of the gentry. His wife is the daughter of Sir Gervase Beckett; once he fought an election against Frances Countess of Warwick, who (only a genealogist could get the details clear) was both his sister's mother-in-law and his wife's stepmother's sister. Eden went to war at seventeen and was gassed at Ypres; at twenty-one, a survivor, he was a captain. Then he went to Christ Church, Oxford. He was not faintly interested in politics; he did not even join the Union. He studied (and got first-class honours in) Oriental languages; his only conspicuous undergraduate activity seems to have been an essay he read on – Cézanne.

But presently he found himself in politics, and his rise was extraordinarily rapid. It seemed at first that he was a typical specimen of the young man-about-politics: good family; Eton and Oxford; War service; handsome wife; two sturdy boys; comfortable private means; impeccable clothes; conventional good looks. But by 1926 he had become parliamentary private secretary to Sir Austen Chamberlain, then the foreign secretary. This was partly because the shrewd Baldwin had an eye on him, partly because the conservative back-benchers were demanding jobs for the young men. By 1931 he was parliamentary under-secretary to the Foreign Office, and as Sir John Simon's popularity at Geneva and Whitehall waned, Eden's rose. He did most of the hard work at Geneva. In 1934, as Lord Privy Seal, he was practically the sub-foreign minister; in 1935 he entered the cabinet as minister without portfolio for League of Nations affairs.

It was not merely his sincerity for peace and his charm and likeableness that brought him this post. What counted were, first, the picturesque unorthodoxies in his character, which were especially notable because his outward stamp appeared to conform so closely to the common mould. He studied Persian; this was odd. Once in Sweden, guest of honour at a hunt, he refused to shoot a stag, because it was 'too beautiful'. Second, he was Baldwin's 'man' in the Foreign Office, and thus a check on Simon, who was detested by the Tories. Third, the permanent staff of the Foreign Office swore by him.


H1645-0277

Eden is a skilful and patient negotiator; he made the Jugoslavs and Hungarians agree after the murder of King Alexander, which is as if he had made Goering and Dimitrov kiss. He was the first British cabinet minister to enter Russia since the revolution in 1917; the job called for the maximum of tact, resilience, and candour. The Soviets had been deeply suspicious of British policy, and the British Tories thought that Stalin and his men were poison. Eden and Stalin liked each other at once. Then came Abyssinia, and Eden's importance in British politics steeply rose; he was the darling of the peace-balloters and the pacifists, so much so that his departure from the government might have wrecked it. To millions in the country, Eden personified peace.

Plenty of diehards dislike Eden; but as long as Baldwin is prime minister his position is secure.

Tories

The strength of Neville Chamberlain, son of the great Joseph and brother of Austen, is that like so many British politicians he is not really interested in politics; he can always plead disinterestedness. Until he was forty-seven (except for seven years as a young man in the West Indies) he had scarcely stirred from his native Birmingham; in 1916 Lloyd George, under the pressure of the War, invited him to become director-general of the national services. In 1918 he retired to Birmingham until 1922 when he was persuaded to take to national politics again. He loves gardening and fishing. During a desperately serious financial crisis he found time to write a letter to *The Times* noting that he had seen a bird known as a grey water-wagtail in a London park.

His qualifications for his job as chancellor of the exchequer are perfect. He commands the complete confidence of the plutocracy in the city; he is as orthodox as a bishop; he abhors the grandiose; he provides a façade of respectability for sluggish reaction; he distrusts idealism. Chamberlain, according to those who should know, was, like Hailsham and MacDonald, longest on the fence in the sanctions controversy. It was he who jettisoned Lloyd George's New Deal scheme. At the Ottawa conference he had to stand up to the Canadian prime minister, Bennett, and perform the complex compromise of

H1645-0278

defending local British efforts to build up the home market and at the same time promote the cause of Empire trade.

Major (now Mr.) Walter Elliot, the food dictator, began political life as a fabian socialist; he is a Tory to-day but the Tory who is most susceptible to the contemporary shibboleth of 'planning'. His abstruse experiments in reorganising British agriculture, his complex net of subsidies and quotas and marketing acts are necessary because a *complete* policy of agrarian protection would starve England. He was educated to be a doctor; he wants to be a scientist in politics. Even Mr. Wells is not enough a planner for his taste. Commenting on a speech by Wells, 'Whither Britain?' Elliot said, 'He consigned himself to the nineteenth century with his opening remarks.'

Like many Britons, Elliot has a rhyming sense of the ridiculous. The philosophy of determinism, he remarked in his presidential address to Aberdeen university, might be expressed by the following ditty:

> 'Oh, damn! At last I perceive what I am,
> Just a creature that moves in predestinate grooves,
> I'm not even a bus, but a tram!'

Then, describing the astronomer Sir James Jeans, Elliot said:

> 'Oh, cuss! Though his picture grows steadily wuss,
> I shall go on my way whatever they say,
> For I won't be a tram, I'm a bus!'

And when he was a student at Glasgow university he wrote an Ode to the Pig, two lines of which were:

> 'Alive it is a loathsome beast,
> But dead provides a toothsome feast.'

His visions of economic reconstruction follow quite orthodox lines; the 'leisure state', he thinks, can be produced by *laisser-faire* capitalism. He is a relentless empiricist; the saying is that he remains minister of agriculture because no one else could possibly understand the complicated structure of his regulations. Their result has been, of course, to make much friction with the dominions, who quarrelled about how

H1645-0279

much meat they might export to Britain, and to raise the prices of foodstuffs for the British consumer, in order that the producers might survive.

Oliver Stanley, formerly minister of labour, now minister of education, is the son of the Earl of Derby, and he married Lady Maureen Stewart, daughter of Lord Londonderry. He has, like most Tory politicians, a good War record; unlike most of them, he is a wit: once he said that Sidney Webb had 'blue books in his veins'. During the General Strike he served as a clerk in the Westminster tube station. With the willingness to admit mistakes that is an excellent tradition in British politics, he offered to resign as minister of labour when the Means Test regulations broke down. 'That the responsibility for the error was mine is a thing,' he said, 'that I have never attempted to evade.' He didn't explain why he had made the error in the first place. Ramsay MacDonald, the 'socialist', refused to accept his resignation.

Not So Simple Simon

Sir John Simon just squeezed home in the 1935 general election, with his tiny group of 'Liberal National' supporters of the coalition government reduced in number. The opposition liberals, under Sir Herbert Samuel, who lost his seat, were practically obliterated. Mr. Lloyd George and his family group survived; Lloyd George himself has sat in the Commons uninterruptedly for forty-five years, a dazzling record. But the great Welshman was, at the end of his career, fighting a more serious enemy than any political adversary: he was fighting – time.

No matter how unpopular Simon may be, his position in the government is reasonably secure, because inclusion of his liberal supporters is necessary to retain the pretence of 'National' government. This, of course, causes dissatisfaction in Tory ranks; the MacDonald 'National Labourites' who now possess exactly eight seats in the House of Commons, were given three cabinet posts; the Simonites have no fewer than four jobs in the cabinet for their meagre thirty-three seats in the House; the Tories, with a colossal block of three hundred and eighty-four seats, have to be satisfied with the rest of the cabinet posts, twenty-two in all.

H1645-0280

Simon, the greatest lawyer in modern England and the least successful foreign minister, has always wanted to be liked more than people liked him. This is the tragedy of his life. About no other man in English public life, except MacDonald, is there such a miscellany of cruel legends.

One story has it that he won so many cases against others that he lost his own.

Mr. Lloyd George is reported to have said of him that 'John Simon had sat on the fence so long that the iron entered his soul!'

One apocryphal story is that Simon, finding an acquaintance of long standing to be useful, came up to him, put his arm around his shoulders – and called him by the wrong Christian name.

Mr. Garvin, referring to the 'half-headedness and half-heartedness' of the foreign policy of the first National Government, said that Simon created the impression of a man marking time with an agility intended to resemble walking.

The story is told that when Sir John Simon plays golf, he putts around bunkers.

He understands things, it was said, 'only through his mind'.

In one of his really bad-tempered moments, Mr. Lloyd George said, 'Many a better man than he has crossed the floor of this house before him, but none has left such a slimy trail of hypocrisy behind him.' (*Inquest on Peace*, p. 356.)

Philip Snowden said, 'Sir John Simon is the chief advertising agent of the government and of himself; but if he had any sense of the pitiable failure he made of the high and responsible office he held, but of which he was happily deprived for his country's good, instead of appearing so much on the public platforms he would hide his head in some place of suitable obscurity in the hope that his miserable record would be forgotten.'

Simon is, of course, not nearly so forbidding a creature as these stories make out. An exceptionally shy man, lonely and anxious to be popular, he was afraid to offend people.

His unpopularity as foreign minister was largely the result of his virtual advocacy of the Japanese case in the Manchurian crisis at Geneva. Matsoaka, the Japanese delegate, told friends that Simon had said in fifteen minutes what he had

H1645-0281

been trying to express for weeks. Simon offended the United States during the Manchurian crisis; he disastrously weakened the League; he was accused of responsibility for the failure of the disarmament conference.

It was Simon who, in a historic speech during the General Strike, declared the strike illegal, which more than any other thing broke the spirit of the workers. This has not endeared him to labour.

It was Simon who, as chairman of the Indian Statutory Commission, produced a report hundreds of pages long (which was a dead letter before it was published); he gave Mr. Gandhi hardly a paragraph.

Finally, it was Sir John Simon, who, with his usual ill luck, was responsible as home secretary for the first handbooks on Anti-Gas precautions; and in no circles were they very popular.

B.B.C.

Sir John Reith, the tall and powerful director-general of the British Broadcasting Corporation, is not a resident of Whitehall, but his modernist citadel on Portland Place is more important in the life of Britain than most government offices. Reith, 'a fanatical Puritan, in awe of hell, yet suspecting Heaven', is a complex character; he rules the B.B.C. with a hand of granite. 'A great black tower of a man, one eye burning fiercely, one a little scared, mouth moulded in a cynical No.' (I am quoting an anonymous commentator in the *New Statesman*.) 'His smile is so rare and so lovely that the humanity it discovers seems a mirage. . . . He has no intimates and few friends. Futile to pump his staff. They do not know him, or he them.'

Reith is a Scotsman, the son of a Glasgow clergyman. He had long experience as an engineer, first in the civil engineering department of the Admiralty, then as general manager of Wm. Beardmore and Sons, the steel firm. He has made the B.B.C. an expression of his nonconformist conscience. He has also made it probably the finest broadcasting organisation in the world. Even the socialists like it, because it is a public body ruled by charter, and its relation to the state is semi-socialistic.

H1645-0282

No employee of the B.B.C., it is commonly said, may keep his job if he is the guilty party to a divorce suit or 'in respect to whom any unorthodox sexual conduct is alleged'.

Norman

'Unless drastic measures are taken to save it, the capitalist system throughout the world will be wrecked within a year.'

– MONTAGU NORMAN IN 1931.

Montagu Collet Norman, since 1920 governor of the Bank of England, is to banking born. Both his grandfathers were directors of the Bank of England, one of them for more than fifty years. He went to Eton, King's College Cambridge and served in the South African war. For some years he worked in commercial banking (he was connected with the house of Brown-Shipley); like many great bankers, he is not much interested in money personally, and he is by no means a very rich man; money and its mechanism is rather a fascinating problem to him as a diplomat, a mathematician, almost a creative artist.

His *farouche* air of international intrigue-cum-artistic worldliness is famous. Everything is permitted him, because he has been governor of the Bank of England longer than any man in history. He wears flowing capes, black slouch hats, and a waggish beard; his house on Campden Hill is decorated with extraordinarily silken elegance. Yet he takes the tube to work every morning, and likes to be the last man on the escalator. He enjoys appearing to be mysterious, and he has made only three public speeches in his life.

Norman's experience alone would make him indispensable. But he has more than mere experience. His technical capacity to handle banking problems is superb, his skill and boldness in negotiation considerable. Like many Englishmen, he knows how to make a virtue of humility; in October 1932 he said 'the difficulties are so great, the forces are so unlimited, precedents are so lacking, that I approach the whole subject in ignorance. . . . It is too great for me – I will admit that for the moment the way, to me, is not clear.'

Once, amiably chatting with a banker friend, he listened imperviously to the argument that the gold standard would

H1645-0283

impoverish Britain in the long run. 'Tell me,' Norman is reported to have asked, 'do you think it better to be rich than to be poor?' His friend replied, 'Well, I have been poor, and now I am fairly rich, and I hope to be richer.' Norman replied that he was not sure but that countries which were too rich went to pieces; he pointed to the example of Periclean Athens and Imperial Rome. His friend did not reveal the substance of the conversation; the intimation that the governor of the Bank of England might consider it his duty to impoverish his country for the country's benefit would not have been too popular.

He was, of course, the main spirit forcing England back to the gold standard in 1925. This severely punished British industry, but, like most central bankers, Norman worshipped gold. By insisting that Snowden (who didn't need much persuasion), should stick to gold, he was the spiritual author of the 1931 financial crisis. He has admitted, too, that various foreign (mostly German) concerns had been able 'to borrow on short credit sums which, had the various lenders all been aware of it, would have been quite out of the question'. Apparently there was little co-operation between the lending agencies in London; competitively they threw their money away.

Norman has, as is well known, great regard for Dr. Schacht; the governors of all the central banks play together closely. His high opinion of Schacht's shrewdness dates, it is believed, from 1927, when both attended a conference in New York, Schacht opposed, speaking broadly, a world easy money policy; Norman favoured it. Events ultimately proved Schacht to be right, because the unstable Wall Street boom, when it collapsed, provoked the world crisis; and Norman ever after has respected Schacht for his prescience, and for having proved that he, Norman, was wrong.

Hugh Dalton, who was under-secretary for foreign affairs in the second Labour Government, records how he became aware that Norman pursued a foreign policy quite his own. There was a 'dyarchy'. No matter what the real Foreign Office might be doing, Norman's policy proceeded on the basis that 'unless Germany is economically strong and prosperous, it is impossible to balance the one-sided political strength of

H1645-0284

France on the continent'. When the Credit Anstalt, the great Rothschild bank, crashed in Vienna in 1931, Norman on his own responsibility advanced to Austria enough credit, it was hoped, to tide the crisis over. Two years later the loan was transferred from the books of the bank to the treasury, i.e. the British taxpayer.

But it should not be assumed too glibly that Norman these days rules the treasury. Snowden fed out of his hand; but not Neville Chamberlain. Indeed the treasury, ever since the devaluation of sterling, has been more important than the Bank, because the treasury, by controlling the exchanges through the £300,000,000 Equalisation Fund, has usurped one of the Bank's primary functions. Norman would like to see the pound high and stable, and perhaps even a return to gold. This would help the French goldites, of whom he approves. The treasury wants to keep the pound fairly low and, within limits, variable, in order to reduce the debt charge on the budget and to encourage industry. So far Chamberlain has been the winner.

H1645-0285

H1645-0286

CHAPTER XIX

LEFT AND RIGHT IN ENGLAND

'When a revolutionary party has not the support of a majority either among the vanguard of the revolutionary class or among the rural population, there can be no question of a rising. A rising must have not only the majority, but must have the incoming revolutionary tide over the whole country, the complete moral and political bankruptcy of the old régime – and a deep-seated sense of insecurity among all these irresolute elements.'

– LENIN.

SOCIALISM in England, as is notorious, is not revolutionary, and not even the grisly condition of the depressed areas, the suffering of two million unemployed, and the eloquence of Sir Stafford Cripps can make it so. It is difficult to organise effective solidarity among the poor in a country where, as Mirsky puts it, 'the smallest white collar clerk thinks of himself as the opposite of a workman'. The measure of British recovery that has occurred has occurred partly at the expense of the working class; but this does not much increase the labour party, the I.L.P., or the exiguous communist vote.

The labour party itself, a product of the Fabian doctrine of the 'inevitability of gradualness', made no official declaration of socialist principles until 1918. The influence of Marx among British socialists was always comparatively small; and when the first Labour Government was formed, it took office not only on sufferance but on the understanding that, even if it could, it would introduce no socialist measures. The trade unions (who represent eight million British workmen) only became formally committed to socialism in 1924. Trotsky quotes MacDonald to the effect that revolution is 'a ruin and a calamity, and nothing more'.

When labour was called upon to form a government, Hugh Dalton says, it had the choice of three alternatives. It could have refused office, since there was no clear labour majority in parliament. It could have accepted office, introduced 'some

bold socialist measures', and gone down to defeat, then appealing to the country in a new election. Or it could have cooperated freely and frankly with the liberals who held the balance of power. Instead, the MacDonald cabinet did none of the three; it only muddled.

Labour had won two hundred and sixty-one seats in 1929, a very respectable total (caused partly because so many fights at that time were three-cornered). It sank to fifty-seven after the financial crisis of 1931 and the formation of the National Government. In 1935 it rose only to 154, though the total opposition vote was forty-six per cent of the electorate. There were several reasons why the showing was not better. First, the National Government boasted of the prosperity it had produced. Second, labour was in an impossible position as regards foreign policy, since on the one hand it supported the government in sanctions, while on the other, illogically, it opposed rearmament.

Armament had been a disastrous issue for Leftists everywhere for several years. If they took a genuinely long view, they had to concede the necessity of eventual defence against Germany. Yet if they supported armament and a strong government they would help to make capitalism stronger and thus write the doom of socialist reform in their own countries. The first duty of genuine Leftists was to support the U.S.S.R. But since Germany was the chief potential enemy of the U.S.S.R., they could do this only by strengthening the capitalist states which were anti-German, and which would then be in a stronger position to destroy revolution at home.

Besides labour in England suffered from divided leadership. The death of Arthur Henderson removed the one personage in the party both vital and venerable. Henderson, a doughty figure, whose heart and health were broken by the sabotage of the disarmament conference, spoke in a language few of his subordinates had the courage or capacity to copy. When he was foreign minister in the second Labour Government, the *New Statesman* relates, one of his officials suggested that he send telegrams to Mussolini and the Pope congratulating them on the Lateran Treaty. 'No,' replied Uncle Arthur. 'I shall send no telegram to the Pope; I am a Wesleyan. I shall send

H1645-0287

no telegram to Mussolini; I have denounced him in a public speech as the murderer of Matteotti.'

Of the contemporary labour chieftains, the most interesting are Morrison and Cripps.

The Boss of London

'The socialist minister of the future must try to be as good a man at business for public ends as the ablest of the capitalists or managing directors are for private ends. . . . It is essential that socialism should be sound public business as well as being healthy in its social morality.'

– HERBERT MORRISON.

Morrison is a born Cockney. He is the son of a policeman. He has lost an eye. He had only board school education. He has been an errand boy, a shop assistant, and a telephone operator. The curl in his hair, his unquenchable good humour, his gift for pungent repartee, his realistic optimism, make him remarkably resemble early characters by H. G. Wells, for instance Kipps. He has been secretary of the London labour party since 1914, and he is an efficient and indeed almost a ruthlessly good organiser. Since 1932 he has been not only party chief in London but majority leader of the London County Council. As minister of transport in the second Labour Government, he put through its most praiseworthy legislation, the bill reorganising London transport.

'Mr. Morrison,' wrote A. J. Cummings in the *News Chronicle*, 'is the rising hope of the labour party – one might say its only hope. He is a comparatively young man with a political future that holds out the dazzling promise of the premiership as its crown and climax. He is an astute politician with sincere convictions whose party loyalty has never been questioned.'

But on November 26, 1935, Morrison was not chosen as the leader of the parliamentary labour party, but a man considerably his inferior in personality and push, Major Clement Attlee; which was a bitter disappointment to those who had thought of Morrison as the inevitable leader. Reasons: Morrison was too much on the Right for the Leftists in the party. Morrison was, the trade unionists suspected, likely to be too strong a character to be easily manageable. He was a London product, and the trade unions dislike the London labour party, in which their influence is comparatively small.

H1645-0288

Finally, Morrison was the victim of inertia. Attlee had succeeded to the temporary leadership of the party when Lansbury resigned, and he led the party in the election fight; it seemed discourteous to remove him.

Of middle-class parentage and background, Attlee became a socialist through intellectual conversion rather than through the hard school of poverty and direct awareness of social injustice; he is competent enough, but he would never have been even Lansbury's second in command had not the whole labour front bench been wiped out in the 1931 election.

Morrison is not an expert on foreign affairs, but his intuition is quick and his instincts good. At the 1935 party congress, for instance, he 'urged that the labour movement (which had just adopted sanctions by a twenty to one vote) should not make the mistake of assuming that it could destroy Fascism by upsetting Mussolini as it once hoped to destroy militarism by getting rid of the Kaiser'.

He is distinctly on the Right wing of the labour movement; but even so the Leftists thoroughly respect him.

Cripps

'You have only got to look at the pages of British imperial history to hide your head in shame that you are British.'

– Sir STAFFORD CRIPPS.

The best intellect among labour M.P.s is probably that of Sir Stafford Cripps, son of Lord Parmoor and nephew of the Webbs, socialist by conviction, one of the best parliamentarians in England, and, like Simon, a great lawyer and advocate. He founded the socialist league (within the parliamentary labour party); he is very far to the Left. He shocked a good many people by saying once that eventually 'we shall have to overcome opposition from Buckingham Palace'. Tories – a significant point – are afraid of Cripps, whereas few of them fear Morrison. They think that Cripps might, if he got the chance, inaugurate a real socialism-in-our-time policy, and even try to abolish the House of Lords, and rule by an Enabling Act. This has frightened conservative labourites too; after a good start toward the party leadership, he underwent eclipse.

England is a country of superb surprises; for which reason

H1645-0289

H1645-0290

one should not be surprised to learn that Cripps, the last possible remove from the workman-agitator, is a man of considerable wealth; he fights entrenched privilege from the inside. His fees as a K.C. are estimated at £30,000 per year. Once he told a political audience that as a lawyer he met the people of the ruling classes: 'They pay me fabulous and fantastic sums to get them out of their difficulties. I have no hesitation in saying that the working class of this country are more capable of ruling than they are.' And the passionate radical sincerity of his convictions is beyond doubt.

Cripps has pointed out that during the first term of the National Government the number of people on Poor Law Relief increased by four hundred thousand and he is convinced that Fascism has already protruded ugly fingers in the life of Britain. The *Manchester Guardian* quoted him recently saying that the first definite and conscious step toward Fascism was the Trades Dispute Act of 1927. The 1931 elections were 'essentially Fascist in nature'; the forces of capitalism had such a triumph at the polls that 'there was no need for any formal personal dictatorship'. He notes the contrast of subsidies to capitalists – for instance those of Elliot's agricultural schemes – with 'the discipline imposed on the workers through the Means Test'. 'The worker is being, and has been, disciplined not viciously and ruthlessly as in Germany and Italy, but gently and firmly as one would expect from a country-gentleman-Fascism in Britain. Coloured shirts are not necessary and are embarrassingly obvious; a special constable is much cheaper and attracts less attention.'

His definition of the corporate state is interesting: 'a method by which complete power is given to the capitalist to produce that scarcity which will ensure him a share of the national wealth out of all proportion to his efforts, and which will enable him to enslave the workers by substituting for their freedom and right to combine a nominal and ineffective minority voice in the government of industry.'

Cripps and Morrison would be quite capable of working well together, despite their ideological differences. The former could supply theory and strategy; the latter organising power and sense of political tactics. But against them both is the great conservative force of the trade unions.

T.U.C.

'For my part I would rather rely on Sir Walter Citrine, arch-priest of British trade unionism, than on Mr. Baldwin, the conservative prime minister, to keep the present system intact. There is to-day no Toryism more fearful and immovable than that which is enshrined in the ideals and practice of trade union leadership.'

– A. J. CUMMINGS.

In the labour opposition at the end of 1935 there were seventy-two nominees of the labour party itself, and seventy-four representatives of the trade unions. These were subdivided as follows: thirty-seven men of the miners' federation, seven municipal workers, six railway clerks, six transport workers, five distributive workers, three from the national union of railway men, two compositors, and one each from eight other unions. The last thing that most of them want would be socialism in our time.

The most prominent trade unionists, like Sir Walter Citrine, the general secretary – the National Government recently knighted him, which was shrewd politics – and Ernest Bevin, the boss of the comparatively new and powerful Transport and General Workers' Union, are not M.P.s. The general rule is that the T.U.C. chieftains stay out of active politics. But they control the labour party, because they have the funds.

The triumph of Sir Walter Citrine is that of method. He was a member of an electrical union and then became assistant-secretary of the Trades Union Congress; his extreme organisational skill made him indispensable; and he succeeded to the leadership. He lives, it has been said, on his files; he is a filing Robot. When, once, he was invited to an informal discussion among labour intellectuals, to thrash out some party business, he brought the files – and a secretary – along; the secretary took down everything that *he* said, presumably so that later he could not be incorrectly quoted.

Citrine visited Moscow in the autumn of 1935. But he rejected an offer of a communist-socialist united front. Since 1928 he has been president of the International Federation of Trade Unions.

H1645-0291

H1645-0292

The Red Fringe

One communist M.P. was elected to the House of Commons in November 1935, Willie Gallacher, a veteran Scottish revolutionary. A typical enough Clydeside crusader, he began as a liberal, turned socialist, finally became a communist; he led the first strike against the War – in 1915 – that took place in England; Lenin admired him greatly. But Gallacher is not as important to the communist movement as Harry Pollitt, the leader of the party and a member of the executive committee of the Communist International. Pollitt is a Marxian theorist, who, a boiler-maker by trade, is also a practical journalist and politician. One of the most acute journalists in London told me that he considered Pollitt's 'news-sense' to be better than his own. Evidently a believer in the policy of boring from within as well as without, Pollitt keeps his trade union membership and ordered his followers to vote labour in the last election (except in the few constituencies where communists were standing). As an organiser of the party, he receives its maximum salary, £4 per week.

From several points of view the I.L.P. (Independent Labour Party) is to the Left of the communists. It opposed sanctions, which the communists approved; it refused any compact with labour, and the labour machine fought it even on the Clydeside, where it was impregnable. Four I.L.P. men sit in the present House; it is a small group, but noisy. The I.L.P. was founded as far back as 1893, and in early days it had great influence on labour policy. In 1932, devoted to genuinely revolutionary tactics, it broke with labour.

The leader of the I.L.P., James Maxton, was once, like Litvinov, a soldier; he belonged to the territorials. His first instincts were conservative; the story is told in Glasgow that while Elliot was a Fabian, Maxton was a Tory. Lean, with a famous mane of black-white hair, a 'cadaverous British Danton', Maxton sardonically denounces the government for planning to spend one hundred million pounds on road development – to make them safer for the next hunger marchers. Maxton, a unique personality, provides yet another British paradox; he is an overt revolutionary, yet both Baldwin and

MacDonald would admit that he is the most popular man in the House of Commons.

'This Rock Shall Fly from its Extreme Base as Soon as I'

On the extreme Right, far beyond even the Chamberlains and Hailshams and Londonderrys, are two lonely last-ditch imperialists, L. S. Amery, former minister of colonies, and Lord Lloyd, once governor-general of Bombay and high commissioner of Egypt. Amery tried to organise a group of conservative M.P.s urging the government to oppose any sanctions 'that might lead to war'. 'If I were asked to name the most convinced diehard among the great politicians of to-day,' wrote Robert Bernays, 'I should pass over the claims of Mr. Churchill and plump for Mr. Amery. . . . He is an imperialist of the school of Treitschke and Bernhardi. . . .' And thus he is out of office.

Lord Lloyd, a more subtle character, whose tradition is that of Empire administration rather than Westminster debate, traces his ancestry back to the princes who ruled Dyfed (South Wales) nine hundred years ago. He was one of Colonel Lawrence's early companions in the Arabian adventure. It was he who first caused Gandhi to be arrested; he lost his job in Egypt when the conciliatory Arthur Henderson became labour's foreign minister. Like Amery, he is an isolationist and an imperialist. As a proconsul, he was a famous martinet; he believed in pomp. Once when the Prince of Wales visited him in Bombay, His Royal Highness is reported to have murmured, 'I never knew how royalty lived until I stayed with George Lloyd.'

Mosley

'Over the whole of this Abyssinian dispute rises the stink of oil, and stronger than even the stink of oil is the stink of the Jews.'

– MOSLEY.

With Sir Oswald Mosley, Fascism became a thrice-told tale; it became a watery English stew that compared to Italian Fascism as a soggy British cabbage compares to the fiery authority of Italian wine. If the other dictators of the age, Hitler and Mussolini, are boils and pimples, as H. G. Wells expressed it, Oswald Mosley is a blackhead.

H1645-0293

H1645-0294

Mosley is ambitious. He is (he rather resembles Starhemberg) strikingly handsome. He is probably the best orator in England. His personal magnetism is very great. He was competent enough intellectually to draw into his camp, before he turned Fascist, some of the best young minds in England. Nevertheless his movement at the end of 1935 had petered out. In the November elections he did not run a single candidate.

In *The Town Labourer* J. L. and Barbara Hammond wrote, 'In 1596 a Mr. Oswald Mosley . . . bought the land on which Manchester now stands for £3,500. In 1846 the town of Manchester bought the manor and all the rights and incidents from Sir Oswald Mosley for £200,000. . . .'

The present Sir Oswald, the sixth baronet to bear the name, inherited a fortune of £247,000 from the late baroness; from his grandfather, who died in 1915, he received £60,000 more. In 1920 he married Lady Cynthia Curzon, the daughter of the late Lord Curzon and the granddaughter of Levi Leiter, the Chicago millionaire; she too was wealthy. At the wedding two kings and two queens were present.

Mosley entered politics as conservative M.P. for Harrow, but presently became 'independent'. There were several reasons for this. As a rich young conservative, he was only one among many rich young conservatives. As an independent who was rich, other parties would be interested in him. Finally, the labour party was rising in influence, and Mosley had strong ideas about economic reform. In 1924 he became a labourite. 'When my wife and I joined the labour movement,' he wrote, 'it meant a complete break with family and former associations.' This plunge into proletarian existence had however its compensations. He bought one of the most beautiful and ancient manor-houses in England (price £9,000) and spent £10,000 rebuilding and furnishing it. Meantime, the toiling masses heard with interest that his wife wanted to be called 'plain Mrs. Mosley'. But when his father died, he assumed the parental title.

In 1929, at the age of thirty-three, he went into the labour ministry as chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster. This job is a ministerial sinecure; Mosley was in effect a minister without portfolio to deal with unemployment. Of his intelligence, his magnetism, there was no doubt. He advocated a vigorous

policy of public works; but J. H. Thomas and the stand-pat labour leaders rejected his 'Mosley Memorandum'. He resigned his post, and set about organising a party of his own. Several labour people were tempted to join him, for instance John Strachey, now the most brilliant and persuasive communist pamphleteer in England; but when he formed his 'New Party' it had only five members in the House, and as his ideas became more and more Fascist, his Left supporters dropped him. The New Party had only a year of life, and in September 1932 Mosley emerged as leader of the B.U.F. British Union of Fascists.

The movement is compact of all the familiar Fascist nostrums.

Mosley attacks the City of London and the Jews; he demands a strong policy for India; he appeals for support of the working classes by demagoguery very much like Hitler's; he does not go so far as to threaten revolution, but he hints that the 'Gordian knot' must be cut; he brings little fresh salt to the Fascist pie. Arrogant, supercilious, dressed in black like a skating champion, he puts on a superb show; he is one of the most graceful orators alive; but what he talks is mostly nonsense. Spectacular, he organised his Black Shirts on more or less the German model; but at a great meeting at Olympia on June 7, 1934, rough-house by his bodyguards seriously discredited the movement.

On May 11, 1935, Mosley sent the following communication to Julius Streicher, the S.A. boss of Nuremberg:

> DEAR HERR STREICHER,– I thank you very much for your telegram regarding my speech at Leicester, which arrived in London during my absence.
>
> I value this message of yours, in the midst of our hard fight, greatly.
>
> The might of Jewish corruption must be overcome in all great countries before the future of Europe can be assured in justice and in peace.
>
> Our fight is a difficult one. Our victory certain. I thank you. Yours very faithfully, MOSLEY.
>
> – (*Daily Herald*, May 11, 1935.)

Sometimes, in view of his attack on the Jews, Mosley was heckled by people who alluded to his wife's Jewish blood.

H1645-0295

Arms akimbo, shoulders arched back, he replied (on one occasion) 'My wife is of Dutch extraction.'

Rothermere's affection for Mosley cooled, particularly after the June 30 murders in Germany, and the British Fascists began to droop. They were, of course, fighting on sterile ground, because of British industrial recovery. One thing might make Mosley of importance again – reaction against a powerful Labour Government, if, miraculously, labour should come powerfully to office.

H1645-0296

H1645-0297

CHAPTER XX

DANUBE BLUES

'The situation in Germany is serious but not hopeless; the situation in Austria is hopeless but not serious.' – VIENNESE SAYING.

'AUSTRIA is ruled,' said old Viktor Adler, the founder of Viennese social democracy, 'by Absolutism modified by *Schlamperei*.' I do not know exactly how to translate this lovely Viennese word, *Schlamperei*, but roughly it means slovenliness plus a certain charm, provided you do not lose your temper. Adler made his little joke many years ago; despite the terrible trials Austria has undergone since 1919, including the two civil wars of 1934, it still holds good to-day.

But Austria and its entrancing capital Vienna no longer quite represent the undiluted joy of life of other days. The *Föhn*, that seductive and enervating breeze from the Austrian Alps, the source of much of Vienna's pervasive, exasperating charm, still blows – yes. The Viennese, a profoundly civilised people, still drink gallons of beer and the best coffee in the world, discussing placidly the really important things of life, like Mozart and whipped cream – yes.

Nevertheless we who lived in Vienna through the year 1934 have had to alter our comfortable view that the Viennese were invariably shiftless, easy-going, sophisticated, gentle. We found that some things, in the last analysis, were more important to the Viennese than the first act of the newest Jaray comedy, or the latest subtle embroidery on the theories of Freud or Stekel. We learned that the Balkans *do*, as Metternich said, begin at Landstrasse Hauptstrasse. 'Scratch an Austrian,' as I heard it said, 'and he takes to his gun.'

. . . . . .

Austria to-day is a country roughly three-fifths the size of England, with a population of six and a half million, a a good deal less than that of London. Before the War

H1645-0298

Austria-Hungary, with fifty million people, stretched from the Carpathians to the Adriatic; the chief psychological problem of the country in post-War years was adjustment to this shrinkage from imperial greatness to meagre exiguity. The story of the two Tyroleans is well known. 'Let's take a walk,' one said, 'around Austria.' 'No,' replied the other, 'I don't want to get back before lunch.'

The capital, Vienna, like a swollen head atop a dwarfed and shrunken body, contains more than one-third of the country's inhabitants, and this acute disproportion has been its chief economic problem since 1918. The country has to import more than it exports; it does not raise enough to feed itself; therefore it is very poor. Vienna, a gaping maw, swallows more than the mountainously beautiful but economically almost useless hinterland can produce. The chief crop of provincial Austria is – scenery.

The weakness of Austria has in a way been its greatest strength. Until 1934 at least its foreign policy was largely one of gentle blackmail; it demanded and got financial or political help from the other powers because it was a buffer state in a key position, and if it collapsed the whole Danube equilibrium would go to pot. A joke from Germany is relevant. Hitler, Goering, Goebbels, discuss what they will do if the Nazi régime crashes. Goering says: 'I will wear civilian clothes, and no one will recognise me.' Goebbels says, 'I will keep my mouth shut, and people will not know who I am.' But Hitler says he need do nothing: 'I am an Austrian, and therefore the powers will have to protect me.'

Austria is not only the pivot of the Danube, but the key to great events far afield. In March 1931, the German foreign minister Curtius and the Austrian chancellor, an honest but dull-witted policeman Dr. Schober, suggested a Customs Union between their respective countries. This, of course, aroused French rage, because the Quai d'Orsay saw it as the first step to *Anschluss*, union of Germany and Austria. So the French withdrew credits from Austrian banks and helped to provoke the collapse of Credit Anstalt, the chief financial institution in Central Europe. Results: the German banking crisis, the reparations moratorium, the flight from sterling. Banks crashed through Europe like tin pans down a concrete alley.

H1645-0299

A politico-economic quarrel in remote Vienna, it was proved, could – and did – shake Great Britain off gold. Confidence, betrayed by the pound sterling, left the earth; and it has not yet returned.

The disequilibrium between Marxist Vienna and the clerical countryside was the dominating *motif* of Austrian politics until the rise of Hitler. Vienna was socialist, anti-clerical, and, as a municipality, fairly rich. The hinterland was poor, backward, conservative, Roman Catholic, and jealous of Vienna's higher standard of living. The socialists, to defend themselves in what they thought was their impregnable citadel, founded a private army of young workmen and intellectuals, the Schutzbund. The countryside promptly countered with a similar army – but recruited from primitive and hungry peasant lads, in leather breeches and green hats – the Heimwehr. The struggle between these two forces resulted in the civil war of February, 1934.

In Vienna the socialists produced a remarkable administration, making it probably the most successful municipality in the world. By means of an ingenious if Draconian taxation system they financed paternalistic reforms of unparalleled quantity and quality; they built health clinics, baths, gymnasia, sanatoria, schools, kindergartens, and the imposing sunshine dwellings which, in decency and cleanliness if not luxury, housed sixty thousand families – socialist families. They eliminated slums; they cut down drastically the tuberculosis rate; they took money from the rich, who could spare it, and used it for the benefit of the worthy poor. The achievements of the Vienna socialists were the most exhilarating social monument of the post-War period in any European country. Result: the clericals bombed them out of existence.

Through the terrible years of poverty and deflation in the early thirties tension between the socialists and their opponents grew. The Credit Anstalt crash cost the country one thousand million schillings, about £28,000,000. The fall of agricultural prices in the Danube basin ruined Austria's attenuated trade. The political structure of the country creaked with strain. The socialists, with a cool forty-two per cent of the electorate, were the largest political party, but they shut

themselves up in Vienna and turned their back on the country at large; had they tried to form a minority government – because a coalition of all the other parties could outvote them – there might have been civil war. Little *Putsches*, instigated by the Heimwehr, did occur. Angrily tension increased.

The man in the street, sipping his coffee, dreaming of the great days before the War, seemingly paid little attention to the crisis. Vienna's familiar lassitude, product of the warm, sirocco-like *Föhn*, enveloped politics in a fog of languor. When the Customs Union and Credit Anstalt stories raged across the front pages of the world, the Vienna papers carried scare headlines – about the deficit in the *Burg* theatre. Man, said Aristotle, is a political animal; but Vienna is a woman. She had no practical head for politics, especially her own politics. The plan for a Danubian confederation got scarcely a yawn out of the Viennese – but when Jeritza missed a high C in *Tannhäuser*, the whole town rocked with shame. The country was poor, but it still managed to subsidise the Opera to the tune of £200,000 per year – so all was well.

Then two things happened to jerk Vienna from its pensive lethargy. One was Dollfuss. The other Hitler.

Duodecimo Dictator

Dr. Engelbert Dollfuss, who had a vivid couple of years as the political darling of western Europe, the 'Millimetternich' – so called because he was only four feet eleven inches high – the youngest and littlest of the post-War dictators, was born in Texing, a village in Lower Austria, on October 4, 1892. His origins were humble. His mother and brothers still till the soil near the farm where he was born. He worked his way through school, studied law at the University of Vienna, and when the War came served three years at the Front. He went in a private – in the famous *Kaiserschutzen* regiment – and came out a first lieutenant, no small feat in the old imperial army.

Dollfuss was born a peasant and with belief in God. These were the two paramount facts in his character. Much of his personal charm and force came from his extreme simplicity of character; his modesty and directness amounted almost to naïveté. A foreigner approaching him with a compliment

H1645-0300

H1645-0301

would hear a broad farmer's accent in reply, '*Ach – aber gehen Sie*' ('Oh, go on. . . .') His speeches were extraordinarily unsophisticated; he listened to speeches of members of his cabinet who were experts in their field with the respectful attention of a child in school. Speaking himself, he was tense, awkward, overworked. A devout Catholic, his religious faith gave him something of the curious innocence of old, wise priests, an innocence as impregnable to the wiles of adversaries as the most glittering sophistication.

Of course his stature – or rather lack of it – helped him inordinately. He became David to the Goliath of the Nazis. His diminutiveness dramatised him into the heart of Austrian politics. He was a sort of mascot. One could be angry with a six-footer, but a prime minister barely five feet in his stocking-feet was irresistible. (These feelings were, of course, blasted by the events of February, when he stupidly moved against the socialists.) Tiny physically, Dollfuss was not however a dwarf. His smallness was shapely; all the features, diminutive, were well-formed.

The jokes about his size were famous. He broke his leg one day falling off a ladder; he had been picking a dandelion. The police discovered an *attentat* against his life; a mouse-trap had been secreted in his bedroom. Postage stamps were to be issued commemorating his victories, adorned with his portrait – life size. An Austrian physicist won the Nobel prize for his experiments splitting the atom, with Dollfuss as his subject. When agitated at night, he either paced up and down under the bed or went skating on the frozen surface of his *pot*. He did not take the train to Rome when he visited Mussolini; he was dispatched air mail. When the chief of the staff of the Austrian army, reviewing troops, was startled to see a turtle at the head of the formations, his shock was quickly dispelled; the turtle was the *Herr Bundeskanzler* – in a steel helmet.

Dollfuss entered politics as a member of the Christian social (conservative) party, led by that astute cleric, Monsignor Ignaz Seipel. The little man was interested in agriculture; he organised a peasants' league in Lower Austria and presently became a deputy in the now-defunct Austrian parliament. The federal railways needed an agrarian expert and he joined

H1645-0302

its administrative council; in October 1930 he became president of the railways. In March 1931 he got a cabinet post as minister of agriculture. A year later an exasperating crisis provoked the resignation of the Christian social government of Dr. Buresch. Dollfuss was asked to form a new government. No one else would take the ticklish job, because the party had a majority of only one in the chamber. Dollfuss prayed all night before accepting. This was on May 20, 1932. He remained prime minister until the Nazis murdered him a little over two years later.

No one, when he assumed the chancellorship, thought that he would last long; no one, indeed, thought that he was of any consequence at all. With a group of newspaper men I had lunch with him during the first week of his rule. Earnest, shy, tired, excited, Dollfuss sat, smoked and talked till dusk. And we became aware that here might be a person of original quality. Two main factors in his career became manifest soon after: (1) his capacity to take immediate advantage of a situation, (2) his sense of drama. Ratification of the Lausanne Loan[1] which was to bring 300,000,000 schillings to the country was up before parliament. The socialists and pan-Germans opposed ratification. Early that morning Dr. Seipel died. Dollfuss' majority of one had gone to heaven. So the miniature chancellor promptly swore in a successor and dragooned every member of his party, sick or well, to the chamber: one man was carried in by three comrades, another came direct from hospital swathed in bandages. Dollfuss won – by one vote. And by such unconventional, even tyrannical behaviour! – exclaimed the Austrians, shocked and impressed. A few weeks later another crucial vote impended. Dollfuss won again, and again by a single vote. The missing adversary was the former chancellor Dr. Schober – who had died the night before.

On March 4, 1933, the Austrian parliament committed suicide. It was a marvellously, typically Viennese occasion. A socialist deputy, just before an important vote, went out, as

[1] Austria was nearing default on the 1923 League of Nations Reconstruction Loan, which was guaranteed by the Powers. The Powers thereupon lent Austria more money because they themselves would have had to pay the original investors if default persisted. This was known as 'saving' Austria.

H1645-0303

the phrase goes, to wash his hands. A colleague voted for him, but carelessly inserted into the box an incorrect ballot, one marked with his own name instead of that of the missing deputy. The vote was eighty-one to eighty against the government. The high-minded socialist speaker, Dr. Renner, announced however that an irregularity in the voting had occurred.[1] Long did he rue the day. Because the chamber got excited and in the confusion Dr. Renner so far lost his head as to resign and walk out of the meeting. The two deputy speakers likewise resigned; the session ended in pandemonium.

Then clever Dr. Dollfuss discovered that legally the parliament could not reconstitute itself, since by law only the speaker or deputy speakers could call a session, and all three, having resigned, were powerless to do so. It was a ridiculous little *contretemps*, but the Austrians are extremely legal-minded, and it ended parliamentarism in the country. Dollfuss, like a bulldog, pounced on his opportunity. He resigned office – having learned the good political lesson never to offer resignation until you are indispensable – and was reappointed with emergency powers. On March 7 a flood of decrees splashed on Vienna. People read them – and discovered that Dollfuss was their dictator.

His luck, until the end, was always of phenomenal quality, but at two-fifteen p.m. on October 3, 1933, the luckiest thing of all happened: he was shot. At two-fourteen he was only a chancellor; at two-sixteen, he became a martyr, and a living martyr at that. Only good luck stood between his heart and the two bullets fired at less than a yard's range. It was his great sense of occasion that made him deliver a radio speech from his bedside which turned him into the world's favourite convalescent. The would-be assassin was discovered to be a slightly Van-der-loony Nazi. How Hitler must have wanted to choke him for having made a hero of his own worst enemy! For the enormous and foreboding shadow of the Nazis had, meantime, begun to fall on Austria.

[1] The issue was a motion asking lenience for railway workers who a few days before had gone on strike. The railway administration was hopelessly in debt and could not pay the men their full wages. The workmen protested. For want of a few thousand schillings in the railway cash box, parliamentarism in Austria expired.

Marauders from the North

Hitler, who had become chancellor that year, wanted Austria for a variety of reasons; he mentions the union of Austria and Germany in the very first paragraph of *Mein Kampf*.

(1) Himself an Austrian, he viewed the little country's 'misbehaviour' as direct repudiation by his own people and thus an unforgivable assault on his personal prestige.

(2) The pan-Germanism of the Nazis was bound to look ridiculous as long as 6,500,000 Austrian Germans, directly contiguous to the Third Reich, sniggered at the Swastika instead of worshipping it.

(3) Germany badly needed a triumph in foreign policy, and a successful assault on Austria would have cloaked discontent at home.

(4) Austria possessed valuable reserves of iron ore, the Eisenerz deposit in Styria, which would compensate for Germany's mineral starvation.

(5) If Austria became part of Germany, the *Mittel-Europa* dream would begin to be realised: the dream of an encircled Czechoslovakia, of a Nazi push into the broad plains of Hungary and beyond.

At the beginning Nazis within Austria represented only a very small force. In the last general election (November 1930) they had not got a single seat, though Hitler at that time in Germany commanded six million votes. When Hitler became chancellor, Naziism among Austrians, who are, after all, German, steeply grew. Had the Nazis behaved less stupidly Austria might very well have fallen into their lap. Dollfuss, quarrelling with the socialists, was in a ticklish position; his Heimwehr support was unreliable; jealous clerical politicians were undercutting him. And the biggest Nazi card was Austrian defeatism; the Austrians don't like to fight and their attitude was, more or less, 'Oh, well, if the Germans want to take us in and support us, why not?' But instead of waiting the Nazis began an extraordinary campaign of terrorism and violence. This served to challenge Austria to stand on its own feet; it backed the country against the wall of its own dormant patriotism. Then Hitlerism inside Germany alienated large numbers of Austrian clericals, socialists, and Jews.

H1645-0304

In 1932, Austria was probably eighty per cent pro-*Anschluss*. By the end of 1933 it was at least sixty per cent against. Reason: the Hitler terror.

Even so, as the full-dress campaign of the Nazis got under way, Dollfuss faced formidable difficulties. Nazi violence in the form of shootings, intimidations, assaults, bombings, slanders, libels, occurred almost daily. The small but tough chancellor fought back. On May Day he forbade the usual social democrat demonstrations and to the amazement of the populace filled the Ringstrasse in Vienna with troops and barbed wire – as a show of force. Then he expelled the Bavarian minister of justice, Dr. Frank, who was visiting the country on a speaking tour. The Germans retaliated by imposing a 1,000-mark fine on German tourists to Austria, a serious blow to the tourist traffic; Dollfuss retaliated by outlawing the Nazi party. In Berlin the Austrian press attaché was arrested and expelled. This happened the night before Dollfuss was to address the London Economic Conference. The incident dramatised his appearance and he got a great ovation. The Nazis countered with more violence.

And then began a war, one of the queerest wars ever known everywhere, a war fought bloodlessly (except for casualties in minor border frays) but a war nevertheless. The Nazis invaded Austria. They crossed the frontier – through the air. Their planes dropped propaganda leaflets; their radio station in Munich, through the mouth of Herr Habicht, Hitler's 'inspector-general' for Austria, hurled speeches across the ether. As Austrian Nazis fled Austria, they were organised on German soil into an 'Austrian Legion', the avowed aim of which was reconquest of the homeland. Tension increased till the Great Powers found it intolerable; France, Italy and Great Britain joined to present a vigorous *démarche* in Berlin, and for a time the Nazis quieted down.

Even so, at the end of 1933, things looked very dark for Dollfuss.

Protector From the South

Three developments of great importance then occurred. First, Mussolini took Dollfuss in his pocket and became to all intents and purposes the Lord High Protector of Austria. This

H1645-0305

was because Italy could not endure the thought of strong Prussians instead of weak Austrians on the Brenner Pass, the frontier between Italy and Austria. If Austria went Nazi, it would in effect mean that Germany was in the backyard of Trieste and overlooking the fields of Lombardy, whereas it was cardinal point in Italian policy to keep independent Austria as a buffer state between the Fascist giants. Moreover, there are two hundred thousand German speaking people in the South Tyrol – and the further Germany is away from them the better Mussolini likes it. Dollfuss visited Mussolini three times. Their interests coincided.

Second, Dollfuss was forced to concede more and more authority to the Heimwehr, led by a young aristocrat and freebooter, Prince Ernst Rudiger von Starhemberg, and a tough Viennese ex-army officer Major Emil Fey. The Heimwehr, malignantly anti-socialist, became in effect the private army of the Dollfuss régime. As price for its support, it demanded more and more strenuous action against the social democrats. Dollfuss dissolved the socialist Schutzbund; he pinpricked and heckled the socialist leaders; he curtailed the financial privileges of the Vienna municipality; he gave way steadily to Heimwehr provocation. Moreover, the Heimwehr was financed partly by Italy, with the result that Dollfuss was doubly in Italian hands.

Third, Dollfuss, who had assumed five of the nine portfolios in the Austrian cabinet, becoming a dictator in name as well as fact, announced his intention to promulgate a new constitution reforming the state on an authoritarian, *Staendische* (guild) basis. He borrowed the idea from a papal encyclical, the *Quadragesimo Anno* of 1931, wherein Pope Pius XI pleaded for the end of social strife and urged the adoption of a corporate organisation of society as a 'cure' for class war. This meant, if introduced full force, the end of trade unionism under socialist control; so the socialists fought it tooth and hammer. As an adjunct to the new constitution, Dollfuss created the *Vaterlaendische Front* (Fatherland Front), a national movement above the parties, grounded on a patriotic basis. And Mussolini approved both measures.

But the crisis with Germany got hot again. The equilibrium of Austrian affairs was permanently shattered. Instead

H1645-0306

of the former tug of war between two more or less equal opponents, socialists and clericals, Dollfuss had to survive an angry triple struggle; the country became divided into three groups, roughly approximate in power – socialists, Nazis, and government-plus-Heimwehr. The dynamics of this struggle were unpredictable. Dollfuss was in the Centre, fighting both Left and Right. If the Nazis and socialists had joined forces, he would have been crushed. But Hitler made a socialist-Nazi coalition impossible. Another danger then cropped up: the Nazis and the Heimwehr – bad actors – started secret negotiations.

To ease himself from these predicaments, Dollfuss himself began a flirtation with the Nazis. His policy had been consistently defensive; he was willing to negotiate peace on the basis of independent Austria. Hitler agreed to negotiation. The details were to be settled between Dollfuss and Habicht, and on January 8, 1934, Habicht by terms of the arrangement, stepped into a plane at Munich and headed for Vienna. At the very last moment, Dollfuss – the explanation is that more Nazi terrorism, contrary to the truce, occurred on the night of the seventh – called off the plan. Habicht was stopped in mid-air by radio.

The next week Signor Suvitch, Mussolini's under-secretary of state for foreign affairs, arrived on an official visit to Vienna. He suggested a new way out. The Austrian régime, attacked on both flanks, could not possibly survive as it stood; Dollfuss had to eliminate one of his enemies in order to free himself to fight the other. Mussolini detested the Austrian social democrats. They had exposed his smuggling of weapons to Hungary in the Hirtenberg arms affair the year before. So the Italians told Dollfuss to 'solve' the problem by getting rid of the socialists. 'Liquidate the socialists somehow,' they said. This is the true explanation of the terrible event that then took place – the February civil war.

H1645-0307

CHAPTER XXI

THE FEBRUARY TRAGEDY

THE civil war, which echoed ominously in every chancellery in Europe, was called a socialist 'revolution' by the Dollfuss government. Just as the Nazis in Germany tried to foist on the world the legend that they saved the Reich from Marxism, so did the Dollfuss-Heimwehr-clerical apologists explain that they used field artillery to kill women and children in residential buildings in order to crush a 'Bolshevik insurrection'. This was, of course, not true. The tragic and terrible bloodshed of February 12 was the result of a cold-blooded Fascist (Heimwehr) *coup d'état*. The socialists resisted, certainly; so did the Belgians when Germany crossed the frontier in 1914. The Belgians may have fired the first shots, but they didn't start the War.

The government charged Dr. Otto Bauer and Col. Julius Deutsch, the two leading socialists, with being Bolsheviks. The fact was that their brand of social democracy saved Austria from Bolshevism in 1919 when both Bavaria and Hungary succumbed to communist régimes. The government alleged that members of the socialist Schutzbund possessed illegal arms. They did indeed – arms which the government itself gave them. It was conveniently forgotten that the Schutzbund was armed as a defensive measure against Jugoslavia during a frontier crisis in 1920, and that for many years the Schutzbund and federal army held the arms in *common*. The socialist tenements, the government said, were 'fortresses'. Of course. Any modern building is a fortress as soon as artillery starts to fire on it and if defenders with guns are within.

The Heimwehr, under Starhemberg and Major Fey, who was vice-chancellor in the government, had violently threatened extirpation of the socialists since 1927. A Heimwehr *Putsch* was averted in 1929 only by the most exiguous of margins, and in 1931 a Heimwehr rising in Styria was put down

H1645-0308

by military action: Starhemberg was arrested and jailed.[1] Then in 1932 Monsignor Seipel took the Heimwehr into his government, and under Dollfuss the movement was blessed officially as an auxiliary armed force. The socialists wrote their doom, not by aggression, but by temporising, by seeking compromise. This was seized on by the Heimwehr as a sign of weakness. The socialists wanted peace; but the Heimwehr wanted war.

After the Habicht fiasco and the Suvitch visit the Heimwehr got beyond control. Its leaders decided to force Dollfuss' hand, because the little chancellor, afraid of bloodshed, seemed to be wavering. Conveniently, he went to Hungary on a state visit; it is unknown exactly to what extent he encouraged what happened in his absence. The Heimwehr throughout Austria progressively ran wild through the provinces. Let extracts from the chronology of the *Bulletin of International News*, published by the Royal Institute of International Affairs, tell the story:

> Jan. 31. The Heimwehr leaders presented the Governor of the Tyrol with six demands which, if carried out, amounted to the establishment of semi-military rule in the Province. . . . This followed the mobilisation of 8,000 Heimwehr on Jan. 30 to avert disorders threatened by the Nazis.
>
> Feb. 6. The leaders of the Upper Austrian Heimwehr, supported by the Patriotic Front, were understood to be making the same demands as those in the Tyrol, and detachments of them occupied some of the public buildings at Linz, the provincial capital.
>
> Feb. 7. The Heimwehr leaders in Styria and the Burgenland submitted to the Provincial Governors at Graz and Eisenstadt demands for a more authoritative government and a semi-military administration.
>
> Feb. 8. The police raided the offices of the *Arbeiter Zeitung*. . . . This was a sequel to the seizure a few days previously of arms and explosives in buildings to which the socialists had access at Schwechat. . . .
>
> Feb. 9. The Heimwehr leaders in Salzburg presented authoritarian demands to the Provincial Governor. The Governor of Lower Austria was understood to have refused to see the local Heimwehr leaders, on the ground that their demands were unconstitutional. Following on reports that

[1] And fined £5 10s. See G. E. R. Gedye's excellent book, *Heirs to the Habsburgs*, p. 105.

H1645-0309

the Heimwehr were demanding of the Government the banning of the socialist party and the occupation of the Vienna City Hall, the socialist headquarters intimated that any such action would be the signal for a general strike. Herr Dollfuss returned from Budapest and received the Heimwehr leaders.

Feb. 10. The vice-chancellor deprived the Mayor of Vienna (a Social Democrat) and other City Officials of the authority to supervise matters of public safety.

Feb. 11. Speaking at a Heimwehr parade, attended by the minister of war, Major Fey (the vice-chancellor) said, 'In the last two days I have made certain that Herr Dollfuss is with us. *To-morrow we are going to clean up Austria.*' (Italics mine.)

Major Fey was as good as his word. On February 12 the fighting began.

Gemütlichkeit Gone Wrong

At about eight-thirty that morning one of the local Press agencies phoned me that fighting had broken out at Linz. He had few details. Apparently socialist workers resisted when Heimwehr guardsmen invaded their premises. As early as February 7 I had concluded a dispatch to my newspaper with the words 'civil war is possible'. But even on the morning of the twelfth I thought that there was still some hope that Dollfuss would keep his head and avert a crisis. Otto Bauer had told me not long before that he and Dollfuss would 'negotiate'. I phoned the *Arbeiter Zeitung*, the socialist newspaper, and got no reply. I rushed out to pick up what information I could find, and returned home at about eleven-thirty to write my story. At eleven-forty-five my wife said, 'Try to turn on the electric light.' I twiddled the button; no light. General strike!

So we thought, but as we learned later, the strike of the electrical workers was not, alas, general. They had downed tools spontaneously as word of fighting came from Linz. I noted the strangely quiet streets, because the tramcars had stopped; most of the motormen and conductors didn't know why the current had snapped off; small, curious crowds surrounded the stranded trams. (Later that day, we saw innumerable horse-drawn or motor-tractors pulling them along the dead rails to the barns. . . .) At the *Arbeiter Zeitung* I learned that the police, wearing steel helmets and armed with carbines, had

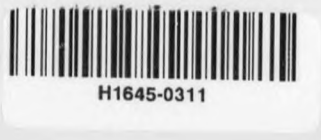
H1645-0310

evacuated the building. My wife and I with two friends drove hurriedly through the working-class Ottakring and Hernals districts. We were nearing one of the great municipal tenements when I heard for the first time in years that unpleasantly brittle and discordant music – rifle fire.

The battle in Vienna lasted four days, and in the provinces five or six. Almost a thousand men, women, and children were killed. Nine socialist leaders, including one man seriously wounded, and dragged to the gallows from a stretcher, were hanged. The Karl Marx Hof and the Goethe Hof were badly smashed by shell-fire – two of the finest blocks of workers' dwellings in the world. I remember a scene in the Goethe Hof a few hours after the bombardment. Mournful women and frightened children stared miserably at the police. The simple, clean little flats were blasted to bits by shell-fire. I walked through the kindergarten. Desks, black-boards, school-books, paint-boxes, shattered toys, were smashed together with broken beams and fallen plaster. On one wall stood a coloured-paper design proudly inscribed by with the name of its author, aged six. A bullet had crashed through it. On the other wall, in this Marxist, 'atheist' cathedral, was a lithograph of the crucifixion. The glass was shattered – by a Christian Social shell.

I did not see Dollfuss to talk to until the twenty-second. When I mentioned that Bauer and Deutsch, who, when the fight was hopeless, had fled to Czechoslovakia, told me in Bratislava that they tried vainly to get in touch with him on the morning of the twelfth, in order to avert bloodshed by some last minute compromise, the chancellor looked puzzled and said, earnestly, blandly, that he had been at mass in St. Stephen's when the lights went out! – a signal that he could only interpret as the call for a general strike. On the afternoon of the thirteenth, incidentally, when fighting was at its hottest, Dollfuss spent a quiet hour having tea with the Papal Nuncio.

The spoils of victory for Dollfuss and the Heimwehr were enormous. Literally not since the Turks had there been such loot. The socialist municipality owned about thirty-five per cent of the land of Vienna; it employed fifty-four thousand people and was by far the largest enterprise in Central


H1645-0311

H1645-0312

Europe; from 1923 to 1929 it spent about £22,000,000 on housing and similar projects, and its funds in the municipal savings banks alone were about £14,000,000. It collected about £5,000,000 in taxes per year, and it owned the municipal gas works, the electrical plant, the street-cars and subways and omnibuses, the slaughter-houses and the public baths, a cemetery, a brewery, a bakery, and a big department store. All this went into government hands. Thousands of people were arrested, and thousands lost their jobs; the social disorganisation resulting from the outbreak was tremendous.

Socialist Side

The secret history of the socialist end of the 'revolt' has never been fully told.

One vitally important factor in the conflict was the bitter personal enmity between Bauer, the socialist leader, and Dollfuss.

Otto Bauer, a brilliantly cultivated Jew of fifty-five, was the brains of the social democratic party. A gentleman-politician, Bauer acted as he thought British gentlemen-politicians acted; and he idealised them slightly. He was honest, he was scrupulous, he was fair. An intellectual in the best and worst senses of the word, he composed sound theories, but was utterly inadequate to meet an unforseen situation, the importance or even the existence of which he would proceed to belittle or deny. Dollfuss, on the other hand, was about as theoretical as a flea; he hopped from place to place by instinct.

Bauer, in judgments of people, was far from sound. He had had an over-exaggerated admiration for the intellect of Monsignor Seipel, whom he called a foeman worthy of his pen; the politics he liked were polemical debates between himself on the front page of the *Arbeiter Zeitung* and Seipel in the *Reichspost*. And Bauer underestimated Dollfuss seriously. He called him a fool. And Dollfuss, cunning as a peasant, charming as a child, was very far from being a fool. Openly in the chamber Bauer denounced the chancellor as a liar and *'Schuft'* (scoundrel). Dollfuss never forgave him. A simpler man might have eliminated Bauer by manœuvring him from the leadership of the party, but the chancellor was too subtle for that; he knew the party was more important to Bauer than

his own position and that he would not greatly care what happened to him so long as the party went on; therefore Dollfuss decided that the party had to go, and Bauer with it.

Behind this first-rate personal quarrel was, of course, the critically difficult position of the socialists both ideologically and politically. Orthodox IInd International socialism was, in 1934, as old-fashioned as horse-cars. Flattened between the opposites of Fascism and communism, the socialists became, instead of a revolutionary party, a party of the middle. They represented workers *in work*; and after some years of comfortable, almost *bourgeois* living in the Engels Hof or the Goethe Hof they lost a good deal of revolutionary fervour; they were not so anxious as before to man the barricades.

Socialism lost out in Austria because of its own decency. The socialists hated bloodshed and violence; they could not believe that their enemies were capable of ruthlessness and treachery; innocently they believed the lies of their opponents, because their own characters were grounded on probity and truth.

'Tactically, the socialists were in a hopeless position,' Frances Gunther wrote at the time. 'As socialists, they believed in the dictatorship of the proletariat. As democrats, they believed in the tolerant rule of the majority. Through the gap between these two stools, they crashed. They socialised some of the luxuries of life, but none of the necessities. Back in 1919 they had a chance to acquire the Alpine Montangesellschaft, the pivot of Austrian industry; they let it go, and instead built lovely swimming-pools and gardens for Vienna kiddies, by means of taxes which were just and therefore doubly intolerable to the former upper classes. Militarily, they succeeded in arming themselves – as socialists. But as democrats, they failed to disarm their enemies.'

From 1932 on Bauer and his men were pressed closer and closer against the wall. The Dollfuss technique was to whittle away their advantages, but never give them a square issue to fight on. Unemployment and the growth of the economic crisis had made the use of the supreme socialist weapon, the general strike, more and more dangerous. The quintessence of unrealism and decency, Bauer – who, after all, commanded the largest party in the country, with sixty per cent of the

H1645-0313

H1645-0314

Vienna electorate – offered to let Dollfuss rule dictatorially for two years, provided only the steering committee of parliament kept in operation. Dollfuss refused. The socialists seventeen different times offered to disarm the Schutzbund if the government would disarm the Heimwehr. Dollfuss made no categorical answer, but simply kept Bauer dangling. Finally the socialists announced the four things which *would* cause a general strike: (1) imposition on Austria of a Fascist constitution, (2) installation of a government commissar in Vienna, (3) dissolution of the social democratic party, (4) dissolution of the trade unions. Dollfuss simply pasted these four items in his hat, gleeful; he knew that he must merely avoid these major provocations and the fight was won.

Bauer himself generously – too generously – admitted his error. Writing (*Austrian Democracy Under Fire*, p. 42) of the death of parliament, he says:

> 'We could have responded on March 15, (1933) by calling a general strike. Never were the conditions for a successful strike so favourable as on that day. The counter revolution which was just then reaching its full development in Germany had aroused the Austrian masses. The masses of the workers were awaiting the signal for battle. The railwaymen were not yet so crushed as they were eleven months later. The government's military organisation was far weaker than in February 1934. At that time we might have won.
>
> 'But we shrank back dismayed from the battle. We still believed that we should be able to reach a peaceable settlement by negotiation. Dollfuss had promised to negotiate with us at an early date . . . and we were still fools enough to trust a promise of Dollfuss. We postponed the fight, because we wanted to spare the country the disaster of a bloody civil war. The civil war, nevertheless, broke out eleven months later, but under conditions that were considerably less favourable to ourselves. It was a mistake – the most fatal of all our mistakes.'

Confusion Worse Confounded

On the night of February 11 – the day before the outbreak – Bauer and his wife and two friends went, of all places, to the movies where they saw Greta Garbo in *Grand Hotel*. Thus was the 'Bolshevist plotter' making ready for the 'revolution'! Returning home, he found a message from the leader of the Schutzbund in Linz, a man named Bernacek, announcing that

he, Bernacek, would resist by force the Heimwehr attack expected for the morrow. Bauer, agitated, sent Bernacek the following telegram, appealing to him not to provoke action: AUNTIE'S ALL RIGHT BOTH THE DOCTORS AND UNCLE OTTO THINK THAT NOTHING SHOULD BE DONE AT THIS MOMENT Bernacek, a hothead, contemptuous of Bauer's caution, disregarded this message, and next day, defending himself, he took to arms.

What happened then was one of the ghastliest muddles in revolutionary history.

Bauer got news at about eight-thirty of the bloodshed in Linz. He summoned a meeting of the *Aktions-Ausschuss* (executive committee) of the trade unions and the party. A vote to call a general strike was carried by a majority of only one. Meantime, the workers in the powerful electrical union, inflamed, infuriated, preferring death fighting to death by slow suffocation, had – without orders – already struck. Then a terrible thing occurred. The general strike manifesto was rushed to the *Arbeiter Zeitung* presses for publication. But no contact had been established between the electrical workers and the *Arbeiter Zeitung* building, where the committee met. At the very moment that printing of the manifesto was to begin, the presses stopped. The electrical workers had shut off the power! So the call for a general strike was never promulgated, because of an unofficial strike of men who should have been an essential part of the general strike.

It appears that the general strike was set for five p.m. The idea was to bluff the government. What it did was give the government seven precious hours of warning. Bauer and Deutsch went to Schutzbund headquarters to direct operations in the field, but other prominent socialists waited upon the government to appeal once more for conciliation. General Koerner, a Schutzbund executive, went to see President Miklas; a group of Right-wing socialists, led by Dr. Renner, called on the Governor of Lower Austria to ask him to intervene with Dollfuss for them. (They did not go to Dollfuss direct; they hated him too much, and they knew he wouldn't see them.) The government did what any hard-boiled government would do. Conveniently the whole leadership of the party, Bauer and Deutsch excepted, were in the lions' den and

H1645-0315

the authorities simply arrested the lot. Koerner was apprehended actually in Miklas's anteroom, and the others – including the socialist journalist Braunthal who was simply reporting the event – were bagged wholesale. The only socialist who behaved with sense and dignity was the veteran mayor of Vienna, Karl Seitz, who stuck to his desk in the town hall like a captain on the bridge of a battleship, and was finally dragged off by force.

The strike was a terrible failure. Everything that could possibly go wrong went wrong. Of course no one counted on the relentless acumen and energy of Dollfuss and Fey. By mid-afternoon, every important socialist leader was in jail. Anticipating this the party had appointed second and third men for each post; they were all arrested too. As a result no one remained to give orders. The signal for the strike was to be the stoppage of the trains. But the railwaymen did not stop the trains, because they never knew a strike had been officially declared. Couriers were sent out – too late – to rouse the countryside. Most of them were caught. A liaison committee had been set up in advance for communication between fighters and staff. It never met, because of a childish inaccuracy in the location of the rendezvous.

The fighting that followed was heartbreaking. I saw most of it. The lack of organisation was pitiful. Bauer, a stern disciplinarian, had ossified the party, so that young men eager to go on the streets obediently waited all day Monday and even till Tuesday expecting *orders* to fight. The orders never came; the young men then began shooting and were slaughtered. As early as February 3, the government – assisted by turncoat Schutzbunders, who sold secrets of the organisation – had arrested a group of key Schutzbund leaders. Most of the workers did not know where their arms were hidden. Only a few men in each district were cognisant of the location of the secret depots. The consequence was that young Schutzbunders I know dug with their hands all Monday and Tuesday nights in the courtyards of their tenements, searching wildly for the arms that they knew were there. They never found them.

One band of three hundred Schutzbunders never received arms because the second-in-command refused to disclose their

H1645-0316

location without orders from above, even though the supposition was that his superior had been arrested. Another man I know could have machine-gunned a whole detachment of police, but the rule was that no socialist should fire until fired upon; so my machine-gunner had to wait till the police were nicely in position and ready for attack. The government cut key telephones so that no communication was possible between one besieged tenement and the others. Workers in one house fought with no idea whether their comrades were keeping up the battle or not. And the government maintained over the radio a stream of lies and slander – for instance that Bauer and Deutsch had walked off with the trade union funds.

One can say what one likes about the leadership of the party. But about the valiant courage of the men there can be no doubt. It took a modern army of nineteen thousand men, equipped with machine-guns, armoured-cars, and field artillery, four whole days to crush the resistance of perhaps five thousand forlorn and desperate Schutzbunders, their backs to the wall or their necks in the noose. It was a hopeless fight, but it was magnificent. The workers of the world will never forget the February heroism of the Vienna proletariat.

'Down Thou Climbing Sorrow!'

After February Dollfuss promulgated the new corporative constitution. The old parliament, comatose, was revived so that it could finally commit legal suicide. An extraordinary document, the constitution made one think that Austria was going to be in the twentieth century what it had been in the nineteenth – the heart and soul of European reaction. The last vestiges of free popular suffrage disappeared. Way was opened for a Habsburg restoration. A chamber chosen on a guild basis replaced the old parliament. And the preamble to the constitution announced that all the 'rights' of the Austrian people derived from God.

But more mundane affairs preoccupied the little chancellor. A confusing period of inner rivalries and shifts of power began, concurrently between Dollfuss and Starhemberg for control of the country and between Starhemberg and Fey for control of the Heimwehr. Fearful that the Heimwehr was too powerful, Dollfuss encouraged the growth of another private army, the

H1645-0317

H1645-0318

extreme clerical and monarchist *Sturmscharen* of the minister of justice Dr. Schuschnigg. The Heimwehr,[1] sore, flirted with the Nazis. And on the honey of these confusions the Nazis fed like bees.

From February to midsummer Dollfuss, desperately needing all energy for settlement, was unexpectedly tender to the Nazis, his worst enemies. A new campaign of violence began. Time and time again he threatened to hang a Nazi terrorist; he never did. Reasons: (1) he feared retaliation; (2) he was sabotaged by his own civil service; (3) he didn't want to make martyrs of Nazi criminals; (4) he wanted – still – to leave the way open for negotiations with Germany.

Events promptly showed that the Nazis were the chief beneficiaries of February. The Mussolini-Suvitch plan turned out all wrong. Instead of strengthening himself by the murder of the socialists, Dollfuss was disastrously weakened, because he had destroyed the political morale of the country. The Nazis were delighted that he had done their own job for them in removing the working-class movement which was the best defence of democracy. Socialists down! Nazis up! Nevertheless, Mussolini's support kept Dollfuss in.

For five months there was an uneasy lull, punctuated by Nazi bombs. Then, on July 25, 1934, civil war again struck Austria. A socialist lad wounded a policeman in a scuffle and the authorities chose to make an example of him; it was splendid chance to make good the threats of the death penalty and at the same time avoid the danger of Nazi vengeance. The boy, Josef Gerl, was hanged on July 24. This event did not directly precipitate the Nazi revolt. But within twenty hours Dollfuss himself was dead. He hanged a socialist, and, illogical as it seems, the Nazis killed him.

[1] One of the most popular anecdotes of the period described two Heimwehr men who met two others. The first two said after they separated, 'I wonder if those two Nazis know that we are socialists.'

H1645-0319

CHAPTER XXII

DEATH OF DOLLFUSS

THE murder of Dollfuss marked the entrance of gangsterism into European politics on an international basis. On June 30, inside Germany, the Nazis went Al Capone, and on July 25 these methods crossed into a neighbouring land. The assassination was a deliberate exercise in policy; the Nazis had to murder Dollfuss because every other method to defeat him failed. The story of the Dollfuss killing is that of an organised conspiracy to murder.

All the Putschists seem to have been members of the eighty-ninth SS regiment, one of four SS (Hitlerite guard) detachments which secretly existed on Austrian soil. The rank and file of the plotters were former non-commissioned officers or privates of the regular Austrian army who had been dismissed from the service for their Nazi sympathies. Also among them were active officers of the Vienna police whose surreptitious Nazi activities had escaped detection – an extremely important point.

The plotters looked for support in three directions. (1) In Germany there were Frauenfeld and Habicht, the exiled leaders of the Austrian section of the Nazi party. (2) In Vienna there was a group of high police executives and officials, who were later arrested or fled the country. (3) In Rome there was 'King Anton' Rintelen. There was another leader, a mysterious civilian whose *nom-de-complot* was Kunze, of whom more later.

Dr. Anton Rintelen, a white-cropped man of fifty-eight, who looked less like a conspirator than almost anyone I ever met, was promoted by Dollfuss to be Austrian minister in Rome in order to get him out of the country. He was too powerful to be overtly sacked. For ten years Rintelen had been Governor of Styria, the turbulent province south of Vienna. He was clever and cold and ambitious and, though named by

the Nazis as their chancellor, he was not a Nazi. He was Rintelen. Years ago he flirted with the socialists hoping to reach power by a socialist coalition. When the socialists faded and the Nazis rose he intrigued with the Nazis. It is not the least of the ironies of July 25th that this chief actor should have been motivated by aims so crass. He ran with the Nazis not because he loved Hitler but because he wanted a job and loved power. The Nazis, on their side, needed him. He was 'respectable' and they knew they could most easily gain Austria through the medium of a transitory coalition government. Rintelen was their Austrian Papen.

Various Styrian industrialists were friends of Rintelen. In their factories, like the Alpine Montangesellschaft, the largest industrial concern in Austria, the workmen were secretly organised on an SA basis. Here the Styrian rebels hid their arms.

Germany fed the springs of dissatisfaction and treachery with a powerful stream of gold. I had it on what seemed to be indisputable authority that the Germans spent 75,000,000 marks in Austria for propaganda in the seventeen months between January 1933 and July 1934. Of German moral responsibility for the Dollfuss murder there was no doubt. Munich day in, day out, preached violence. And plenty of indication of German foreknowledge of the actual plot may be cited. As witness:

(1) The Munich headquarters of the Nazi party, according to the official *Wiener Zeitung*, had a special aeroplane ready at nine a.m. on the 25th for the victorious flight of Habicht and Frauenfeld to Vienna.

(2) As early as July 21st, a Berlin photograph agency sent out pictures of Rintelen marked 'New Austrian Chancellor – Hold for Release'.

(3) A Nazi named Abereger, arrested in Innsbruck and later sentenced to life imprisonment for bomb smuggling, testified that on July 22nd, three days before the murder, he was informed by courier from Munich that an armed rising was scheduled in Austria for the 25th.

(4) Italian secret agents reported movements of the Austrian Legion (Austrian Nazis on German soil) to the frontier on the evening of the 24th. The legion was to take posts two miles behind the border.

H1645-0320

The Nazis were in a hurry because Dollfuss planned to visit Mussolini in Riccioni, an Italian seaside resort, later that week, and they feared that some new agreement between Mussolini and Dollfuss would finally beat them. One story is that the *Putsch* was first planned for July 24th, but was postponed a day when inside information came to the plotters that Dollfuss' last cabinet session in Austria would take place on the 25th, not on the 24th as first believed. It was the intention of the conspirators to capture the whole cabinet. Rintelen had arrived in Vienna from Rome on July 23rd, ostensibly on a holiday.

So much for the setting. The actual events of July 25th began as follows:

At about eleven a.m. the conspirators assembled at various points in the streets of Vienna. Their organisation was excellent and they acted with the utmost smoothness and precision. One group gathered, man by man, on the sidewalk of the Kolowat Ring. They had received weapons from their leaders the night before, and some had found cards in their letter boxes notifying them of the rendezvous. Not all the plotters knew who the higher-ups were; the password was the number '89'. Fourteen started from Kolowat Ring for *Ravag*, the radio headquarters, where the signal for the *Putsch* was given. They were not disguised and they went on foot. Loitering on the Johannesgasse, where *Ravag* is situated, were two uniformed policemen, members of the gang, who 'covered' them and led them to the door.

A larger group meantime assembled at the gymnasium of the German Athletic Club on Siebensterngasse. This building, it is interesting to note, directly adjoins an army barracks. The plot had been organised with such care that one of the conspirators confessed later to having been informed by telegram where to come and what to do. The group numbered one hundred and forty-four, of whom no fewer than one hundred and six were former army non-coms or privates, and ten were *active* police. The hour of attack was chosen with beautiful precision so that the plotters would reach the chancellery at the moment of the changing of the guard, when it was most vulnerable.

At about ten a.m. a police officer named Dobler, who was

H1645-0321

also a prominent (secret) Nazi aware of the plot turned traitor to the Nazis and in very befuddled and Viennese way betrayed the business to the authorities.[1] Had they acted promptly, Dollfuss would never have been shot. But the police who were loyal had been fatigued by a plethora of false alarms, and the disloyal police sabotaged attempts to take precautions.

Dobler's movements that morning form a fascinating record. Trying to notify the authorities without giving himself away, he and intermediaries of the most astoundingly fortuitous variety succeeded, between ten and eleven-thirty, in holding meetings with public officials in at least three different – of course – coffee-houses. By about eleven-fifteen Major Wrabel, the aide-de-camp to Major Fey, minister of public security, had heard the gist of the matter. He sent a trusted detective, Marek, to Siebensterngasse to investigate. Fey seems to have been informed, 'rather vaguely', at eleven-forty-five. He acted promptly and at once informed the cabinet, but it was too late.

The detective, Marek, arrived at the Siebensterngasse barracks and saw the plotters but the presence of uniformed police threw him off the track. The whole plot was made possible by the factor of disguise. Nevertheless his suspicions grew and three times he telephoned to Wrabel between twelve-ten and twelve-thirty, once from a public phone-booth, once from a coffee-house, once from a furniture shop. Wrabel transmitted the alarm to the public security officials, but police headquarters were only informed later. Meantime loyal police had been misled by clever and daring spies who reported that an attack on Dollfuss was being prepared in a different part of town.

After his third call Marek was seen by the conspirators and they seized him. He was dragged into the hall, where he saw the men changing into army uniform, the uniform of the crack Vienna *Deutschmeister* regiment. The rebels clambered into three private trucks which they had hired, one marked BUTTER AND EGGS, and started for the chancellery. They did not know what to do with Marek and so (amaz-

[1] Dobler later committed suicide or was murdered by either loyal or Nazi police. The full story is in the official Austrian version of the events, translated into English as *The Death of Dollfuss*.

H1645-0322

ing cheek) they took him with them. When they were close to the chancellery Marek jumped out, and none of the Nazis, for fear of raising the alarm, dared shoot him. The reader may well ask how three trucks full of 'soldiers' could traverse a dozen streets of a crowded city at noon without attracting attention; but troop movements were not uncommon in Vienna at this time, and the uniformed police on the running-boards allayed suspicion.

The plotters reached the chancellery at twelve-fifty-three p.m. The scene was set for dramatic and terrible events. But first there is the *Ravag* episode to tell.

Revolt on the Ether

July 25th was a hot day, though not sunny, and I wanted to go swimming. I had finished my morning's work and put on my hat to leave for lunch when at seven minutes past one the telephone rang. One of my tipsters said in a low voice, 'Have you heard the radio? The Vienna radio has just made this announcement: *"The government of Dr. Dollfuss has resigned. Dr. Rintelen has assumed power."* It may be a joke. I don't know. I'll check it up and call in a minute.'

I put in a call for Paris at once (we send our stories by telephone) and while waiting for it I telephoned (*a*) the American legation, (*b*) a friend, M. W. Fodor of the *Manchester Guardian*, with whom I worked closely, (*c*) the Bundeskanzleramt or chancellery. The legation had heard the radio announcement and was investigating. Fodor rushed to meet me down-town. The Bundeskanzleramt – interesting! – did not answer. Then Telegrafen-Compagnie, a local news service, called with the radio announcement and said that a Nazi *Putsch* was in progress. I wrote a brief story and finished it just when the Paris call came through. It was one-nineteen. I still had my hat on.

I lost about ten minutes because a police officer stopped me and made me drive him to his headquarters. A general alarm had been sounded, he said, but he didn't know about what. I got to the Bundeskanzleramt at about one-thirty-five. The tawny oak doors were shut and a few policemen were outside, but otherwise nothing seemed wrong. I assumed that the government had locked itself in, preparing defence.

H1645-0323

An armoured car passed by and with a couple of other newspaper men I followed in pursuit. It turned away from the Bundeskanzleramt and lurched round the Ring to the Johannesgasse, the *Ravag* headquarters. The locale is comparable to Regent Street or Piccadilly in London. The car got into position and the police on the turret ducked inside the steel shell. Then I heard revolver shooting and machine-gun fire. The police were storming *Ravag* to blast out the Nazi Putschists there. I had a feeling that it was all monstrously unreal. The police pushed us back, but we were eager to see: it isn't often you get a pitched battle in the heart of Vienna. Then PRPRPRFFBUM we heard exploding hand-grenades. A waiter in a white-duck jacket slid through the crowd with a platter of beers.

What had happened at *Ravag* was this. At two minutes to one the fourteen plotters from Kolowat Ring entered the building. They shot the loyal policeman on guard and the chauffeur of the *Ravag* director who were lounging in the doorway. Four Nazis reached the studio, where a broadcast of gramophone records was going on. They grabbed the announcer, put a gun in his ribs, and made him give their message. This was the signal for the *Putsch*. All over Austria it throbbed.

But a courageous telephone girl had had time to sound an alarm, although all the lines to police headquarters – an interesting point – were 'busy'. And an official with great presence of mind cut the wires to Bisamberg, the sending station, so that the Nazis were unable to give a second message. Their plan had been to repeat 'Dollfuss has resigned; Rintelen is chancellor' every ten minutes, interspersing this aerial tattoo with instructions to the country, false news, and so on, which would have paralysed any defence action of the government. I remember that a British radio expert told me years before how marvellously a revolution might be organised by radio.

An unfortunate actor rehearsing a broadcast skit became hysterical with excitement, started to scream, and was shot. The police broke into the building and another policeman was killed, also the Nazi leader. Of the five who died, three bled to death because no doctor was available. Outside we

H1645-0324

waited till the police, victorious, began to drag out their captives at about three-twenty. I proceeded home and wrote my story, longer this time, and put in my telephone call to Paris.

I went to the Bundeskanzleramt again at about three-fifty. On the way I ran into G. E. R. Gedye of the *New York Times*, who was returning from *Ravag*, and we stopped a second, both saying, 'Well, it seems to be all over.' We certainly were wrong, but very few people knew then that anything was amiss except at *Ravag*. I had passed the Bundeskanzleramt myself before, and it looked entirely normal except for the closed doors. Feeling a flicker of doubt, I said to Gedye, 'You know, a government doesn't usually lock itself in at a moment of great crisis.' He agreed. 'Funny.' And we remembered that the phone had not answered. I walked towards the building. A patrol had been flung round the area and I couldn't get in. Then the story burst.

Policy by Murder

The Bundeskanzleramt, or Federal Chancellery, is the old Metternich palace where the Congress of Vienna met in 1815. Certainly from that day to this it can have witnessed no more dramatic and agitated a situation. A stately baroque building, its cream-coloured façade opens on the Ballhausplatz. Grilled balconies of graceful iron project twenty feet over the sidewalk. Directly opposite is a post office built into the heavy walls of the Hofburg, the former imperial palace, and on the west side a high gate leads to the green meadow of the Burg garden.

The hundred and forty-four Nazis from Siebensterngasse, sweeping into the courtyard, had seized those members of the government within, Dollfuss, Fey, and Fey's assistant Karwinsky, and about one hundred and fifty members of the staff, civil servants, clerks, and so on. The guards in the building, sixty strong, suspected nothing or at least put up no resistance and were disarmed and arrested. The police plotters knew well the corridors and rooms of the complicated building (some of them, indeed, had previously been posted there on duty), and the occupation was quick and thorough. The analogy for England would be the seizure of 10 Downing Street, since the

H1645-0325

Bundeskanzleramt is the central ganglion of government in Austria.

Nothing whatever of these events was known to the small group outside the building. Among the newspaper men who, having heard the radio signal, had arrived by one-fifteen and stayed till nightfall were Nypels of the Amsterdam *Handelsblatt*, Diez of the New York *Herald Tribune*, Werner of the A.P., two Hungarians, one Albanian, and one Czech. They did not succumb to the temptation to follow the armoured-car which led me away to *Ravag*. They saw the whole story, and from a correlation of their records I made the following chronology.

The very first arrival on Ballhausplatz after Nypels was a tall blond youthful German photographer, who had arrived in Vienna from Berlin the day before. Calmly he set up his tripod. At one-twenty-five some plain-clothes detectives and four uniformed police wearing steel helmets and carrying rifles arrived. A shout pierced the basement window, 'Go away, or we shoot.' At one-fifty-five a Heimwehr lieutenant arrived, unarmed and alone, and smashed his fists against the door, shouting with quixotic magnificence, 'I give you five minutes to open the door, or I will blow it up.' This gesture accomplished, he went away and was not seen again.

(Dollfuss was already bleeding to death by this time, the blood pumping from the hole in his throat, but no one knew. . . .)

Several other officers arrived, looked about, decided that nothing was wrong, and went away again. Traffic was still entirely normal. Then, at five minutes past two, came Dr. Funder, the venerable editor of the government organ *Reichspost*. A voice from inside was heard, *'Machen Sie sich keine Sorgen'*. (Don't be alarmed) 'Rintelen is chancellor and a new police chief is coming from Berlin.' Funder hurried away. Many Heimwehr men and police had now arrived. At about two-thirty began a series of ultimatums that lasted the whole day. A Heimwehr officer knocked on the door at two-thirty-five and said, 'We give you twenty minutes and then we blow up the building.' 'Go away or we shoot,' a voice, distorted and hollow, answered through the door. The impression was now general that the whole government had been taken prisoner.

H1645-0326

At three o'clock Major Baar, a Heimwehr officer and vice-governor of Lower Austria, arrived. A police officer told him, 'I don't know what to do. I am awaiting reinforcements and orders.' The Heimwehr were now massed along the road to the Burg Theatre, but the police pushed them back. 'Who is inside?' Baar was asked. He answered, 'Dollfuss, Fey, and Karwinsky are inside, prisoners of the Putschists. A new government has been formed and is meeting at the war ministry on Stubenring.' Police reinforcements came and a courteous officer said, 'Look here, gentlemen, this is not a good place to stand because here you are in the direct line of fire.' At three-forty-five traffic was finally stopped and the little group of onlookers were a compact island in the broad empty pond of the square.

At three-fifty-seven Major Fey, who has a face like a battle-axe, appeared for the first time on the balcony. He was pale as paper. He wrung his hands as if to free them from dust on the door-handle. With him was Holzweber, the leader of the rebels, a bespectacled little man who looked like a clerk on a stool despite his captain's uniform, blazing with decorations. The crowd started to shout, and Fey called in a low voice, *'Ruhe!'* (Quiet.)

Everyone thought at once, 'It is a *Putsch* made by Fey and the regular army.'

Fey called, 'Where is the commandant?' He could not be found, but a policeman walked up and saluted respectfully. 'Who are you?' Fey asked. 'I am Captain Eibel, awaiting orders,' the policeman said. Holzweber whispered to Fey and Fey said, 'Come without weapons to the back door.' Eibel nodded and Holzweber called after him, 'Be sure you are without arms and come alone.'

Heimwehr men in the square had recognised Fey and they began to shout 'Fey! Our Fey!'

At eight minutes past four Eibel returned from the back door on Metastasiogasse. He was running hard, his helmet was off, and his hair was damp and disorderly. He grabbed an open alarm phone. Everyone heard what he said, talking to headquarters:

'I've been inside, I've spoken with Fey. The Bundeskanzler (Dollfuss) is apparently badly wounded. He has resigned.

H1645-0327

There is a new government, and Fey remains vice-chancellor.' Headquarters asked something and Eibel replied, 'They are disciplined and look like the military. The staff of the chancellery, one hundred and fifty men and women, are under guard in the courtyard.'

By this time the commandant, Hofrat Humpel, had turned up and he said to Eibel, 'If the chancellor is wounded he should have a physician. Run to the back door and offer to bring a doctor.' Eibel came back: 'I knocked and the sentry said, "No need for a physician any more."' So it was known to this limited group that the chancellor was dead.

At four-twenty Fey appeared on the balcony again, Holzweber at his elbow. The idea that it was a *Putsch* with Fey in charge was exploded because obviously Holzweber was in command and giving Fey orders. Fey called *'Ruhe!'* (Quiet.) Then, bending over the balcony, he called, 'Where is Rintelen?' The Heimwehr started to shout to the Nazis inside:

'Woe on you if you harm our Fey. Touch our Fey, and we will hang every one of you on these trees.'

Fey shouted: *'Nichts unternehmen!* (Take no action.) Nothing may be done until I give the order. I am in command here.' He beckoned to Humpel and ordered him round to the back door. A big Heimwehr man, just under the balcony, crossed his hands like a seat and gestured to Fey to jump. Humpel came back in about twenty minutes and shouted, 'Rintelen is chancellor, Fey is vice-chancellor. They are waiting for Rintelen, who will come in a few minutes.'

On the Balcony

But it was not Rintelen who came; it was quite another person. Neustädter-Stürmer, a member of Dollfuss' cabinet. He waited a few moments and then Fey appeared on the balcony again and called, 'Where is Rintelen?'

Neustädter-Stürmer shouted, standing in the street, *'Rintelen kommt nicht!'* (Rintelen is not coming.)

Astonished, Fey turned to Holzweber at his elbow and a Heimwehr man called, 'Shall we storm the building?'

Fey shouted down: 'No, nothing is to be done. Take no action without my orders.'

H1645-0328

Neustädter-Stürmer answered, 'A new government has been formed and I represent it. In the name of the government I promise a safe conduct to the rebels. They will be conducted to the German frontier. If you do not surrender in twenty minutes we storm the building.'

Fey called: 'No. You will not storm the building. I am state secretary of public security and you are to take no action without my authority.'

Neustädter-Stürmer, looking up (sharply): '*Sie irren Sich,* Herr Fey! (You are mistaken!) The members of the government who are prisoners are under duress and are not competent to give orders. It is now five-twenty-eight. At five-forty-eight the building will be stormed.'

When the ultimatum expired everyone took cover but there was no shooting. Neustädter-Stürmer kept pacing up and down and Fey had disappeared. 'It was just an Austrian ultimatum,' someone joked. But the tension was terrific. At four minutes past six Fey came out again and said that the rebels agreed to surrender but asked what guaranty there was of safe conduct. They wanted military protection to the border. 'That can be arranged,' Neustädter-Stürmer replied, and Fey, speaking for Hudl (another rebel on the balcony) called, 'Can we have fifteen minutes more?' A civilian shouted, 'They mustn't harm anyone in the building.'

At six-thirty Fey came out once more. He tried to talk to General Zehner, the under-secretary of state for war, who had taken charge. There was such a tumult that no one could hear. Police, journalists, Heimwehr, lookers-on were all under the balcony shouting. So Zehner and Neustädter-Stürmer went round to meet Fey at the back door. Then Dr. Rieth, the German minister arrived. At about five-fifty Zehner reappeared and announced, 'They will get military protection to the frontier under the command of a staff officer.'

At about seven-thirty Fey came out of the back door. He walked up to Neustädter-Stürmer and said, 'Give me a cigarette.' A journalist called, '*Pfui* on their safe-conduct!' Fey, lifting his voice with effort, said, 'Quiet!' Neustädter-Stürmer asked him, 'Is it true that Dollfuss is dead?' Fey said, 'Yes, I spoke to him just before he died. When I came in he was

H1645-0329

lying on a divan wounded and bleeding.' He crushed the cigarette in his hand and said, 'Give me another cigarette.'

At seven-forty Rieth and Karwinsky came out. Schuschnigg, the new prime minister, arrived and led Fey, Zehner, and Neustädter-Stürmer into the Burg garden. The police closed the gates behind them and, standing there on the grass, in the dusk, they held a cabinet meeting. By now twenty military trucks were lined up along the Ballhaus, and police streamed into the building to disarm the rebels and conduct them to the frontier. The rebels came out cocky and confident. Everyone thought their free passage to Germany was assured. They thought so too. But they were wrong.

Death

Dollfuss had opened his last cabinet meeting at eleven. Among the items on the agenda were – of all things – regulations governing a famous Vienna theatre devoted to comic opera. The warning did not reach the cabinet till after eleven. Vienna *Schlamperei*, as well as treason, is probably responsible for the fact that the chancellery doors were not shut in time. Once he got the alarm, Dollfuss acted with great energy and coolness. He dismissed the cabinet and ordered the ministers to scatter to their separate offices, only Fey and Karwinsky remaining. This saved Austria, because if Schuschnigg and Neustädter-Stürmer had not been outside the building the *Putsch* would probably have succeeded.

By twelve-fifty-five the rebels were inside the gates, one hundred and forty-four of them. 'We arrest you in the name of President Miklas,' they falsely shouted.

Officials at the chancellery told me the next day that they first thought a surprise military drill was in progress. The uniforms seemed genuine and the men were disciplined. Then, along each tier of offices, rude voices shouted, 'Come out! Hands up!' Doors were battered down and the staff herded into the courtyard. The more prominent officials were imprisoned in a small room and told that they were the first batch of hostages who would be shot if the plot miscarried. A second batch was then chosen to be shot after the first batch. It became clear that the men were Nazis when the first thing they did was to open the telephone switchboard to get in

H1645-0330

touch with the German legation. And one rebel told a friend of mine, 'Curious, are you? In half an hour you'll hear all about it on the Munich radio.'

Immediately on disarming the guard one detachment of rebels went up the main staircase, ignoring other objectives, to search the state departments, find Dollfuss, and murder him. There is little doubt but that this group was specifically charged with this duty. It was led by an ex-corporal in the army, Otto Planetta, with a chin like a boxing glove. Dollfuss was given no chance to escape. He might easily, like Fey and the others, have been captured alive. But the rebels had one aim, to kill him. They entered the building at twelve-fifty-five and by two minutes past one at latest he was shot.

Having dismissed the cabinet, Dollfuss retired to his private study, a small room lined with yellow silk. His valet, Hedvicek, looked out of the window and saw the rebel trucks unloading in the courtyard. He told Dollfuss to try to escape through a passage that led through the complicated web of archive rooms upstairs. Briskly the chancellor left the yellow room and started across an oyster-white room towards the famous congress hall. The oyster-white room has three doors. One gives on the main staircase, and here the rebels entered. The door to the congress hall was locked and Hedvicek fumbled with the key. Dollfuss, a small man, reached for the knob and at a range of about twenty inches Planetta shot him in the exposed arm-pit. The chancellor reeled and Planetta fired again, this time in the throat, at about a distance of eight inches. The chancellor fell. ('How his head cracked on the floor!' Hedvicek said.)

'*Hilfe, Hilfe!*' Dollfuss muttered. ('Help, help.')

Planetta said, 'Stand up.'

'I cannot,' Dollfuss whispered.

They picked him up and laid him on the rose-and-cream Louis XV divan. Servants were still sucking up the dust and blood with vacuum cleaners when I saw the room next morning. On the embroidery of the divan were three large blood spots, almost exactly the shape and colour of large oak leaves.

Fey, who was detained near by, had heard the shots but did not know their meaning. At about two-thirty a group of

H1645-0331

Nazis summoned him and led him to the room where Dollfuss was still dying. The chancellor recognised him and whispered weakly:

'I charge you to take care of my family if I die.'

The rebels had a revolver in Fey's ribs and permitted him to say nothing. Dollfuss went on, very faintly:

'Where is Schuschnigg?'

Fey shook his head and, mustering strength, Dollfuss whispered, 'Try to settle this without bloodshed. Tell Rintelen to make peace.'

Fey was hustled out of the room. He appealed to the rebels to get a doctor or at least a priest. They refused, although they asked the prisoners if a doctor were among them, and one of them gave the dying chancellor a glass of water. Dollfuss must have thought he had been betrayed by his own army; not only that the *Putsch* had succeeded but that his own men had killed him. Later he apparently believed that loyal troops, not rebels, were surrounding him, staring at his shrunken face, because he whispered, '*Kinder* (children) you are so good to me. Why are the others not as you are? I wanted only peace. May God forgive the others.' The last blood was now streaming from his small body. A basin to catch it was put under the divan. At three-forty-five he died.

The rebels thought they had won, until about five p.m. At four-thirty Hudl, the second in command, told the prisoners in the courtyard, that a new government had been formed and that Rintelen, the new chancellor, would arrive at once. Thereupon about twenty officials gave him the Hitler salute and others called out '*Heil* Hitler'. Hudl testified at his trial that Wrabel, who was caught inside the building, gave him his card and said, 'Call me *du*.' (The German familiar form of the second person.)

After five, when Neustädter-Stürmer was outside, the morale of the rebels began to break. Holzweber went to Fey and said frankly, 'There has been some hitch. I do not know what to do.' Fey shrugged. Then, a characteristically Viennese touch, Holzweber proceeded, 'Ah! I shall telephone the Café Eiles and ask if Herr Kunze is there.' So with the chancellor dead, the government disrupted, Austria convulsed, and Europe at the ragged edge of war, the leader of the rebels rang up a coffee-

H1645-0332

house, to ask if a man who *might* be there could tell him what to do.

Kunze was a civilian who had been at Siebensterngasse. Holzweber led the first truck and Hudl the second and Kunze was to have been in the third. But he never arrived. No one knows certainly what happened to him or how he disappeared. The Viennese police think he was a Nazi lawyer who ratted at the extreme moment, and fled to Germany.

The Putschists were more light-fingered than disciplined 'idealists' have a right to be, according to the Austrian Government. They stole gold watches from a number of desks, 16 schillings from the bureau of President Miklas, and Dollfuss' pocket-book.

At about six the rebels decided to surrender, following the promise of safe conduct. All the one hundred and fifty hostages would be shot, Holzweber declared, if free passage was not given. Fey said to the government negotiator, 'Do not allow considerations of my safety to influence you one way or another.' Then Hudl suggested telephoning to Dr. Rieth, the German minister, as witness for the safe conduct. Fey explained the business over the telephone, and Rieth asked him whether or not to come. Fey said, 'It is not my business to give you orders or dissuade you. I have only to pass on these men's demand.' Rieth came, the negotiations were completed, and the exodus began.

Still the mass of the imprisoned hostages did not know the chancellor was dead. Leaving the building, one of the rebels called out, 'We've left a dead one in the corner room upstairs.' An official rushed up and found Dollfuss there. The body had completely shrivelled like a raisin and was clammy blue. The face was uncovered and wore an expression of extremest agony. A piece of canvas covered part of the body. There was a terrible wound in the throat. Underneath the divan, spilled beyond the basin, was a lake of blood.

The Missing Chief

And now about Rintelen. Why did Rintelen not come? Why did the *Putsch* fail?

He did not come because he was arrested. He was arrested not by the police or government, but by his old friend

H1645-0333

Dr. Funder, the editor of the *Reichspost*, who, leaving the chancellery at ten minutes past two, went straight to the Hotel Imperial where Rintelen was staying and on his own responsibility persuaded him to give himself up at the war ministry, in order to avert scandal. Owing to his position as a minister he was not searched. It is said that the *Ravag* got through to Rintelen at about one-fifty and asked him to deny the radio report naming him chancellor. 'I have no authority to do that,' Rintelen answered, and rang off. At midnight that night he shot himself. The wound was not mortal, though so dangerous that the actual heart had to be stitched up.

About the position of Fey there will probably be dispute as long as the story is told. I do not think he knew anything about this particular plot. No one knows exactly what passed between Fey and the rebels when they first arrested him; but the evidence of both police officers who entered the building is that they understood that Fey, with Dollfuss dead hardly a minute, was vice-chancellor in the new Rintelen régime. On the other hand, Fey can hardly be blamed for telling the loyalist forces not to bombard the building. He had not only his own life to save but he was responsible for the safety of the one hundred and fifty other prisoners. If Fey had shouted early in the afternoon, 'They have murdered the chancellor; storm the building even if we die,' it would have been a magnificent gesture but it would have cost much bloodshed. One must remember that Fey knew nothing of what was going on outside. He thought Rintelen *was* chancellor. Even so, if he had greeted Neustädter-Stürmer's appearance with a whisper of pleasure instead of a reiterated demand for Rintelen his reputation for loyalty and courage would not have suffered such a severe setback.

There was much bad feeling about the withdrawal of the safe conduct. The rebels were shipped, not to the German frontier, but to the Marokanner police barracks hardly a mile away. The government defends what was certainly bad faith by saying (*a*) Fey was not authorised to give a safe-conduct, and (*b*) Neustädter-Stürmer gave it unaware that the rump cabinet at five o'clock made it conditional on no casualties. I imagine the final decision not to free the Nazis was taken at the cabinet meeting outside the chancellery at seven-thirty.

H1645-0334

Here Schuschnigg was informed for the first time of the circumstances of Dollfuss' death and he decided simply not to let the murderers go. Neustädter-Stürmer said at Holzweber's trial, 'Yes, I gave my soldier's word of honour. But a soldier's word of honour is given to other soldiers, not to men who deny medical aid and priestly services to a mortally wounded man.'

Another reason for the failure of the *Putsch* was that the country as a whole did not rise. In Styria and Carinthia, where the Nazis had arms, there was severe but brief fighting, but nowhere else. For a year all of us had been deluded into believing that the Nazis were fifty or sixty per cent of the country. Possibly this was true, but at the critical moment the Nazis did not take action. The rebel signal had reverberated through the land; for four hours there was no regular government; but nothing happened. The Nazis had not bothered to arm their adherents, feeling sure that the army would mutiny and provide weapons; but the army remained loyal. Thus they lost their supreme chance.

Above all, the *Putsch* failed because Hitler welshed. The one hundred and forty-four conspirators were betrayed three times on July 25th; by their own higher-ups, chiefly Kunze; by the promise of safe-conduct; above all, by Germany. For a year and a half the Germans had incited their Austrian cousins to violence and rebellion and then, at the crisis, they let them down. The Austrian Legion did not march; instead, as soon as the *Putsch* was seen to have failed, it was disbanded. Habicht was dismissed from his post as Hitler's 'Inspector' for Austria, and Frauenfeld disappeared. Dr. Rieth was summarily fired, to give way to Franz von Papen. Instantly it was known that Mussolini had mobilised and would march into Austria if the *Putsch* succeeded, and this was clear by six p.m. of the 25th, the Germans wretchedly crawled and washed their hands of the whole business and ever since have sought to evade responsibility.

Thirteen of the Putschists were hanged, including four of the traitorous policemen, and, of course, Holzweber and Planetta. I have seldom seen a court-room more stirred than when Holzweber just before his sentence, rose and said:

H1645-0335

H1645-0336

'I was assured that there would be no bloodshed. I was told that I should find Rintelen at the chancellery and that the new government was already formed. Not meeting the leader of the operation at the chancellery I disclosed myself at once to Major Fey. I told him, "Here I stand, and I do not know what to do".'

Three hours later he and Planetta were hanged. Both died bravely, and both with the words '*Heil* Hitler' on their lips. But Hitler did not hear them. In East Prussia President von Hindenburg was dying. And Hitler was busy becoming President of Germany.

. . . . . .

Rintelen, seven months later, went on trial and was sentenced to life imprisonment on a charge of high treason. After serving a brief time in the penitentiary he was transferred to a sanatorium, under police surveillance. The evidence against him at the trial was not particularly concrete. As a result rumours rose that Rintelen had come to Vienna expecting to take part in a *different* revolt against Dollfuss, in which others too were involved. The July 25 *Putsch* was, it was said, made by Habicht, to forestall a Rintelen *Putsch* scheduled for about the same time. Habicht in Munich distrusted the Rintelen group, even though – according to this story – it was to pave the way for a Nazi régime; therefore Habicht jumped the gun on July 25 and therefore Rintelen and his friends, not knowing whether the *Putsch* going on was their *Putsch* or not, behaved with such confusion.

Rintelen might have been acquitted except for the evidence of his Italian servant Ripoldi, who testified that his master in Rome had frequently consorted with alleged Nazi emissaries. This contributes an obscure, bizarre footnote to the whole affair. Ripoldi had previously been the valet of a friend of Rintelen's, the financier Camillio Castiglione. He admitted in court that Castiglione had persuaded him to telegraph the court from Milan about his knowledge of Rintelen's doings, and had paid for the telegram.

Castiglione was born in Trieste, the son of a rabbi; he made enormous profits during the War selling aeroplanes; after the War he was Europe's greatest speculator in foreign exchanges; in his great days he rebuilt the Josefstaedter Theatre

for Max Reinhardt, helped finance the Salzburg festival, paid some of Mussolini's bills for the March on Rome. He had been a close friend of Rintelen's for many years. Then these two cronies, buccaneers both, must have fallen out. The bond of their mutual interests snapped. Castiglione put Rintelen behind the bars.

H1645-0337

H1645-0338

CHAPTER XXIII

AUSTRIA INFELIX

'I am young. I am not yet ready for supreme power.'
– PRINCE STARHEMBERG.

DR. KURT VON SCHUSCHNIGG, who at the end of 1935 still held precariously to the Austrian chancellorship, was born in 1897 in the Lake Garda region of Italy, which was then Austrian territory. He volunteered for war service when he was eighteen and was captured in 1915 by Italian troops. The rest of the War he spent in an Italian prison camp. It would not be too much to say that he is as much a prisoner of the Italians now.

After Schuschnigg had been chancellor a short time two Viennese met in Stephensplatz.

'I have a job,' said one.

'What? A job! Impossible,' replied the other.

'Yes, I sit in the bell-tower of St. Stephen's Church and wait for the first joke about Schuschnigg to be born. Then I toll the bells.'

'Hmmff. That's not much of a job. How much do you get?'

'Fifty *groschen* (five-pence) a day. But it's a job for life.'

Dr.[1] Schuschnigg, dull enough a personality indeed, was the son of a general. His family belonged to the minor aristocracy, devoutly Catholic, devoutly monarchist. He was educated in law at the University of Innsbruck, and entered politics as a protégé of the Christian social chancellor, Monsignor Seipel. He became first minister of education, then minister of justice, and finally Dollfuss' most reliable aide and confidant.

He had very little of Dollfuss' magnetic nimbleness; he was cold, severe, logical, dutiful, dry. But absolutely honest

[1] It may puzzle readers that so many Austrian politicians are thus titled. But practically everyone in Vienna who wears a white collar and can add and subtract is a doctor.

H1645-0339

and conscientious, he was valuable as an offset to the erratic and unpredictable Starhemberg. Schuschnigg had no demagoguery. But demagoguery was the last thing Dollfuss wanted – except his own. He wanted a man who knew his business, who kept his mouth shut, and whom he could trust implicitly.

It was Schuschnigg's ambition to be, not a politician, but a professor – a scholar in the history of law. But events seized him. As an attempt to wean the youth of the Tyrol from Hitlerism and turn it to patriotic Austrian nationalism, he founded his militant Catholic youth organisation, the Sturmscharen. As we have seen, Dollfuss promptly utilised the Sturmscharen as an offset to Starhemberg's Heimwehr, when the Heimwehr momentarily became too powerful.

The death of Schuschnigg's wife in an automobile accident in the summer of 1935 broke his spirit for the time being. But eventually he may become a stronger chancellor for it. Frau Schuschnigg had been the victim of numerous ghastly practical jokes by the Nazis. They threatened the assassination of her husband and sent her bits of crape in letters, funeral notices, and the like. She was terrified enough to urge him to conciliate his formidable enemies. Her death, tragic as it was, freed him from family pressure to submit.

Prince in Politics

Prince Ernst Rudiger von Starhemberg, born in 1899, a youngster with a feather in his hat, vice-chancellor in the Schuschnigg government, is more important a personage than his chief. There is not much doubt that Starhemberg could throw Schuschnigg out any time he pleased, if Mussolini permitted. But the young Heimwehr leader has genuine regard for Schuschnigg; besides he likes bright beckoning lights and pretty girls and vacations on the Lido, and prefers not to be saddled with the routine of the chief of government.

Anyway Starhemberg has all the jobs that count. He is federal leader of the Heimwehr and federal leader of the Fatherland Front. Thus he is boss of the chief private armed force in the country, and also the party-above parties which, if you can lay hands on it, is supposedly the incarnation and totalitarian expression of the Austrian state. Also he is commander of all the auxiliary armed formations in Austria,

H1645-0340

Heimwehr leader in all the separate provinces, National *Sportführer*, and national leader of the 'Young Fatherland' and the Heimwehr youth organisations.

Starhemberg owes much of his career to his family, especially his mother. A direct descendant of one of the twelve original families of the Holy Roman Empire, he is a lineal scion of Ottakar I, emperor a thousand years ago. One of his great-great grandfathers saved Vienna from the Turks in 1683. A proud and ancient family, the Starhembergs are apt to consider mere Habsburgs as distinctly parvenu. His mother, Countess Franziska Starhemberg, a profound influence on his life, was – and is – a considerable force in the inner workings of the Christian Social party.

Young Ernst Rudiger joined the Austrian army at seventeen. After the War he became a soldier of fortune, a freebooter, fighting with the Bavarian Oberland organisation in frontier squabbles in Silesia. He met Hitler, joined him, and took part in the Munich beer hall *Putsch*. His mother, horrified that her blue-blooded son should come too much under Hitler's *Lumpen-Proletariat* and anti-Catholic influence, brought him back to Austria. She intervened with Monsignor Seipel to keep an eye on her boy, start him on a 'respectable' political career.

Young Starhemberg decided to found a private army of his own. He owned fourteen castles throughout Austria. In one of them, Waxenberg, he organised eight hundred of his retainers – practically serfs – into the *Starhembergjaeger* (hunter) detachment. This group merged with the Heimwehr. For some years, out of his family fortune, Starhemberg financed the movement himself. By 1926 he was head of the Upper Austrian Heimwehr, and in 1928 leader of the Heimwehr in all of Austria.

His fortune disappeared; he borrowed money right and left. When he was on the verge of bankruptcy some rich industrialist friends – and Mussolini – rescued him. To Dollfuss the Italians gave advice during the trying 1932–34 years, but to Starhemberg they gave something more important – money.

Opinions differ about Starhemberg's ability. Myself I think he is an exceptionally intelligent young man; liberals, I fear,

H1645-0341

underestimate him – and his dangerousness – just as they underestimated Dollfuss. I heard Starhemberg speak at Dollfuss' funeral; he addressed the dead leader with passionate thee-and-thou intimacy in one of the most moving orations I ever heard. At lunch a few weeks later Starhemberg talked off-the-record to a group of newspaper men; his answers were deliberate and a little long, but brilliantly phrased and apposite. He is rather shy, his manner occasionally constrained.

Opinions do not differ about Starhemberg's good looks. He could make plenty of money as a gigolo. Nor do they differ about the basic aims of his character and intelligence. He is a perfectly definite nationalist-reactionary.

In October 1935, Schuschnigg and Starhemberg engineered a sleight-of-hand reshuffle of the ministry, and Major Fey, Starhemberg's chief rival, was chucked into the street. And Schuschnigg-Starhemberg were under Mussolini's thumb as ever.

Dictatorship on Crutches

After the Dollfuss murder the Austrian Government proceeded like a man with one foot on the street, one in the gutter; it wobbled, it tottered, it managed to span unnatural extremes of distance – but it stood. A dictatorship it was, and one of the most complete – if sloppy – in the world. Hitler 'makes' elections; but at least he has them; Mussolini is head of a political party which contributes some vitality to the state; Stalin is part of an organism to which he admits responsibility. But in Austria there was nothing but Schuschnigg, Starhemberg, and the Almighty.

The combination ruled by police power and the support of Italy. It evaded elections, because it knew that elections would let the Nazis in. It assaulted the rights of citizens in a fantastic manner. In the year 1934, for instance, 106,000 dwellings in Vienna alone were raided by the police. No fewer than 38,141 persons were arrested, of whom 19,090 were Nazis, 12,276 social democrats, and 6,775 communists. But – and it was an important 'but' – the terror never reached anything like the repressive force of the Nazi terror. Most of those arrested promptly got out of jail again. Even at its most extreme phase, it was difficult to take the Starhemberg-

Schuschnigg dictatorship completely seriously.[1] This was because of Austrian gentleness, Austrian genius for compromise, Austrian love for cloudy legal abstractions, and Austrian *Schlamperei*.

The social democrats, smarting from the February wounds, and the communists, forgetting their usual propaganda which was restricted exclusively to those who were already communists, formed, early in 1935, a United Front. A new Schutzbund arose from the ashes of the old; the social democrats, taught a lesson in realism, changed their name to 'The Revolutionary Socialists of Austria.' They assaulted the country – with literature. The dissemination of illicit propaganda in Austria, although severely punishable, reached a point where scarcely a day passed without a shower of leaflets or handbills somewhere in Vienna. Miniature newspapers were passed around from hand to hand; some thirty thousand copies of the new-born *Arbeiter Zeitung*, printed in miniature in Brunn, Czechoslovakia, crossed the frontier secretly every fortnight. In my mail-box I would find luscious specimens daily of almost every kind of subversive literature. The government did its best to check the flow. But it was like trying to mop up the Danube with a sponge.

Frock Coat for Brown Shirt

The campaign of the Nazis, led in Vienna by Franz von Papen, seemed for the time being checkmated at the end of 1935. Hitler, despairing of getting Austria, decided to make a big gesture by giving up – for a period – something he didn't have, and tentatively offered to negotiate. At one time Ribbentrop was to have met an emissary of Schuschnigg's in Munich. The plan fell through, because Mussolini, still boiling with anger at the death of Dollfuss – Frau Dollfuss was

[1] For instance, in a memorial exhibition in Shoenbrunn Palace to the Emperor Franz Josef, one of the portraits in an honoured place was that of Viktor Adler, founder of Viennese socialism. Another point is that few of the names of the great municipal tenements were changed. Engels Hof is still Engels Hof. The Karl Marx Hof remained the Karl Marx Hof until July 1935. You can still read Marxist books in its library. On the other hand, Schutzbunders tried in 1935 got unforgivably merciless sentences.

H1645-0342

a guest in his house in Riccioni when the murder took place – refused to countenance it.

Papen's tactics were, it seemed, sensible. He saw that the iron fist had failed and so he tried the suède glove. His plan was to take prominent Austrians aside, whisper to them that he himself found distasteful things – indeed! – in the Nazi régime, and try to persuade them that both should work together for good old pan-German ideals. Papen worked very slowly – and confidently. His policy was based on the fact that there is no use ravishing a girl whom you are to marry next week. But his wiles were frustrated by two things. First, he was not trusted. Second, as Frances Gunther put it, no Austrian can be a Nazi twenty-four hours a day. It takes too much energy. Naziism broke in Vienna not on the machine-guns of Schuschnigg and Starhemberg, but paradoxically, on the softness of Austrian character.

But it would be rash to predict that this position would hold indefinitely. The Austrians are, after all, not Italians; they are of German stock and eighty per cent of them were pro-*Anschluss* before Hitler. The oft-laboured scheme of a Danube confederation as a solution of the Austrian problem will not work while nationality remains a spiritual as well as economic barrier between the Central European countries. Austria's fate is indissolubly connected with that of Germany; the only eventual path of Austria is in the German orbit. Hitler wills it. Mussolini, because he wants Austria to be a buffer state between himself and Germany, prevents this. But it is not impossible that Austria may become a bridge connecting the two Fascist states instead of an obstacle separating them. The fate of Austria is always settled outside of Austria; poor Vienna seldom has a word to say. Change the international situation, and presto! Austria may be in German hands. The little country is meantime a pawn between two great Fascisms on either side. And the Brenner Pass is the most important and dangerous frontier in Europe.

Habsburg Hullaballoo

The Dollfuss corporative constitution repealed the constitutional quality of the laws which, in 1919, dispossessed the Habsburgs and exiled them. Then in July 1935, the Schusch-

H1645-0343

nigg-Starhemberg government repealed the laws themselves. As a result no legal obstacle remained to the return to Austria of the exiled pretender to the Austrian throne, Prince Otto, and his mother the ex-empress Zita. But their return was not immediately anticipated. What Schuschnigg did was pull Otto out of his sleeve, be in position to slap him on the table. For the final, the ultimate obstacle to a Nazi régime in Austria might be a Habsburg restoration.

So let us turn to exiled Otto and survey his career and character.

H1645-0344

H1645-0345

CHAPTER XXIV

DR. OTTO HABSBURG AND GENERAL JULIUS GOEMBOES

'I believe in God, I believe in the unity of my country,
I believe in eternal divine justice,
I believe in the resurrection of Hungary.
Amen!' – HUNGARIAN NATIONAL CREED.

BEHIND Otto are some seven hundred years of madness, murder, melancholia. At least five of his cousins and forebears, in the last couple of generations, have met violent deaths, and several died insane. Crown Prince Rudolf shot himself at Mayerling in the greatest of modern royal mysteries and Archduke Franz Ferdinand was killed at Sarajevo with the result that Otto stands in his present lonely and enigmatic position, heir to all the realms of Habsburg. Before him is a throne – perhaps.

Archduke Franz-Josef-Otto-Robert-Marie-Antoine-Karl-Maximilian-Heinrich-Sixtus-Xavier-Felix-Renatus-Ludwig-Gaetan-Pius-Ignaz, Prince of Habsburg-Lorraine, the exiled pretender to the Austrian and Hungarian thrones, comes of fertile blood. He is one of eight children of the late Emperor, Karl, and his widow, Zita of Bourbon-Parme, who is herself the tenth child of a litter of seventeen. Royalty produces at least an insurance of complex continuity. He was born near Vienna – in a chalet that is now a pension – on November 20, 1912.

The Habsburgs are more than a family, they are a sort of organism – a resplendent fungus long attached to the body politic of Europe. They are as prolific as white mice and as international as counterfeiters. The Archduke Franz Ferdinand had 2,047 ancestors, including 1,486 Germans, 124 Frenchmen, 196 Italians, 89 Spaniards, 20 Englishmen, 52 Poles, and 47 Danes. The Habsburgs ruled in Europe for

H1645-0346

some sixteen generations. Their polyglot and bulbous holdings included at one time or other twenty countries, but never, one might say, a single country. The family was always superior to the state. Family laws in old Austro-Hungary had precedence over state laws, and the provisions of the Family Charter, drawn up in 1839, are still unpublished and secret. When he heard of Franz Ferdinand's death in 1914 (which removed the possibility of uncertainty in the succession), old Franz Josef, who had been emperor for sixty-six years, exclaimed, 'Ah! A higher power has restored the order that I was unhappily unable to maintain.'

The Habsburg power toppled at the end of the War in 1918, but not the Habsburg dynasty. When the last Emperor, Karl, a weak man, was asked to abdicate the Empress replied fiercely: 'Rather will I die with you here. Then Otto will come, and when all our own family has gone there will still be Habsburgs enough.' Karl, indeed, never abdicated, although he renounced all participation in the governments of Austria and Hungary on November 11 and 13, 1918. He and Zita fled to exile. Twice Karl made abortive *Putsches* in Hungary, in March 1921, and October 1921; the Hungarian Government of Admiral Horthy beat him. He died in Madeira in 1922. Ever since Zita has trained her eldest son, Prince Otto, for kingship.

Otto grew up grave, intelligent, sensitive, and extraordinarily good-looking. Through some pleasant chance he missed the traditional pouched eyes of the Habsburgs, the pendulous under-lip. 'Let that boy loose in Austria and give people a chance to look at him and he'll capture the country like a Valentino,' a friend of mine said after a recent visit to Stenockerzeel, the ramshackle castle in Belgium where after vicissitudes all over Europe the royal family lives.

Otto is a modest boy and extremely well-mannered, but seven hundred years of Habsburgs have driven into his brain complete appreciation of the privileges and prerogatives of kingship. Already, in his occasional public pronouncements, he refers to Austrians as 'My People'. An English friend recently asked Otto what he thought of Hitler and the prince replied, 'Unfortunately not having had an opportunity as yet to receive Mr. Hitler, I cannot say.'

The young prince has had to pay for his choice and dangerous lineage by performing the inevitable chore of royalty, learning languages; he speaks German, French, Italian, Spanish, English, and Hungarian quite fluently. Zita had never been able to learn Hungarian, a staggeringly difficult tongue; the chauvinist Hungarians never forgave her for this and she saw to it that her son did not make the same mistake. He was brought up, of course, a Roman Catholic, and he prays thrice daily.

After years of tutoring Otto went to the University of Louvain, graduating with a Ph. D. degree in the spring of 1935. He is, I imagine, the first royal pretender in history with a legitimate doctorate. His oral examinations included questions on the closer economic co-operation of the Danube states, the reconcilability of the new corporative Austrian constitution with democratic development, and the reafforestation of parts of the Hungarian plain. The written thesis, which ran to three hundred and sixty-eight pages in its French text, concerned 'the right, born of usage and of the peasant law of inheritance, of the indivisibility of rural land ownership in Austria'. He wrote it first in German and then translated it into French. The published brochure was signed 'Dr. Otto von Habsburg'.

He travelled a good deal as part of his studies; he visited Scandinavia, Germany, Italy. Each trip done, he returned dutifully to Stenockerzeel, his books, and Mother Zita. So far the old Empress has not found him a bride. A good match would be with Princess Maria, the youngest daughter of the King and Queen of Italy. But Mussolini, contrary to general opinion, does not like the idea of a Habsburg restoration – which would tend to recreate an empire on his Adriatic flank – and largely for this political reason the engagement didn't occur.

The young prince, whose political intelligence is seemingly acute, is quite aware of his importance as a club the Austrian Government may use against Germany. He has taken a strong anti-Hitler line: 'I absolutely reject [Nazi] Fascism for Austria. . . . This un-Austrian movement promises everything to everyone, but really intends the most ruthless subjugation of the Austrian people. . . . The people of Austria will never

H1645-0347

tolerate that our beautiful fatherland should become an exploited colony, and that the Austrian should become a man of second category.'

The whole trend and temper of present affairs in Austria is, as we know, legitimist. The dictatorship not only revived the medieval *Staende*; it stands for all the things the Habsburgs stood for: centralisation of authority, 'benevolent' despotism, above all the church. Schuschnigg and most of his closest friends are staunch monarchists. The social democrats, ardent opponents of restoration, have been suppressed. To date no fewer than two hundred and sixty-three Austrian towns and villages have gone through the ceremony of giving Otto honorary citizenship. And Schuschnigg obviously needs some positive symbol as an offset to Hitlerism, which the Habsburgs might provide.

Prince Starhemberg, on the other hand, is inclined to temporise. Once at lunch he said to some of us, 'It is more or less this way. I do not think many Austrians would shed their blood to bring the Archduke back. But I do not think that many Austrians would man the barricades to keep him out, either.' Many people think that Starhemberg, who is as ambitious as a mustang, may decide one of these fine days to promote himself to be Austrian President or Regent. A loyal legitimist, he would theoretically be keeping the throne warm for Otto. But regents often turn into just about the most permanent seat-warmers one can imagine, as witness Admiral Horthy.

Otto is popular in Austria; of that no doubt. His mother Zita is not so popular. It is a private idea of mine that restoration would be a good deal closer if Otto's return would not mean the return also of his mother – to say nothing of hundreds of assorted and impoverished Habsburg cousins and aunts, who would flock to Vienna like ants to a keg of syrup. The ex-Empress, a woman of enormous strength of character and some old-fashioned ideas, is a good mother, so good a mother that she might find it difficult to let Otto be king alone. And many Austrians have no fancy to see Otto swaddled to the throne with Zita's apron strings.

The obstacles to restoration are mostly international. The chief reason that Otto lives at Stenockerzeel and not Schön-

H1645-0348

brunn, the Vienna palace of his fathers, is that Czechoslovakia and Jugoslavia will fight to keep him out. This is because Czechoslovakia and Jugoslavia, countries carved from the haunches of the old empire, have large populations in Slovakia and Croatia who might be stirred enough by a restoration to attempt rejoining a reconstituted monarchy.

The only excuse for kingship in the modern world is the symbol it provides of permanence. It gives a country an anchor into the dark furrows of the future. Otto, if Austria or Hungary take him back, will give them the security of a fixed headship of the state and a fixed succession. It is unfortunate that to make such provision for the future one must dredge so deep into the shadows of the past. A restoration seems a very backward gesture. 'We did not wage the war,' Dr. Beneš has said, 'in order to go back to former times.'

Otto's chances in Austria, even though the restoration question is officially not 'actual', are so good that his claims on Hungary have latterly been neglected. In Hungary he faces not only international but serious domestic obstacles. The principle one is the attitude of the Hungarian Government itself. Otto is outside Hungary to-day not so much because the Czechs and Jugoslavs want him out but because Horthy and Goemboes do not want him in.

Noblesse Oblige?

The chief internal problem of Hungary, which has been an independent kingdom since A.D. 1001, is that of the land. The country is almost exclusively a pool of wheat. Agrarian prices have fallen drastically since 1930; the nation was terribly overborrowed, with the largest *per capita* foreign debt in Europe. The urgencies of the resultant crisis were not improved by the maldistribution of economic power in the country. The feudal aristocracy rule the roost. One-third of the total arable land of Hungary is owned by nine hundred and eighty men.

Another sixth of the land – these figures are almost incredible – is owned by some 1,112 magnates of the landed gentry class. Then come about 250,000 small-holders who have up to 150 acres each. Following are about 600,000 owners who are restricted to a plot so small that they have to sell their

H1645-0349

labour power as agricultural workers elsewhere. Finally there are about 1,130,000 peasants quite without land – out of Hungary's total population of roughly 8,600,000 – proportionately the largest group of landless agrarian proletariat in the world.

The aristocrats, though many of them lost much power and wealth by the amputation of Hungary after the War, are still a lush and fantastic lot. The Esterhazys, the Karolyis, the Czekonitchs, the Hunyadis and Telekis and Szaparys, maintain a shadow-glamour like nothing else in Europe, except perhaps for similar remnants of colossal feudal power in the nobility of Poland. Once an Esterhazy used a Titian painting as lining for his cloak. A Karolyi once sent a precious bottle of tokay to a sweetheart by special train.

These noblemen and their families intermarried to an unusual extent. The wife of Count Windischgraetz is a Szechenyi; her husband once went to jail for counterfeiting francs in a nationalist plot. Their daughter married a son of the Karolyis. One Countess Karolyi is an Apponyi. The wife of Michael Karolyi, president of the extremely temporary Hungarian republic, was an Andrassy. Admiral Horthy's daughter Paulette married a son of Count Emmerich Karolyi, relative of Michael and his son married a daughter of the same Karolyi. The daughter of Count Julius Karolyi, who it is thought will be Horthy's successor as Regent, married one of the Esterhazys.

The noblemen, practically without exception, favour the return of Otto to the throne. But Horthy and Goemboes, who rule Hungary to-day, oppose restoration. Their motives are not exclusively personal, although Otto's return would lose them their present jobs; Zita would never forgive them for having crushed the Karlist *Putsches*. Horthy and Goemboes think that a restoration would weaken Hungary, not strengthen it; they feel that the house of Habsburg has brought more harm to Hungary than good; the choice, in their minds, is quite flat between dynasticism and patriotism – and they are patriots.

Hungary is not, as is usually said, a dictatorship; the Hungarian Parliament, founded in A.D. 1222, is one of the oldest in the world, and theoretically, just as in England, it can overturn any prime minister by an adverse vote. Horthy, the Regent, though sublimely reactionary as far as social or

H1645-0350

economic ideas are concerned, is in effect the guardian of constitutionalism and the vestigial democracy that remains in the country, because it is largely his influence that prevents the prime minister, General Goemboes, from abolishing parliament and setting up overt dictatorial rule.

Goemboes seeks permanent power on the basis of support from the small farmer and middle man. He is no friend of the hungry landless proletariat or working class, heaven knows. Nor is he friendly to the feudal nobility, being of comparatively humble birth himself. He has announced that he will, if he can, cut up all estates over one thousand five hundred acres. But he has no political party of his own; in parliament he rules through the old Union party of Count Stephen Bethlen, who was prime minister for ten years. And this party is the prisoner of the magnates and the banks.

The chief opponent to Goemboes is an adventurous young man, Tibor Eckhardt, who horrified the League Council in Geneva in December 1934 by all but declaring war on the Jugoslavs. Eckhardt has founded a small landowners party of his own, asserting that Goemboes's alleged desire to harass the aristocrats is so much smoke and sham. But he and Goemboes are at one in being anti-Semite, pro-German, and staunch enemies of the proletariat, whether urban or agrarian.

As long as Horthy and Count Julius Karolyi live, the squabbles of domestic politics in Hungary do not mean much, because the inside leaders are all members of a secret society, heritage of the civil wars and White Terror, called the 'Double Cross', in reference to the Holy Apostolic Cross of Hungary. It was founded by Horthy and his cohorts when they organised a provisional government at Szeged in 1919 to fight the communists then ruling in Budapest. Every Hungarian prime minister since the counter-revolution has been a member of the Double Cross. There are about thirty-five surviving members; most of them dine together informally every month in a beer-hall, the Matthias Keller, near the Elizabeth bridge in Budapest. Goemboes and Bethlen and Karolyi may quarrel, but their brotherhood in this secret organisation outrides personal feuds, and they combine against outsiders. The Double Cross is mostly landed gentry and Protestant. The great legitimist aristocrats are not members.

H1645-0351

H1645-0352

Choleric Admiral

Nicholas Horthy de Nagybánya, born in 1868 of a Transylvanian family, was a naval officer. Hardly brilliant, he nevertheless had qualities of candour and courage, and in thirty-six years of service he rose without much influence of wealth or family to be, first, naval aide-de-camp to the old Emperor Franz Josef, and second, admiral commanding the Austro-Hungarian fleet. As such, he was largely responsible for the merciless suppression of the mutiny which last year was celebrated by the New York Group Theatre in *Sailors of Cattaro*.

The most unpleasant thing about Horthy is his White Terror history. He was minister of war in the counter-revolutionary government that followed the crash of the communist régime Bela Kun. On August 10, 1919, his detachments were stationed at Siofok, in trans-Danubia. Some officers, drunk and cheerful, talked blood-thirstily about Bolshevik atrocities. Horthy remarked, 'Words, always words! And never any action!' So the officers, including men who later became infamous as wholesale sadists, went out and that night murdered sixty Jews and communists. This was the beginning of the White Terror. When members of a British labour delegation investigating the atrocities complained to Horthy that the officers responsible had not been punished, the admiral replied in naïve indignation, 'Why, they are my best men!'

Horthy is the most indiscreet man in Europe. A bluff and friendly fellow nowadays, he likes to see visiting notables and journalists, but his aides try to isolate him on account of his enormous, full-blooded disposition to air his views – frankly. What he says in private conversation about the Serbs and Czechs and Germans and anyone you mention will make your hair dance and quiver. He is almost sixty-eight, but aflame with a sort of humorous-choleric vitality. He positively explodes with passion and pathos. At one moment he may burst a collar discussing Hungarian revisionism; at the next, pick up a paper-knife and go through the gestures of murder to illustrate a point; at the next, mention with tears in his eyes how good a human being old Franz Josef was, but how that 'poor boy' – Otto – cannot hope to rule in his (Horthy's) stead.

Goemboes

General Julius Goemboes de Jákfa, who shares with the Polish foreign minister Colonel Beck the unenviable honour of being personally the most unpopular statesman in Europe, has been an adventurer, a nationalist, a desperado politician, all his adult life. He was born in 1886 in a district of Hungary populated mostly by Germans. His mother does not speak correct Hungarian to this day. The family came from the Rhineland, and the name was originally Gelb. His father, who was a school-teacher, Magyarised it to Goemboes some years before the future prime minister was born.

A rebellious Magyar chauvinist, young Goemboes went to cadet school and then the war college in Vienna. He was almost expelled when a professor asked him if he would be faithful to the Habsburg régime in the event of a revolution. Goemboes answered vigorously No. He would, he said, as a Magyar officer, fight for nationalist Hungary, not for the dynasty. As with Hitler and Pilsudski, the dominant note in his character from childhood was a fanatic nationalism.

Goemboes was wounded in the War on the Rumanian front and then served on the staff in Vienna. His work was, if not brilliant, flashy. A man of plot and counter-plot, highly ambitious, he organised the 'M.O.V.E.' (Magyar Orszagos Vedo Egylet), a sort of officers trade union; for Goemboes, a would-be dictator among the dictators, had like his idol Mussolini a strong early socialist streak. The Hungarian revolution occurred and Goemboes offered to reorganise the socialist Michael Karolyi's army. Karolyi, distrusting him, refused, and Goemboes fled to Vienna where – meeting in secret – he and Bethlen, another *émigré*, plotted the downfall of the Karolyi régime. When Bela Kun came to power, Goemboes went to Szeged and joined Horthy in organising the counter-revolutionary forces. He was expelled from Szeged by the French general Franchet d'Esperey. He offered to negotiate with Bela Kun, but his terms were too severe for the communist dictator. Then he joined the counter-revolutionary army at Siofok, and his great days began.

Beyond doubt, more than Horthy, he was responsible for the White Terror in which at least several thousand innocent Jews

H1645-0353

H1645-0354

and communists were tortured and murdered. Beyond doubt, too, he was the force behind Horthy repelling the two adventures of the Emperor Karl to regain his throne. On March 21, 1921, it was Goemboes who intervened between Horthy and Karl saying, 'Majesty, I order you to leave this country by eight o'clock to-night.' On the occasion of the second *Putsch*, in October of the same year, Goemboes, distrusting the regular army, called out and armed the secret societies and students corps.

The Hungary of that time was the worst dictatorship in Europe. In it were Magyar traces of all the Fascist tendencies we know to-day: violent economic nationalism, hatred of the Jews, suppression of liberals, pacifists, socialists. Goemboes was indeed in active touch with Hitler in 1922 and 1923, but he disavowed him after the Munich beer-hall *Putsch*. The murderers of the German foreign minister Rathenau were hidden for some years on Goemboes's estate at Nagy-Teteny, disguised as gardeners.

Goemboes originally was a member of Bethlen's Union party. In 1923 he seceded to form a sort of Hungarian Fascist party, and stayed in the political wilderness for five years. He rejoined Bethlen in 1928, and became minister of war. When the complex and enigmatic Bethlen resigned in the middle of the Hungarian financial crisis of 1931, Goemboes, after a brief interregnum, succeeded him as premier.

During the War Goemboes married the daughter of a rich microscope manufacturer, von Reichert; she was an Austrian, and the apostle of Hungarian nationalism thus admitted foreign blood to his family. They were later divorced and Goemboes married a certain Mme Unger, *née* Elizabeth Szilagyi, whose foster-parents, champagne merchants, were – dreadful as the thought may have been to him – of Jewish origin. The second Mme Goemboes died, and in 1934 the general thrilled the romantically inclined by remarrying his divorced first wife.

Goemboes attracted much attention in 1935 by attempting to broaden Hungary's sphere of foreign political action. From the time that Bethlen had contrived the tie-up with Italy, Hungary had been Mussolini's puppet. Goemboes glanced northward to his spiritual fathers, the Nazis. He was active,

moreover, in negotiating what promised to become a Central European bloc of dissatisfied states, Germany, Hungary, and Poland. He is very eager for a 'positive' German-Polish policy. He joined one of General Goering's famous hunting parties in East Prussia to this end.

In delicate affairs where bluster is not the chief qualification to negotiation, Goemboes's brains are supposed to be those of a remarkable young man named Stephen Antal, his Press secretary.

Nem Nem Soha

In Hungary is the strongest, the most pervasive nationalism in Europe. In the chauvinism sweepstakes the Hungarians beat even the Poles. A little story is relevant. The proud father of an eight-year-old schoolgirl entering a geography class bought her a globe. She surveyed it and broke into tears. 'Papa,' she wailed, 'I want a globe with only Hungary on it.'

Hungarian nationalism has fed ever since 1919 on the open wounds made by the peace treaties which, in their comparative iniquitousness, reached in the Treaty of Trianon the most iniquitous point. Hungary lost, after the War, no less than 68.5 per cent of its territory – 191,756 square kilometres out of a former total area of 282,870 square kilometres. Hungary lost no less than 58.2 per cent of its population – 10,782,560 people out of 18,264,500. Hungary lost all its gold, silver, copper, salt, and mercury; it lost its best collieries, eighty-five per cent of its forests, sixty-five per cent of its vineyards. It lost fifty-six per cent of its horses, sixty-nine per cent of its cattle, fifty-two per cent of its factories, fifty-seven per cent of its arable land, and fifty-two per cent of its total wheat production. Amputated from Hungary was its outlet to the sea. The economic unity of the old Danube basin, a perfectly balanced area, was destroyed.

On the other hand, one should point out that these terrible losses included districts not populated by Hungarians. A full forty-five per cent of the old population were minorities – Slovaks, Rumanians, Serbs, Croats, Ruthenians, Italians, Slovenes. The ostensible justification of the Trianon Treaty was liberation of these minorities. Of the 10,782,560 people lost, 6,345,500 were not Hungarians. But here is precisely

H1645-0355

H1645-0356

where the trouble lies. Had the victor powers been content to draw really accurate minority and frontier lines, Hungarian revisionism would have little pretext. But some three million people who *were* pure Magyars were grabbed along with the others, and made to live, a new minority, within the new borders of Rumania, Jugoslavia, and Czechoslovakia.

The sole basis of Hungarian foreign policy since the War has been revisionism – to change the treaties in order to get its lost territory back.

To frustrate Hungarian aims, the Little Entente, which encircles Hungary, was formed. Let us do a march around Hungary, through Czechoslovakia, Rumania, Jugoslavia.

H1645-0357

CHAPTER XXV

MASARYK AND BENEŠ

'The master of Bohemia is the master of Europe.'

– BISMARCK.

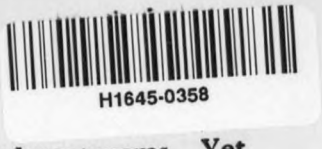
'We shall always be a small minority in the world, but, when a small nation accomplishes something with its limited means, what it achieves has an immense and exceptional value, like the widow's mite. . . . It is a deliberate and discerning love of a nation that appeals to me, not the indiscriminate love that assumes everything to be right because it bears a national label. . . . Love of one's own nation should not entail non-love of other nations. . . . Institutions by themselves are not enough.'

– MASARYK.

MASARYK – what grandeur the name connotes! The son of a serf who created a nation; the blacksmith boy who grew to have 'the finest intellect of the century'; the pacifist who organised an army that performed a feat unparalleled in military annals – the Czechoslovak legions who marched across Siberia to the Pacific; the philosopher who became a statesman in spite of himself; the living father of a state who is also its simplest citizen; an unchallengeably firm democrat who, in the *débâcle* of the modern world, still believes in rule by tolerance; the man who more than any other smashed the old Austro-Hungarian empire, so that Czechoslovakia, a free republic, rose from its ruins – the stablest, strongest, and most prosperous of the succession states.

In his autobiography Masaryk says that his life has been 'shot through with paradox'. He is, for instance, the son of a coachman – and he lives to-day in the castle of the old Bohemian kings. His father was, moreover, a servant on an imperial estate, so that in throwing the Habsburgs out of Czechoslovakia Masaryk also symbolically threw them from the front yard where he grew up in the most crushing poverty.

He was, for instance, both a locksmith's apprentice and a helper in a blacksmith's shop, because in early youth he disliked school. During the War he was a first-class practical


H1645-0358

conspirator, a specialist in decoys, codes, and stratagems. Yet the whole basis of his career was moral-intellectual. He was one of the most formidably learned men of his time, a philosopher and prophet of almost Judaic stature.

The greatest of living Czechoslovaks, the first act in his life to bring him prominence was an investigation which proved a set of documents hallowed and revered by the Czech and Slovak peoples to be forgeries. A Roman Catholic who turned Protestant, he gained early distinction by defending a Jew wrongfully accused of an obscure ritual murder. He exposed as fabrications of the Austrian foreign office the documents in the Friedjung case, which ruined what was then his official career; but this occasion made him a hero of the oppressed Slavic peoples. Dominating his life have been two factors, faith in Czechoslovakia and the pursuit of truth.

It was not idly that Masaryk called his philosophy 'Realism'. Once he all but decided to return to Austria during the War so that he might be hanged – he knew that his martyrisation would help the Czech national cause. There were several attempts on his life which he shrugged off – he was psychologically incapable of fear – but he took the precaution of drawing up his own obituary so that it would be the best possible propaganda for the liberation of his people.

He founded the most central of central European states in Pittsburg, Pa., where he negotiated a Czech-Slovak unity pact, and in Washington, D.C., where he issued the Czechoslovakian declaration of independence. He was proclaimed president of Czechoslovakia after he had not set foot in it for four years, and when he was four thousand five hundred miles away.

His autobiography is warm and rigid with insistence on the most complete intellectual, moral, and emotional probity. He records how a simple lie might have saved his life when he was in acute danger in Moscow – to gain cover in a hotel he would have had to say incorrectly that he was registered there; he refused although the bullets were splattering about him – and his life was saved anyway. Yet in his career he was a splendid opportunist.

In Washington, before attempting to make any appointment at the White House, Masaryk spent weeks in a detailed

and penetrating study of Wilson's writings. The old professor was knee-deep in books about and by Wilson. Then he drew up his manifesto on Czech aspirations for independence and presented it to Wilson. Half a dozen times in the document Masaryk had cleverly used citations from Wilson's own works as legal and political authority for the Czech claims.

Two quotations from his great book *The Making of a State* give fleeting illustrations of his quality:

> 'Hardly had I settled in Geneva when news of my son Herbert's illness came unexpectedly from my family in Prague; and, on March 15 (1915), a telegram announcing his death. Thus, like thousands of families at home, we were stricken. He was clean and honourable in rare degree, a poet-painter whose ideal of beauty was simplicity. Healthy he was, too, and strong through physical exercise. He had done all he could to avoid fighting for Austria and yet found death through the War. Typhus, caught from some Galician refugees whom he was helping, killed him – a case for fatalists! My old Clerical opponents did not fail to send me from Prague their coarse and malicious anonymous letters. "The finger of God!" they said. To me it seemed rather an injunction not to abate or to grow weary in my efforts.'

And discussing one of his visits to Tolstoy,

> 'Neither morally nor, I think, psychologically, did Tolstoy recognise the distinction between aggressive violence and self-defence. Here he was wrong; for the motives are different in the two cases and it is the motive which is ethically decisive. Two men may shoot, but it makes a difference whether they shoot in attack or defence. The mechanical acts are identical but the two acts are dissimilar in intention, in object, in morality. Tolstoy once argued arithmetically that fewer people would be killed if attack were not resisted; that, in fighting, both sides get wilder and more are killed; whereas if the aggressor meets with no opposition he ceases to slay. But the practical standpoint is that, if anybody is to be killed, let it be the aggressor. Why should a peace-loving man, void of evil intent, be slain and not the man of evil purpose who kills? ... I know, too, that it is hard sometimes to say precisely who the aggressor is; yet it is not impossible. Thoughtful men of honest mind can distinguish impartially the quarter whence attack proceeds.'

Thomas Garrigue Masaryk was born on March 7, 1850, in the Moravian town of Hodonin. His mother, a cook, seems to have been a remarkable woman; Masaryk pays touching

H1645-0359

tribute to her strength, her ideals, her clamour to give her son an education. His father apparently he had little sympathy with. He went to school in Vienna, became a professor at Prague, wrote exhaustively (of some psychological interest is the fact that his first book was on suicide), entered politics. His wife was an American woman, Miss Charlotte Garrigue, whom he met in student days at Leipzig and whose name he added to his own. He writes of her: 'She was beautiful to look at; she had a magnificent intellect, better than mine.'[1] Their son, Jan, a turbulent and candid character, is now Czechoslovak minister in London.

Masaryk's real career did not begin until he was well over sixty. He records a testimonial dinner given him at the time, a sort of climax to his work as a distinguished savant; he tells wryly of his inner feeling that he was being buried before he was dead. Then came the high years, between sixty-five and seventy, when he fled from Prague to organise the Czech movement abroad. His final work, nurture of the new Czechoslovak state, began at an age when the lives as well as careers of most men are long since over.

He is a very old man now, but still alert, and the range of his interests is extraordinary. His conversation is a bit diffuse; he is inclined to get lost in the flow of his own sentences. In one half-hour's talk I had with him, he mentioned, aside from domestic politics, such things as birth control, Irish nationalism and the Catholic Church, Senator Borah, biology, modern American literature (of which he has an amazing knowledge) the Polish corridor, the amount of pocket-money of American soldiers in France, the Habsburgs, Dostoevesky (he is, at eighty-five, just finishing a book on Dostoevesky), Bill Hard, the world economic crisis, the Jugoslav sculptor Mestrovic, and a new English novel he had just been reading and the title of which he couldn't for the life of him remember.

I had expected to meet a man excessively stern, even self-righteous. But Masaryk has a strong sense of humour. He cackled vigorously. His interest in human nature, immense, neglects no comic facet. He told Čapek that academic psychology was of no help to him in learning about human nature

[1] Čapek, *President Masaryk Tells His Story*, p. 121.

H1645-0360

– 'only life and novels.' For seventy years, he said, he has been reading novels every day. 'Man is a damned complicated and puzzling machine. And each man different.' During the whole period of the War, he has related, he slept only half a dozen nights; presumably he read novels instead.

After seeing him I made a few rough notes as follows: 'Warm, strong handshake; no glasses; old man's eyes, hard to tell the colour of them, probably deep grey; still a fuzz of white hair on the scalp; all his own teeth, plus a bit of gold shining when he laughs; plenty of moustache, small beard; glazed, hard, shiny, cheeks; prominent nose; a typical *peasant's* face; distinctly not patrician or "intellectual"; a boulder, shrunken, hard-bitten, out of the soil.'

Masaryk is old. But his work is done. He has built a nation. The story, in its perfection of sequence in cause and effect, is like a Greek tragedy – except that it ended happily. He will die soon. There is no man of our time who will leave a better memory, for others to remember.

Foreign Minister

'I can tell you that without Beneš we should not have had our revolution,' Masaryk told Čapek. The two men worked together during the War, as they work together now, though Beneš is thirty-five years younger. The old philosopher roamed the world, seeking sympathy for the Czech cause: Beneš, likewise a refugee, stayed in Paris – he was the organiser, the filing clerk, the skilful and adhesive practical politician. Masaryk wrote Czech aspirations amid the stars; the pertinacious Beneš wrote them into treaties which re-drew the map of Europe.

Dr. Eduard Beneš, sharp-nosed, sharp-eyed, called by his enemies 'an international busybody', recognised by his friends as an intelligent and responsible world statesman, has been uninterruptedly Czechoslovak minister of foreign affairs since 1919; thus he is the doyen of the foreign ministers of Europe. He was the son of a peasant, and was born in 1884 in Kozlany, Bohemia. As poor a boy as Masaryk, like his master he was self-educated; but whereas Masaryk's Ph. D. thesis was on suicide, that of Beneš in 1908 was on a more practical issue, 'The Austrian Problem and the Czechoslovak Question'.

H1645-0361

Beneš is as efficient as a dynamo. I have never seen him laugh. He is small and slight. He wears a flat-brimmed hat cocked high on the head. He works about fifteen hours a day, and like Mussolini (whom he doesn't otherwise resemble) he delights to see people if they can tell him things; he is one of the most accessible statesmen in Europe. He has no cant or side. He talks facts. Listening to you, he forms your ideas into an orderly progression, One – Two – Three – and then discusses them in series. Expressing his own viewpoint he again uses numerals, but with alphabetical subheads 1A, 2B, and so on. The basis of his success is method. He is a wiry negotiator. No one ever put anything over on Eduard Beneš.

It gives one a queer oblique glimpse through the years to remember that Beneš was not always Beneš. His names, at one time or other, have been 'Spolný', 'Bělský', 'Berger', 'Novotný', 'König', 'Šícha', and 'Leblanc'. Fifteen years ago the Czechoslovak foreign minister was busy, like Masaryk, forging passports, crawling across frontiers, in momentary danger of being shot as a spy – which he was. Once he was arrested in England for travelling with a false passport. Within six months he was officially signing passports of the nation he helped to create.

Like Masaryk, Beneš is a good European. He performs the complex miracle of adjusting complete national patriotism to a deep and conscientious regard to his duties, as he sees them, to Europe as a whole. He helped to found the League of Nations, and helps to run it. One of the greatest living authorities on security and disarmament, he was almost as active in Geneva for many years as Prague. Any time an important European issue arises, Beneš writes an 'exposé', usually a pamphlet eighty or ninety pages long, which he reads to the Czech parliament; and you can be sure it will be a complete and authoritative statement of the problem. Beneš was president of the Sanctions Assembly in September 1935. His dearest ambition is to organise an effective United States of Europe.

When Masaryk retired in December 1935, Beneš as was expected, succeeded him to the presidency of Czechoslovakia.

Czech Complex

The good wife is the one you don't hear about. So it is

H1645-0362

with countries. Almost everyone who visits Czechoslovakia returns to quote the old saying, 'Happy is the country that has no history.' Czechoslovakia has, of course, plenty of history, but it is undeniably true that local Czech politics, under the inspiration of Masaryk, pursue a very smooth and inconspicuous course. Ask me the name of the current prime minister of Czechoslovakia. I don't know.

One of the first persons I met on the first of many visits to Prague was the dramatist Karel Čapek, author of the robot play *R.U.R.* He said at once, 'Why do you come here? We have no Hitlers, no royal pretenders, no *Putsches*, no communist riots, no palace scandals. I warn you immediately – we are terribly uninteresting.' And the dour Czechs were, indeed, a great contrast to the flamboyance of Hungary, the paralysis of Vienna, the hysterics of Berlin.

I met a Press officer in the foreign office – one of the best Press offices in Europe, incidentally. Czechoslovakia being a civilised country, there is no need for a newspaper man to waste his first three days convincing the authorities that he is not a burglar or spy. The Press bureau in Prague is so well run that it is often accused of 'propaganda'. Of course. Propaganda is what it exists for. What enemies of Czechoslovakia object to is that Czechoslovak propaganda is so friendly, efficient, and, in general, honest and accurate that rival countries are outrun.

Czechoslovakia was, of course, more fortunate to begin with than its partners or opponents. Its people were, for one thing, a closely-knit cultural unit, deriving from the tradition of Bohemian kings older than Habsburgs or Hohenzollerns. The Czechs were steadier than their volatile southern Slav cousins, more industrious than the Poles and Rumanians, and with a better background of administrative experience – the Czechs were the civil servants of the old empire – than Slovenes or Serbs.

They inherited, moreover, about three-quarters of the industry of the old empire and most of its mineral and other resources. Thus the great streams of toys, ceramics, glassware, textiles, steelware, munitions, beer, paper, yarn, hams, buttons, that have poured from Czechoslovakia ever since. Again, Czechoslovakia, unlike Jugoslavia or Poland, had been

H1645-0363

H1645-0364

untouched by actual battle; physical reparation was not a problem. Finally, Czechoslovakia had a solid and unbeaten army, comprised of the Russian legions, in contrast to the wrecked fugitives that had to restore order in the other succession states.

On this lucky basis the young country, wedged like a downward-pointing long-nosed dachshund in the very centre of Europe, built, and built well. It eschewed foreign loans and foreign short-term credits, and so was not caught frenziedly short like Germany and the other Danubian countries in the 1931 financial crisis; it strictly limited imports ('Any Czech citizen who buys an orange,' said the first finance minister, 'is a traitor to the state') in an effort to maintain its favourable trade balance; it kept its budget in good order; it made a fairly successful land reform; it built schools for free education; it permitted inner politics to evolve on a very wide coalition basis including the social democrats; and it adopted a fairly reasonable policy toward its numerous minorities.

Even so, after a decade of almost uninterruptedly calm development, Czechoslovakia in the early thirties faced serious troubles. Two events of great importance occurred. One was the sudden and powerful rise of a disguised Nazi party under a thirty-five year old Bohemian sub-Hitler, Konrad Henlein. In the 1935 elections this party, representing the bulk of Czechoslovakia's minority of 3,300,000 Germans, polled 1,247,000 votes and became overnight the second largest party in the country, rising from zero seats in the chamber to forty-four. Henlein protested loyalty to Masaryk and the Czechoslovak state. But if Austria should go Nazi, Czechoslovakia would virtually be encircled by Hitlerism, and Henlein's movement is a serious potential threat.

Intelligent Dr. Beneš knows this. Therefore the second event. He went through Europe mending fences with assiduous alacrity. The first plank in his policy is the alliance with France, the second, the solidarity of the Little Entente – Czechoslovakia, Rumania, Jugoslavia. But as the German menace mounted and Czech relations with Poland grew steadily worse Dr. Beneš saw that he needed something else, and so he went to Moscow and signed a mutual assistance pact – not merely a 'non-aggression' pact which is the form such treaties

usually take – with the U.S.S.R. Czechoslovakia, it is understood, became the military link between France and the Soviet Union as defence against Germany and the other revisionist states. Prague, conveniently central, could be an air-base for both French and Russian planes. In erecting this framework, Beneš was actuated mostly by imperatives of self-defence.

Danube Pact

It is in the Danube region that those two doughty warriors, politics and economics, fight some of their grimmest battles. Nothing, on the face of it, would seem to be more sensible a solution of the difficulties of the area than an economic recreation of empire unity. Abolish the tariffs that deface the territory; cut out mushroom nationalist industries; exchange agrarian goods for industrial products on a basis of efficiency. Simple? Far from it! The Danube countries would far prefer to sink alone than swim together. The nationalist hatreds of these regions cannot be expressed in graphs and charts. They defy belief. I remember a young Hungarian's response to a proposal for a mutual ten per cent cut on Czech-Hungarian tariffs.

'What!' he exclaimed. 'Do you imagine we rate our hatred of the Czechs at only ten per cent!'

The political cleavage of the Danube powers does not, of course, correspond to the natural economic realities of the region. The six states were stratified into two groups, the winners, Czechoslovakia, Rumania, Jugoslavia, against the losers, Austria, Hungary, Bulgaria. This political groupment is bad business, as business. Economically, Czechoslovakia and Austria should form one bloc, an industrial bloc, vis-à-vis an agrarian bloc of the predominantly grain producing countries, Hungary, Rumania, Jugoslavia, Bulgaria. All attempts at Danube salvage have broken on this issue, the fundamental and inescapable dichotomy between the political and economic interests of the region.

There were other political difficulties. Austro-Czechoslovakia (if it existed) would not be big enough a market for all the grain of Hungaro-Rumano-Bulgoslavia. Germany, the best natural purchaser, would have to join the industrial brethren. Then politics protruded its ugly face again: because

H1645-0365

France would object to this. So would Italy. The Little Entente itself is far from being a happy economic unit. Czechoslovakia buys comparatively little grain from its allies Rumania and Jugoslavia, because the strong Czech agrarian party, defending its internal interests, demands high tariffs on grain from the Entente partners.

Balkans

> 'The war between Hungary and Jugoslavia has been averted, and the League of Nations will try to find a way to settle the controversy. Perhaps the best solution would be to plough under every third Balkan.'
>
> – HOWARD BRUBAKER.

Beyond and below Czechoslovakia lie the deep Balkans. They are, it has been said, a sort of hell paved with the bad intentions of the powers. The War was fought, remarked the Greek statesman Venizelos, to Europeanise the Balkans; what the War did, more or less, was Balkanise Europe. The Balkan peninsula is an unstable pyramid of nationalist hatreds, and of minority hatreds within nations.

One can make a pretty list of them. What is the worst hatred in southern and eastern Europe? Does a Bulgar hate a Serb more than a Croat hates a Serb? Do the hatreds of both combined equal the hatred of either for, say, an Italian or a Greek? Does a Hungarian hate a Rumanian more than a Rumanian hates a Bulgarian? Does a Galician hate a Pole more than a Ukrainian hates a Russian?

It is an intolerable affront to human and political nature that these parochial and miserable and wretched and shrivelled little countries in the Balkan peninsula can, and do, have quarrels that cause world wars. A million young Englishmen died because of an event in 1914 in a mud-caked primitive village Sarajevo. Loathsome and almost obscene snarls in Balkan politics, hardly intelligible to a western reader, are still vital to the peace of Europe, and perhaps the world.

H1645-0366

H1645-0367

CHAPTER XXVI

THE LUPESCU COMEDY

RUMANIA, a rich country, 18,800,000 strong, is ruled by King Carol, who in turn is ruled by Magda Lupescu. The land swims in oil, smothers in grain and timber, though much wealth has been lost by the depredations of corrupt politicians. The capital, Bucharest, is a tinselly sort of little Paris where the main street, the Calea Victoria, flutters with silken skirts and the leather trappings of gay carriages transporting perfumed, corseted officers. Here wealth produced by the sweating and starving peasants is spent on *tsuica* (plum spirit), on caviare from Danube sturgeons, on huge red strawberries from the Transylvanian hills.

For three generations Rumania was ruled by a family of hereditary semi-dictators, the Bratianus; it was a Bratianu who peddled the Rumanian crown around the courts of Europe and brought back Carol's grand-uncle as the country's first king. The policy of the Bratianus was that of the Turk suzerains and Phanariot Greek concessionaires who had preceded them – despoil the land with artful greed. No country in Europe has been so corruptly manipulated and exploited. Baksheesh was the national watchword. After the War came a land reform. The peasants, to buy seed and tools, borrowed money at interest rates of thirty, forty, even fifty per cent. But they could not sell the glut of grain the land produced. As a result agrarian bankruptcy ruined them in thousands and the agricultural debt became, *per capita*, the highest in the world. The finances were paralysed, the budget deficit mounted out of sight – and in the ornate streets of Bucharest money flowed like silk in the hands of a corrupt and chosen few.

There is a cruel little joke about Rumania. 'Mania' means madness. 'Kleptomania' means madness to steal. 'Rumania' means madness to steal applied to a nation.

Rumanians are good-natured and fatalistic folk, colourful and easy-going; they don't like trouble or bloodshed. They are not like Serbs, who have high qualities of heroism and a predisposition to patriotic murder. There has never been a revolution in Rumania. The Rumanians are oddly mixed in blood, being originally Latin, the descendants of Roman legions sent to the province of Dacia by the emperor Trajan; atop this were superimposed centuries of Slavic blood. And there are traces of Gipsy, Tartar, Greek, and Turk in most Rumanians.

To this country and its primitive and illiterate people came a young British princess about forty years ago. She was Marie, daughter of the Duke of Edinburgh and granddaughter of both Queen Victoria of England and the Czar of Russia, representing a type of unique concentration of royalty that has become rare in the modern world. Marie married Ferdinand, the Rumanian heir apparent, and gave birth to six children, the eldest of whom was Carol. She and Ferdinand ruled from 1914 till Ferdinand died in 1927. Meanwhile all manner of scandalous things had happened. And kept on happening.

. . . . . .

Carol was a complicated, truculent, and strongwilled youngster. Even as a boy he was hard to manage. He disliked his father, the arid, flinty Ferdinand, and adored his mother – at the beginning. He bitterly resented, however, the power in the court of one of the great Rumanian nobles, Prince Stirbey, and of Jon Bratianu, the dictator, who was Stirbey's brother-in-law. Carol grew up to follow the example of the court, and himself began to lead an emotional life of considerable complexity.

In 1918 he met Mlle Zizi Lambrino in Jassy, the provincial town where the Rumanian court had taken refuge during the German invasion. Marie tried to frustrate his affair with Lambrino with the result, of course, that she strengthened it. As if going out of his way to annoy his family, Carol actually married Lambrino. It was not a clandestine or morganatic marriage, but took place in the cathedral of Odessa, fully solemnised. The Rumanian supreme court annulled the marriage and Carol was angry enough to abdicate. But after a

H1645-0368

year or so he tired of Lambrino, and in the crush of war both marriage and abdication were allowed to be forgotten. Lambrino bore Carol a son, by name Mircea.

Carol, still more or less a boy in the hands of Marie and the Bratianu bosses, was told to take a trip around the world to recuperate and forget. He got as far from Rumania as Switzerland, where he met Princess Helene, the daughter of King Constantine of Greece, whose son George, by the efficient management of Marie, was to marry Carol's sister Elizabeth. Carol decided to settle down. He married Helene. This was in March 1921. The royal couple returned to Bucharest and prepared to live happily ever after.

But subsequently Carol met Magda Lupescu, and a new phase of Rumanian history began.

Carol had come by this time to open conflict with Jon Bratianu, the dictator. He resented Bratianu's influence, and had served formal notice that when he became king he would wipe out the Bratianu-Stirbey clique. Bratianu was no person to take a threat like this lying down. Carol's affair with Lupescu was becoming a bit of a scandal, and it gave Bratianu a chance to strike. Carol was sent off to represent Rumania at the funeral in London of Queen Alexandra. This duty performed, he met Lupescu in Milan. They were going to Venice together, but he found a message telling him to return to Bucharest at once, without his mistress, or forfeit the succession. Bratianu had prevailed on Ferdinand and Marie thus to 'discipline' their son. Carol flashed into temper, refused to return. Thereupon, with extreme haste, Bratianu wangled a crown council into accepting Carol's 'abdication'.

Carol thus began his five years' exile. During this time Lupescu never once left his side.

Ferdinand died in 1927, and Carol's six-year-old son Michael – by Helene – became king. Then, more important, Jon Bratianu died, and the clique lost power as a peasant chieftain, Juliu Maniu, took advantage of the troubled situation to assert leadership; he became prime minister. The remnants of the Bratianu gang wanted Carol out. Maniu, patriotically eager to preserve the dynasty, wanted him back. Maniu's idea was that the divorce between Carol and Helene made during the exile should be annulled, and that Carol might then really

H1645-0369

H1645-0370

settle down. So he arranged for Carol to return – by means of the celebrated coup of June 1930, when the exiled prince flew back to Bucharest. Carol proclaimed himself king, unseating his boy Michael, and taking thus a throne that had already been held by both his father and his son.

Maniu, as we shall see, reckoned without Lupescu. He had assumed Carol would desert her. He was wrong.

The Lady

Magda Lupescu is, beyond doubt, one of the most remarkable women of the time. She is fortyish now, and getting fat; nevertheless Carol is still devoted to her, and life without her is unthinkable for him. She is a King's Favourite in the grand line of Du Barry and De Pompadour. Her personal influence on him is probably, on the whole, good, but the fact that she is Jewish, and has come to head a sort of secret government within a government, has had serious political consequences.

Lupescu is in fact only half-Jewish. She was born in Jassy, the daughter of the keeper of an apothecary shop named Wolff. He changed his name to Lupescu, the Rumanian equivalent, in order to get permission to practise as a chemist, since only a certain proportion of Jews were allowed to enter the professions. On a trip to Vienna he met a Roman Catholic girl and married her. Lupescu was the child of his marriage. She was actually baptised a Roman Catholic.

She met Carol in 1923 in Sinaia, the summer capital, where his coterie of bucks and bloods went to hunt and play roulette. Previously she had married an army officer; when Carol became attentive she quietly divorced him. A woman of great intelligence and commanding personality, with flaming red hair, her charms were such that Carol gave up a throne for her.

Until very recently she lived at No. 2 Alea Vulpache, in a two-story red brick villa at the left of the Polish legation, near the corner of the Alea Alexandria, in the residential outskirts of Bucharest. There is a big garden, and the visitor is perplexed by a row of chicken coops along one wall. Leghorns and Plymouth Rocks, also a couple of turkeys, scamper and strut behind the wire. The story is that not only does Lupescu

tend these domestic creatures, but with her own hands helped the carpenters build the sheds and coops.

She and Carol cannot live together openly. This would not be too great a shock for Rumanian morals but it would be politically imprudent. Everyone in the kingdom knows that she is his mistress, and she is openly attacked as such in speeches and pamphlets by the opposition, but a certain discretion is necessary in Carol's personal routine. Sometimes she motors into town at night and enters the palace grounds by a garden gate. In the garden, separate from the palace but connected with it by a passage, is a small cottage. The palace, be it understood, is situated on the main street of Bucharest, in a location comparable to that of Piccadilly in London. So privacy is difficult. Therefore, Carol and Lupescu live as much as possible in the mountain village where they first met, Sinaia.

People resent Lupescu for a variety of reasons. Some of the princely families which had ruled and pillaged Rumania for so long cannot stand it that Carol lives such an irregular personal life. Many other Rumanians, both patrician and of common stock, would not mind if the king had twenty mistresses, but they dislike Lupescu's Jewishness. Above all, she has come to typify and concentrate the opposition of the politicians, for the special reason that she has become a politician in her own right, and the most important one in the kingdom – head of the palace *camarilla.*

This *camarilla* grew up partly because Carol, in his unwedded state, could not have a queen and a regular court, partly because he was naturally attached to a few old cronies. These were friends of Lupescu also. The *camarilla,* as it originally existed, was led by a man named Poui Dimitrescu, for many years the King's private secretary. The first *camarilla* was broken up early in 1934, following the assassination of the prime minister, Jon Duca, by fanatical adherents of the Iron Guard, a Fascist organisation pledged to extirpate Lupescu and all her friends. But a new *camarilla* took its place.

Lupescu has friends in all the key positions of the realm. She has her own secret service. (Its headquarters are on the Strada Romana.) She puts people in the big jobs. She has, in fact, almost usurped the functions of the prime minister;

H1645-0371

no prime minister can rule independently of her, yet she is not responsible to anyone. She isn't, even her enemies admit, interfering with things *badly*, but nothing important can be done without her consent; and this infuriates the politicians. Her activity of course enhances her value to the King, because she is the convenient instrument whereby he exercises extra-curricular functions – so necessary to the fun of kingship, especially in Rumania, where everything is 'fixed'.

Two people have dared come out in the open against Lupescu. One is Maniu. He is able to do so because, to date, the King can touch him only at the risk of a revolution. But Maniu lost his job as prime minister on Lupescu's account. The other was Colonel Vladimir Precup. This officer was the agent chiefly responsible for the outside arrangements of Carol's *coup d'état* when he flew back to Rumania. For years he was one of Carol's best friends, along with the all-powerful private secretary, Dimitrescu. Later Precup thought that Lupescu's influence on Carol was ruining the country and he concocted a fantastic plot to get rid of her. He was arrested, dismissed from the army, and sentenced to ten years in jail.

One person dared to combat her – to a point. He was, and is, Nicolai Titulescu, Rumania's voluble and eccentric foreign minister. After the Duca killing, Titulescu declined to enter the cabinet until there was a house-cleaning. He refused to serve in any government so long as the King was surrounded by a gang which aroused the Iron Guard to murder. Titulescu was indispensable to Carol, as the only Rumanian with a European prestige in international matters. As price for his entry in the government, he demanded the break-up of the old *camarilla*. For a week the struggle went on between Lupescu, the King's mistress, and Titulescu, who is uninterested in mistresses. Titulescu won. But he was far too shrewd to threaten the position of Lupescu herself.

Lupescu is practically an ideal mistress, were it not for politics. She is not frivolous; on the contrary her discretion is notorious. Not forty people in Bucharest, outside her own circle, have ever seen her. She is not avaricious; indeed she learned the value of cold cash during the years of exile, and she persuades Carol to save his money. She is, according to all

H1645-0372

gossip, faithful to him, and this in a country monstrously licentious. She has no desire to marry Carol. She knows it would be the end of the dynasty. Nor has she encumbered him with illegitimate children. And Madame de Montespan, be it remembered, inflicted on Louis XIV seven.[1]

Magda Lupescu is a striking anachronism. Kings are dull folk these days; and royal favourites, like court jesters, have practically fled the field. Louise de la Valliere was the daughter of an officer; Lupescu of a small town chemist. Nell Gwynn sold oranges at Drury Lane; Lupescu frequented the Athena Palace hotel in Bucharest. Lola Montez was born in Ireland, went to Spain and India, and became the mistress of Mad King Ludwig of Bavaria; but Lupescu, even if her stage is smaller, picked a king who isn't, for all his peccadilloes, crazy. Her mileage is good. Du Barry lasted five years a king's mistress; Lupescu has been with Carol over ten.

They tell a little story in Bucharest to the effect that her father scolded her severely at the time that Carol's brother, Nicholas, was indulging in amorous and scandalous high jinks. Carol had settled, as it were, down. But Nicholas was acting up. Against his brother's orders he had committed marriage with a certain Madame Saveanu. Carol had done something exactly similar in his youth but there is no puritan like a reformed rake and he was wild with fury; Nicholas, he said, was bringing a bad name to the crown. Bucharest rocked, especially at the report that Nicholas blacked his royal brother's eye. And old Lupescu came to Magda saying, 'Daughter, daughter, what kind of a family are you getting mixed up with!'

Royal Rapscallion

Carol to-day is rather portly, with something of a midriff; he is no youngster; he will, like his royal cousin the Prince of Wales, be forty-two this year. He is vain, stubborn, wilful, and by no means unintelligent. He has very little sense of humour. He speaks letter-perfect English with a hint of German accent, letter-perfect French with a hint of English accent, and letter-perfect German with a hint of French accent.

[1] Occasionally rumours that Lupescu is to be married off to someone crop up. Also reports of Carol's 'engagement' to a German princess were recently heard.

H1645-0373

Even his Rumanian is not quite perfect – familiar symptom of the polyglot training of Balkan kings.

He is pretty well off. His personal salary is £72,727 per year (at present exchange) and, contrary to general opinion, he lives fairly modestly and must be able to save a third of it. One Bucharest estimate gives him savings, deposited mostly in banks or securities abroad, of 20,000,000 French francs, or something over £200,000. The official civil list is the following:

King Carol	40,000,000 lei	(£72,727)
Queen Mother Marie	20,000,000 „	(£36,364)
Ex-Queen Helene	7,000,000 „	(£12,726)
Crown Prince Michael	7,000,000 „	(£12,726)
Travelling expenses	6,000,000 „	(£10,909)
Total	80,000,000 lei	(£145,452)

Carol's relations with his whole family are bad, except with his son, Michael, the only lad in history who has been king of a country once and may with reasonable expectation be king of the same country again. His system for Michael's education is eminently sensible, Carol having realised how bad his own education was. But Carol avoids his mother; he has exiled his ex-wife, Helene; he and Nicholas are far from friendly; and he is said to dislike his sister Ileana, now wife of the Archduke Anton Habsburg, who is the nicest of all the royal Rumanians.

Carol has very few friends; few kings, indeed can afford the luxury of friendship. He is apt to be rude and overbearing, and on his dignity; people find it hard to talk to him. There is an ugly, jagged streak of maladjustment in his character, caused by jealousy of his mother. His closest friend is probably Titianu, the man who is under-secretary of the interior in all cabinets; another intimate is Professor Nicolas Jorga, the fantastic pundit who was his tutor in his youth, who became professor of universal history at the University of Bucharest at the age of twenty-two, and who has written two hundred and fifty-seven different books and pamphlets.

Carol is not a dictator. The plain truth is that he has no need to be. He is willing to practise almost any compromise which will save him from the danger of *overt* dictatorial rule,

H1645-0374

because he has taken good note of the fate of his royal cousins Alfonso of Spain and Alexander of Jugoslavia. He does not need to exert dictatorial power largely because of the Rumanian electoral law, by which the party getting forty per cent of the votes takes a thirty per cent bonus of the seats in the chamber. And Rumanian politics are such that a government in office is never voted out; the king determines the time for a change, superintends the appointment of a new ministry, and then this ministry makes new elections and always wins them.

After Duca was killed the King suddenly developed an extremely diplomatic illness, which prevented him from attending the funeral of the murdered prime minister. He feared the Iron Guard might bomb the cathedral where the services were being held. The decision to stay away was made at the last moment. Charts prepared in advance had shown where he would be. He wasn't there. Whispers surged through Bucharest that Carol was hiding in his palace, paralysed with fear. Possibly he was only being prudent. But he lost a fine chance to prove that bullets which could kill a prime minister could not scare a king. Such is the man who is ruler of 18,800,000 Rumanians.

Mother Marie

There should be another word about Marie. She is still a gorgeous woman. There are large sections of purest blah in her autobiography, a book she never should have written; but from childhood she has sought to express herself. She was born with no sense of envy, no jealousy; she has not the faintest shadow of inferiority complex; she might have been a superb actress; her dramatic ability is extreme.

The tragedy of her life is the failure of her personal relations with Carol. She spoiled him as a youngster, and she still loves him deeply, but she cannot take him seriously as a king. He is still a boy to her. It is almost impossible for her to resist thinking that he is being absurd when he is acting like a monarch. And this he detests. In contrast, Lupescu's hold on Carol comes partly because she does see him for what he after all is, King of Rumania.

Marie is fond of young Michael and hopes desperately that

H1645-0375

H1645-0376

he will grow up with her character in his bones, that he will skip the generation of his father. She wants him to get a good education, marry a princess, be a good king. She does everything possible to salve the unhappiness of his situation vis-à-vis his parents. Lupescu, incidentally, sees Michael casually but regularly, and is fond of him.

One is apt to forget what a first-class political queen Marie was. In the modern world royalty should earn its keep. Marie not only gave Rumania six children; she more than doubled its population and territory. An Englishwoman, she influenced Ferdinand, a German and a Hohenzollern, to side with the Allies instead of the Central Powers during the War; and thus at a stroke converted Rumania from a somewhat ridiculous semi-principality to the seventh largest country in continental Europe.

Marie is out of the political picture now. But, as she puts it, the people know that if they 'need' her, she is there.

More Fascist Scurvy

Only two streets away from the town palace where Carol lives is a hotel which, to put it mildly, expresses much of the spirit of Bucharest, amorously, politically, venally. In this hotel, almost every afternoon, two or three young men, well-dressed and multilingual, sit and sip Turkish coffee and talk about revolution. They are members of the Iron Guard.

This organisation was founded in 1927 by a young zealot, Corneliu Codreanu, who was of Polish not Rumanian origin; his real name is Zelinski. At first he called it the 'Legion of the Archangel Michael'. Its programme was a fanatic, obstreperous sub-Fascism on a strong nationalist and anti-Semitic basis. Its members trooped through the countryside, wore white costumes, carried burning crosses, impressed the ignorant peasantry, aroused the students in the towns. Presently its enrolled strength was two hundred thousand men.

Codreanu believed in *overt* violence; in fact he once shot the Mayor of Jassy, whom he accused of being pro-Semite. But his movement was only a sort of unpleasant eczema on the face of the land until Hitlerism came to power in the Reich. Then it straightway reached considerable political importance, because if the Iron Guard came to power, it

might transfer Rumania's traditional allegiance from France to Germany. Meanwhile, the person of Magda Lupescu was a perpetual red flag in the faces of Iron Guardsmen. Finally Duca, the prime minister, was murdered by Iron Guard desperadoes.

After the murder the Iron Guard split up, and the leadership passed to a much more intelligent and important man, Nicolai Stelescu. He sought to make the Iron Guard more or less respectable. It was forbidden as a legal party, but he tried to fight by legal means. He is a youngster of thirty, a fanatic, an idealist, with a council of advisers who worship him. He sits, holding a sort of court, in the foyer of the Athena Palace hotel almost every afternoon. He is a good demagogue and orator.

His overwhelming idea is to eliminate Lupescu. Everything else is subordinate to that.

Stelescu's men say that they expect to come to power through country-wide agitation centralised in local clubs called 'Cult de Patrie'. They intend to eliminate political parties when they reach power, but to leave the King alone, if he gives Lupescu up. They talk of the King quite respectfully. They deny that the organisation is any longer financed by Hitler. They say, in fact, that when their men visited Rosenberg in Berlin, he was astonished that they did not want money and complimented them on being the only Balkan sub-Hitler group which had ever come to Berlin without begging.

The Iron Guard, under Stelescu, recently became allied to the great National Peasant party of Juliu Maniu. This is an important development. Maniu thinks he is using the Iron Guard; they are his shock-troops. The Iron Guard assumes it is using Maniu; he is their political tactician. Other leaders, other parties, have joined this informal common-front, like the dissident liberals of George Bratianu, and the adherents of General Averescu, Rumania's chief War hero. All are linked by common hatred of Lupescu.

Maniu Tells his Story

One of the finest characters in all the Balkans, in fact in all Europe, and certainly the most distinguished citizen of Rumania, is Juliu Maniu. Ascetic, incorruptible, stately, devout, Maniu is a Transylvanian, the son of a peasant. He

H1645-0377

is a bachelor. Like Matchek in Croatia, whom his career resembles, he is a Roman Catholic; he was educated as a Jesuit. He has no interest in women, in money, or in personal power; he is that rare thing, a Rumanian patriot for Rumania's sake.

Maniu was born in 1873. Before the War he was a deputy in the Hungarian parliament, representing the (then) Rumanian minority. His health is not good. His faults as a politician are an unyielding stubbornness and inability to compromise; and his mind, tenacious enough, is slow-moving. He is capable of immense disinterestedness. He resigned the premiership because he was convinced Carol had treated Helene unjustly. He resigned his presidency of the National Peasant party because he felt that Carol's dislike of him prejudiced the party's chances of political success.

Maniu's first great achievement was binding together two wings of the submerged opposition, just after the War, and making a united force of it. From the old kingdom came the 'peasant' (Tsaranist) halt of the party; from Transylvania and the other districts acquired by the peace treaties came the 'national' half. Rumania had a decent government for the first time in history when Maniu became prime minister. He tried to promote essential governmental economies and reforms; he set about reorganising agriculture and the railways; above all – a negative but valuable accomplishment – he ended the vicious Bratianu tyranny.

What is more, Maniu did something for which he gets small thanks nowadays – he brought King Carol back.

The world has heard a great deal of that dazzling aeroplane coup in June 1930, whereby Carol regained his throne. The true story of that coup has never been written. It is assumed that Carol, with the aid of a couple of gallant desperadoes, did the job himself. He was described as a hard-flying prince, a modern Allen Quartermaine, a hero. Nothing could be further from the truth. Carol did nothing whatever to bring himself back except get in the aeroplane. The whole business was engineered, *inside* Rumania, by Maniu.

His motives were clear. He knew that Carol, outside the country, was a perpetual focus of unrest and intrigue. He was aware that the regency was weak and he believed strongly in the three essential conditions of monarchist institutions:

H1645-0378

stability, continuity, authority. Moreover, he knew that inasmuch as the 'Liberal' (Bratianu) party was against Carol, his own National Peasant party, on realistic grounds, should favour him. Logic compelled him to try to bring the errant prince home. But he wanted him home without Lupescu.

Deeply disillusioned years after, Maniu himself wrote the whole story, as a speech which he was refused permission to deliver in the Rumanian parliament on December 12, 1934. It recounts in full detail his incessant manœuvres on behalf of Carol even while Ferdinand was still alive. When Ferdinand died Maniu's activities redoubled. He committed the National Peasant party to the idea of Carol's restoration, sounded out the regency, and carefully tested public opinion. Following is part of the speech, which has never before been published:

> 'The impatience of H.R.H. Prince Carol (to return to Rumania) was growing, but he showed not the least sign of an intention to separate from Madame Lupescu. . . . In all conversations which I had with H.R.H. the Princess Mother Helene, I tried to remove her explicable bitterness toward H.R.H. Prince Carol, with the aim that should Prince Carol return the ground would be spiritually prepared for a reconciliation. . . . H.R.H. Prince Carol judged my foresight as indecision.
>
> 'My attitude, which was confirmed by messages I received, was not caused by hesitation but by the fact that for me two things were important: first, I needed assurance from H.R.H. Prince Carol that . . . he intended to reign in a constitutional manner and not through personal friends; and secondly, that he would separate from Madame Lupescu whose fatal influence on Prince Carol enshadows him. . . .'

Maniu proceeds to relate how he sent an emissary to Paris to sound out Carol; the emissary saw not only the prince but Lupescu herself, who said that she would not upset plans by returning to Rumania with him. She is quoted as having said, *'The day that H.R.H. is restored to the throne for the happiness of the country, I shall disappear for ever, and my only wish is that thereafter no one shall speak of me.'* Maniu, cautious, wanted this declaration implemented by a statement from Carol. He determined to send Nicholas to see him. He proceeds:

> 'In this situation, one day at the end of May 1930, Major

H1645-0379

H1645-0380

Precup, well known to me, a devoted supporter of H.R.H. Prince Carol, presented himself and informed that he had been to see H.R.H. Prince Carol who begged him to ascertain what my final attitude would be were H.R.H. Prince Carol one day to decide to return home. I charged Major Precup to say to H.R.H. Prince Carol that there was no need for such a step because H.R.H. Prince Nicholas on July 18th would leave for Paris and meet H.R.H. Prince Carol and discuss matters until I could come myself.

'I asked Major Precup about Madame Lupescu. He replied: "She is not returning to the country." I then told him that in that event, if... H.R.H. Prince Carol should decide independently to return, he would not find an enemy but a good friend in me.'

Maniu then details the astounding labours he went through preparing for the event. He tended to every detail. He called Colonel Manolescu, the adjutant of Prince Nicholas, and communicated with Nicholas. He arranged that the minister of war, General Condescu, should prepare troops at Cluj and Jassy to receive Carol, and that the garrison in Bucharest should be on duty at the aeroplane field. He informed the cabinet and the regents, and arranged that one of the regents, Sarateanu, should resign his place so that Carol could take it. He even arranged for a room for Carol to sleep in at the palace.

Carol arrived; and at five the next morning Maniu was informed that he wished to be proclaimed King at once. Maniu had had the different idea that Carol should first enter the regency, until his marital affairs were adjusted and the country got used to the new state of affairs. Carol was insistent. Maniu dutifully and with some difficulty procured the consent of the regency and then held a cabinet meeting:

'Five ministers voted for the entry of H.R.H. Prince Carol into the regency, while six were in favour of his being proclaimed King. My view was the minority, but several ministers said they were prepared to submit to my decision, whatever it might be.... During the cabinet meeting a large delegation of members of parliament of our party had come to see me. I received them. They were of the opinion that H.R.H. Prince Carol should be proclaimed King immediately and begged me not to obstruct their desires. I saw at once the problem had taken a turning from which no efforts of mine could divert it, even though it was obvious what evil results would follow if

H.R.H. Prince Carol were proclaimed King without first having arranged the question of Princess Helene and Madame Lupescu .... But I could not force my views in the face of public opinion ... and it was too late to obtain the results at which I had aimed. I therefore, took recourse to the only logical and honourable solution; I ... resigned.'

Carol, after a few days, was compelled to reaccept Maniu as prime minister. Maniu proceeds:

'Immediately after the formation of the government, in accord with the wishes of H.M. the King, I proposed that the coronation be held without delay. I fixed the date between September 15 and 20, 1930, and established that H.M. the King should be crowned together with Princess Mother Helene. I presented the programme of the coronation and took the preliminary measures at Alba Julia. Tired but glad at the result obtained, I left for a two weeks' holiday.

'Upon my return I found the situation entirely changed. H.M. the King no longer wanted to hear of the coronation. The situation which, to my great joy, had been improving, tending to become more normal, had been aggravated. I did not know how this change had come about....

'Then, accidentally, I learned that Madame Lupescu had returned to the country. I refused to believe it. I made inquiry of the directors of the Security Service, Messrs. Cadere and Bianu. They denied it. I asked M. Vaida; he knew nothing. I was again informed that Madame Lupescu had returned. I again asked M. Bianu, who replied that it was another Madame Lupescu. I learned however, that she had returned on August 4, 1930, and that she was stopping at Foisor Palace.'

Shortly thereafter Maniu resigned again. He was 'extremely tired' and saw that 'under these conditions government with results was not possible'. The King, he records, received his resignation with 'evident pleasure'. Maniu learned the lesson that royalty does not like to be too much indebted to its subjects. What had happened was that Carol tried to give Lupescu up. He stuck it out alone for just two months. Then he found life unbearable without her.

Diplomat De Luxe

The only other Rumanian politician worth note is the fabulous foreign minister, Nicolai Titulescu. He looks like a mongoloid monkey; he is the best conversationalist in the Balkans;

H1645-0381

H1645-0382

he controls all the best journalists in Bucharest; he is the one man in Rumania trusted by the French general staff; he is torrentially voluble in half a dozen languages; his wit and unquenchable vivacity are famous all over Europe; he wears an overcoat indoors, even on the hottest day; he is No. 2 on the death list of the Iron Guard; he has twice been president of the League of Nations Assembly and in 1935 was president of both the Little Entente and the Balkan Entente, comprising populations of almost seventy million people.

Carol, it is said, would like to get rid of him, but if ousted, Titulescu would join forces with Maniu, which would make a pretty mess.

Germany or U.S.S.R.?

Rumania is the second country in the iron ring of the Little Entente. Its army is not very good but its resources in oil (one-third owned by British companies), are enormous and it is of great strategic importance in the French system of alliances throughout Europe. The French would not like to lose Rumania. And they have no intention of doing so.

Yet Rumania has been tempted on occasion to German leanings. There are several reasons:

(1) Rumania's chief crop is grain and Germany is potentially its best market. France and Rumania's partners in the Little Entente and Balkan Entente (Jugoslavia, Turkey, and Greece) are able to buy very little Rumanian grain. Germany could buy it all – for a political price.

(2) Not only is anti-Semitism very acute in Rumania, but there exists a German minority of eight hundred thousand Saxons; these naturally feel the swastika itch. Besides the Iron Guard there are at least three Fascist parties in Rumania.

(3) Rumania's enemy is Hungary. France is not near enough to help Rumania in the event of war with Hungary, even if it were willing to. Germany might. This is to look far ahead, but the necessity to have an ally in the event the Hungarians ever attempt to regain Transylvania plays a certain role in Rumanian foreign policy.

(4) Carol is half a Hohenzollern. And like many men with power who would like more power, he probably has a surreptitious admiration for Hitler.

The Franco-Soviet arrangement, on the other hand, tends to keep Rumania in line. For years Rumania feared a Russian attempt to regain Bessarabia, the rich province along the Dniester which Rumania seized from the U.S.S.R. after the War. The Bolsheviks, playing for peace in the west, renounced aggressive intentions towards Bessarabia. This naturally relieved the Rumanians, and the way was open to extend the French alliance with a Rumanian-Soviet non-aggression pact.

H1645-0383

H1645-0384

CHAPTER XXVII

JUGOSLAVIA AFTER ALEXANDER

PETER II, Europe's youngest monarch, twelve years old, King of Jugoslavia in succession to his murdered father Alexander, is titular ruler of some 13,500,000 powerful and truculent Serbs, Croats, Slovenes, Slavones, Macedonians, Montenegrins, Bosnians, Dalmatians, united in the Kingdom of Jugoslavia. He is a shy and awkward boy. Almost thirteen, he does not yet speak any language well. His English is hesitant, his Serb faulty. 'He is not bright, poor Peter,' members of his entourage say.

The trouble seems to be a badly mangled education. Through carelessness or ignorance, or both, his father and mother brought him up in errant fashion. His only teacher until he was ten was an English governess. She was a worthy character and devoted to the backward, lonely boy, but her share in his training should have ended when he reached school age.

The King, Alexander, only realised this shortly before his death, and it was Queen Marie of Rumania, the boy's grandmother, who stepped in and insisted on some proper education for the prince. So he was sent to England to school. Then his father was murdered and Peter, succeeding him, returned to Jugoslavia and now is unable to resume school, because the provisions of the Jugoslav constitution forbid the monarch from leaving the country for any extended stay.

It was a pity Peter could not finish school in England. The next best thing was done; an English tutor, Parrott, was put in charge of him. Unfortunately, Parrott is cursed with shyness. He is almost as shy as Peter himself.

Peter learned the news of his father's death from Queen Marie. She didn't know how to break the terrible news to him. Finally she said, 'Peter, you know people will call you Majesty now.' The boy burst into tears, crying, 'Grandmamma, I am too young to be a king.'

In strict contrast to Peter's mismanaged education is the example of his cousin Michael of Rumania. Father Carol has been very sensible about Michael. He goes to school with twelve other boys picked from all over the kingdom, and on terms of almost complete democracy with them. The boys are chosen from different parts of Rumania – Transylvania, Bessarabia, and so on – so that Michael will absorb different Rumanian characteristics, and they come from various walks of life: the father of one, for instance, is a railway switchman, another is the son of a minor government official. The school, which sits in the palace, is competently staffed, and Carol has the boys to lunch once a week or so. As a result, Michael is a poised and confident youngster, and when he and Peter are together, the contrast between his bright ebullience and Peter's shy timidity is striking.

Peter is one of the richest boys of his age in Europe, perhaps the richest. The financial section of his father's will has never been published, but so far as is known, Peter is sole heir, and Alexander's fortune was estimated at £2,000,000. Much of it – not a patriotic detail from the viewpoint of orthodox nationalism – was held in bank accounts abroad, not in Jugoslavia, and in foreign (not Jugoslav) securities. Alexander differed from other dictators, Hitler or Mussolini, in a passionate acquisitiveness to money.

The Jugoslav civil list is paid as a whole to the King and the King determines how it shall be apportioned in the family. Obviously a boy of twelve cannot do this and his cousin, the Regent Prince Paul and his mother have charge of the income, though purely as trustees. The civil list is enormous, amounting to 55,000,000 dinars a year, or about £250,000 at present exchange: half of it is paid in dinars in Jugoslavia, half deposited in Swiss francs abroad. Regent Paul's allowance is 720,000 dinars a year, and in addition he gets a salary as Regent of 540,000 dinars, a total roughly equal to £5,760 – a pittance compared to the money at theoretical disposal of the boy.

Peter is a boy with a throne – and no playmates. He has £2,000,000 – and nothing to spend it on. His income is somewhere around £600 a day and he earns it by being afflicted with kingship in the most obstreperous of Balkan countries.

H1645-0385

H1645-0386

All the glamour of royalty, if there is any, is hardly recompense for the formidable strain which will accompany this unlucky lad's adolescence. He should be playing football; instead he has a court chamberlain behind the curtains. He has, moreover, the most terrible prospect in the world; he can never change his job, he is King for life, he can never escape the steep walls of his own future.

Martyred Monarch

Alexander is dead, and his bullet-torn body lies in the Karageorgeovitch crypt in Oblenetz, near Belgrade, a highly decorated structure that will look well in a century or two, when time has dimmed the colour of its burning mosaics. But to understand Jugoslavia, to chart even an approximate projection of events, we must pause a moment and study the dead king's life and works.

In pictures, as the American magazine *Time* unvaryingly pointed out, he resembled a small-town dentist. In reality he looked like what he was – a King. He was industrious, cruel, charming, capable of almost inexplicable sudden flights of worry, temperament, and fury, yet disciplined and shrewd – a complex character. He was both implacable, and, in his good moments, bright-hearted. He died at forty-six, and he is stronger dead than alive, because temporarily at least his murder served to unify his riven country.

First and last Alexander was a soldier. He fought all through the War. He walked with common soldiers in the terrible retreat across Serbia in 1915. Moral in his personal life to the point of austerity, he despised his brother-in-law Carol as a wastrel and profligate. He liked Boris of Bulgaria but was suspicious of his timidity and lackadaisical qualities. It would have been unthinkable for Alexander, like Boris, to walk the streets of his capital unguarded. He was brought up at the court of the Czar in Petrograd, where he was a page; the glitter and absolutism of this resplendency dazzled him, permanently influenced his life. He did not love pomp but he did love uncompromisingly the display of authority. He spent his fantastic salary with extreme frugality; his only extravagances were books and motor-cars. In the Dedinje library he had twenty thousand books. He owned twenty-three motor-

cars, all Packards; he was the largest individual owner of Packards in the world.

Like all dictators except Hitler, he was a tremendous worker. Alexander rose early and was at his desk by eight; his secretaries had to have the whole of his day's correspondence, papers, etc., ready for him at this hour. At ten every day the audiences began. Every Monday he received first the chief of the general staff, the town commandant of Belgrade, and the chief of police. Security first was his watchword. He worked till late in the evening, when, stupefied with fatigue, he either played bridge with the Queen and a few close friends,[1] or, like Hitler, listened to music. He played the piano himself quite often, and fairly well. He never wore civilian dress; always uniform. In his reception-room the only ornaments were showcases filled with models of field artillery and cross-sections of shells, burnished till they glowed like jewels.

Behind Alexander, behind young Peter, are a couple of generations of the most turbid Balkan genealogy imaginable. The family, the Karageorgeovitch dynasty, is pure Serb; unlike all other dynasties, it intermarried with other royalty only with extreme reluctance, and then only with next-door Balkan neighbours. Alexander's father, Peter I, married the daughter of the King of Montenegro; he himself went as far as Bucharest to espouse Marie, daughter of Rumania's Marie.

The Karageorgeovitch family (the name means 'Black George') was descended from a *haiduk*, bandit chieftain, who freed Serbia from the Turks in 1810. This original Black George was a person of some character. Aside from his patriotic exploits he murdered both his own father, to keep him from capture by the Turks, and his own brother, and he was himself assassinated. Through the nineteenth century the family wound through Serbian history like a crimson rope. Sometimes it was in power, sometimes out.

In 1903, when modern Jugoslav history began, the rulers of Serbia were King Alexander Obrenovitch, who belonged to a rival dynasty, and his Queen, a disreputable commoner named

[1] Among them were the first rabbi of Belgrade and the American and British ministers. The British minister, Sir Nevile Henderson, had powerful influence on him.

H1645-0387

H1645-0388

Draga. They were murdered by officers owing allegiance to the Karageorgeovitch group, temporarily in exile. The Karageorgeovitch who then ascended the throne, Peter I, was the late Alexander's father. He ruled till 1914, when Alexander became Regent. Peter was afflicted with the family temperament. A story, never proved and probably without foundation, says that he murdered his wife, Zorka of Montenegro. At any rate he was a violently unstable character. When his mind began to deteriorate, the clique of officers who really ruled Serbia removed him from the throne.

The Regent should have been, not Alexander, but the eldest son, George. But George, the Crown Prince, was unbalanced. He thrashed his servants in violent fits of rage, and following a series of exciting scandals, he was quietly certified as insane and removed to confinement in a fortress at Nisch.[1] There, in 1935, he still was.

Alexander, be it hastily said, inherited none of these Karageorgeovitch qualities. He was neither a murderer nor a madman. He was a King conscientious to the point of stuffiness, and, a complete patriot, he did what he thought was best for the country. A large section of the country, as we shall see below, wanted something different, and Alexander's abrasiveness did not make negotiations easy; but the monarch, even though his egoism may have been distorted by the family history, was incorruptibly sincere. The tragedy was that he drove the country to the verge of chaos, through his method of trying to unite it.

So much for Peter's family and Peter's father. It is not a wholesome heritage.

. . . . . .

Prince Paul, the first Regent, was a cousin of Alexander's, and his nearest competent adult relative. Therefore the King had to choose him, simply to preserve the dynasty, although it was well known that they were not close friends. Paul was educated at Oxford, the worst possible training ground for a man of action. His wife, Princess Olga, is the sister of the Duchess of Kent. He loves books, music, pictures, the life of a

[1] Gedye, *Op. cit.*, quotes an Italian journalist who describes how George practised with a revolver by shooting cigarettes out of the mouth of his unhappy valet.

country gentleman. He would like to die, when he must, in bed, a feat only one Karageorgeovitch ruler has accomplished (and that one, Peter I, was insane). He is, the Serbs say, 'too English', and indeed he is more at ease with foreigners than his own people.

Paul never had the faintest desire to be Regent. The panoply of royalty may induct him into appreciation of its glamour, but certainly he would prefer less glamour if he could get it with less responsibility. It is no joke, being the ruler of a country like Jugoslavia. Paul was unable to sleep during the first few months of his regency except with the aid of sedatives.

Paul has a pleasant personality, and people are not afraid of him, afraid to tell him the truth, as they were frightened of Alexander. Although at first he was quite approachable, now his appointments are carefully watched. One of the curses of Balkan politics has descended on him – army intrigue. When Paul takes a walk – for exercise – the affair is almost tragi-comedy. One motor-car filled with troops immediately precedes him through the wooded road, another immediately follows him; the route is lined with soldiers and Paul and his consort amble along, suffocated by petrol fumes, unable to admire a bird or tree without a sentry jumping. This is done by the army to keep him tractable.

Even so Paul has given signs of a fairly good administration. He fought the old Serbs when they tried to hush up the King's testament. His influence has been on the conciliatory side, and it was he who sensibly persuaded his first prime minister, Yevtitch, to release Matchek, the chief of the Croat opposition, from jail. Paul is not ambitious. His regency has seven more years to run. He will be glad when they are over.

The other two regents are Radekno Stankovitch, who was Alexander's personal physician, and Ivan Perovitch, former governor of Croatia. Neither Stankovitch or Perovitch are orthodox Serbs, and the appointments caused alarm in Belgrade. Apparently the King chose them for reasons which were Balkan-typical. They were personally honest men, a rare distinction, and neither colourful nor likely to become big popular heroes. Moreover, Stankovitch and Perovitch don't like each other; the King was aware of this and knew

H1645-0389

that they would quarrel and that, therefore, *one* of them would always be on Paul's side, thus giving Paul the majority in any decision.

Stankovitch, a good doctor, cured Alexander of a troublesome stomach ailment after half a dozen foreign specialists had failed. Stankovitch simply said: 'Your Majesty, nothing is wrong with you except nerves. There is no organic ailment. Forget it, and you will be well.' The King discovered himself cured through this simple process, and asked Stankovitch what he could do to reward him. Stankovitch replied with an Oriental parable. Once, he said, the Sultan of Turkey had greatly benefited from the advice of an obscure courtier; asked what reward he wanted, the courtier replied, 'Talk to me conspicuously at your next reception.' The Sultan did so. The court watched in envy and excitement. The courtier's name was soon on everyone's lips. This man, it seemed, was the King's favourite. So the Grand Vizier offered him a job. And then another job. And finally the inconspicuous courtier became Grand Vizier.

The story may be apocryphal, but it is a fact that Stankovitch, completely unknown politically, became minister of education after the King's recovery. Then his rise was rapid. And now he is a regent. He is generally unpopular. People say that he has never forgotten or forgiven any person who slighted him in the long years when he was obscure.

Perovitch, the third regent, has more quality. Louis Adamic writes of him respectfully, and I know no higher tribute for a politician in Jugoslavia. He is not a Croat, as usually reported, but a Dalmatian. His rule as governor of Croatia was better-minded than that of his predecessors, though pressure from Belgrade prevented him from being really moderate. He is, of course, an ardent anti-federalist, believing in the 'essential, natural homogeneity of the Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes'.

Psychology of Assassination

Another name should be mentioned at this point, the name of Vlada Georgiev, the King's assassin. By what mysterious sequence of causality did Alexander, the monarch, and Georgiev, the killer, meet at that precise moment on the

H1645-0390

cobbled streets of Marseilles? Almost everyone saw the remarkable film of the assassination. Its great quality of emotion came from the fact that the audience knew, from the time the King stepped off the boat, that he would be dead in ninety seconds. And the King did not know this.

Georgiev was a Macedonian terrorist. This means in Balkan terminology that he was a 'patriot' and an 'idealist'. He believed in a free Macedonia; the object of his group, in other words, was to wrest the Serb part of Macedonia from the Jugoslav Government and unite it with the Bulgarian segments of that forlorn, invisible province. A Macedonian movement to this end has existed for forty years. The eventual hope is the erection of an independent or autonomous Macedonia; failing this, which is a political impossibility, to unite Macedonia with Bulgaria.

The Macedonian organisation, the I.M.R.O., was led by a redoubtable chieftain, Ivan Mihailov. He was a sort of Robin Hood murderer, never attacking the virtuous, but only the Serbs. Mihailov and his men perfected a government within a government that had its own army and police, its own courier service, its own taxation and standards of law and justice. The arm of the organisation was long and relentless. A traitor never escaped. Mihailov's wife, for instance, followed an enemy all the way to the Burg Theatre in Vienna and there shot him. Georgiev was Mihailov's chauffeur.

The Macedonians split into factions, and Georgiev first distinguished himself by patriotic slaughter of members of the anti-Mihailov group. He killed two notable figures, the communist Hadzidimov, and the moderate Tomalevsky. Then, although the Bulgarian Government of the day protected the Macedonians, he was forced to flee. He devoted himself to two projects. These dominated his able and distorted intelligence. He became a fanatic, and the most dangerous kind of fanatic, one with a cold heart. One of his projects, on which he laboured for years, was to blow up the League of Nations building at Geneva. The other was to kill Alexander. Georgiev never got around to blowing up the League. . . .

. . . . . .

The year 1934 produced a veritable carnival of political

H1645-0391

assassinations: Dollfuss, Roehm, Schleicher, Duca, Alexander, Louis Barthou, the Polish minister of the interior Pieracki, and Serge Kirov, the second man in Soviet Russia. There was a precise common denominator to several of them, which were performed by fanatics with the purpose of overthrowing or weakening the régime in power and opening the way for a government more representative of the common people. Constantinescu, the murderer of Duca; Planetta, the Dollfuss killer; Georgiev, the assassin of Alexander, and the Ukrainian who killed Pieracki were all good democrats, though they called themselves Iron Guardists, Nazis, and the like.

What is the psychological basis of the desire to kill? In Vienna Dr. Wilhelm Stekel, discussing this problem, told me that most political murders are offshoots of a distorted father fixation. Cranks and anarchists, who seek out and kill statesmen to satisfy some mysterious personal grievance, are usually psychic invalids as a result of some unhappy experience in childhood; often – like the anarchist who killed the Empress Elizabeth of Austria-Hungary – they are illegitimate. The assassins are living out some infantile conflict. The assassinations they perform are supreme efforts at self-justification, to make up for the miseries of thwarted youth.

No one commits suicide, says Dr. Stekel in a famous essay, unless he has a tendency to kill some other person. Conversely, no one commits murder unless he has a tendency to suicide also. Most assassins are desperate enough to perform the act of murder because they are disappointed in life; they are candidates for suicide and thus do not mind risking their own lives to kill someone else. In fact, their tendency to murder may arise from a desire to make a spectacular exit from life; they say: 'I shall die, but before doing so I will take another with me.'

Behind most poltical assassinations, according to this theory, is a history of conspiracy. Secret terrorist groups always deal in the *attentat*. The psychological basis of conspiracy is dislike of being an average man; the conspirator and potential murderer is contemptuous of the organised majority; he takes fascinated delight in being the member of a repressed minority with a political grievance, real or imaginary. Most men are born with a sense of a great historical mission. All

H1645-0392

assassins are motivated by a compelling desire to become prominent.[1]

Very often the assassin kills a statesman as a father-image. He blames his father for his precarious and ill-nurtured position in life (almost all assassins are poor); the prominent person he slays is, psychically, his father, whom he holds responsible for his fate; the prominent person may be first admired as a father-substitute, then hated, finally killed. Or, Dr. Stekel proceeds, the assassin may *love* his father-substitute enough to kill him; the bipolar nature of love and hate is obvious. Brutus, for instance, may have killed Caesar because, his spiritual son, he wanted to be closest to Caesar's heart, and saw himself displaced by Mark Antony. He murdered Caesar not because he hated him but out of jealousy.

A psychic injury such as doubt of the facts of paternity or any one of the innumerable trauma that may occur in childhood are permanent in a neurotic personality. They form a suppressed nucleus of eternal discontent with life. In extreme cases, says Dr. Stekel, they may cause murder. 'The murdered king is in reality atoning for something in the hidden life of the assassin.' An *attentat* is a displacement of a small personal conflict into the life of nations; the assassin is transposing the source of his unhappiness into the horizon of world affairs. Perhaps Booth was beaten by a drunken father. So Lincoln died. Perhaps Princep had an unhappy childhood. So the World War came.

Jugoslavia – Hot on the Griddle

The Kingdom of Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes was, J. Hampton Jackson points out[2] the product of 'an unnatural union of motives'. President Wilson, applying the doctrine of self-determination, wished to liberate and unite the South Slav peoples, excluding Bulgaria. Clemenceau and his realistic associates wished to set up a buffer state which would serve two purposes: (1) remove a lot of territory from the old Austro-Hungary, and thus weaken the new Austria and the new Hungary, and (2) keep Italy off the Dalmatian coast, which,

[1] And note Mussolini's remark to Ludwig: 'Every anarchist is a dictator who missed fire.'

[2] In his admirable *The Post-War World*, p. 59.

H1645-0393

as we know, had been promised her by the secret treaty by which she was bribed to enter the War.

The word Jugoslavia ('Jugo' means 'south') may connote to many Englishmen a vague Balkan something-or-other of no particular beam or bulk. But in fact Jugoslavia is one of the most important and powerful countries in Europe; it stretches from the plains of Hungary almost to the Ægean, and from the gateway to Austria to the bottle-neck of the Adriatic. Its population is 13,500,000, and it covers an area as big as England; the people are mostly peasants or mountain folk, raw-boned, poor, hard-lipped, superb fighters, primitive.

Jugoslavia's chief domestic issue should have been to consolidate itself politically and sell its grain; like Rumania, it lives largely on the land. But almost from the beginning it was torn by domestic quarrels and split by internal fissures. The dominant political note ever since the War has been the angry quarrel between Serbs and Croats. Alexander's dictatorship was made necessary, fundamentally, by the absolute failure of Serb-Croat relations during the ten years 1919–1929 of the parliamentary régime.

The Serbs are Balkan folk centring in Belgrade, Greek Orthodox in religion, semi-Turkish in culture, and militant in spirit. The Croats, centring in Zagreb, lived for centuries in the orbit of Vienna, and represented a more European culture and tradition; they are Roman Catholic. The Serbs fought with us during the War, the Croats (against their will, it is true) with the Central Powers. The Croats number three million three hundred thousand people, almost twenty-five per cent of the realm. Allied to them have been their cousins to the north, the Slovenes. The Croats use the Latin alphabet, the Serbs the old Cyrillic script.

After the War the country was given a handsome new democratic constitution and the discordant parts of the kingdom were expected to live happily ever after. Of course they didn't. The ruling Serbs, led by Alexander, made some tactical mistakes; for instance so convinced was the King of the intractability of the Croats that for a period of ten years he never set foot in Zagreb, although it was the second capital of his realm; which is as if the King of England refused ever to go to Scotland. The Croats, convinced that they were being

H1645-0394

treated like second-class citizens, grew more and more intransigent; passion finally exploded in the massacre in the *Skuptchina* (parliament) when the Croat leader, Raditch, was killed.

The psychological core of the quarrel was probably resentment by the Serbs at their inferiority to Zagreb; therefore they punished Zagreb.[1] The Serbs had a subconscious hatred of 'European' civilisation, which had been personified to them by German and Austrian invaders. And the Croats, though Slav by race and language, were thoroughly Teutonised. They were richer than the Serbs, with most of the industry of the kingdom. No wonder the Serbs, who had stood the whole brunt of the War, and whose country had been terribly devastated, were jealous.

The Croats called the Serbs 'Mexicans' and 'bandits'. The Serbs called the Croats lazy trouble-makers. The Croats said they would prefer even the old monarchy to the tyranny of Alexander's dictatorship in Belgrade. The Serbs scoffingly quoted the old proverb that if there were only three Croats left alive, there would be four Croat political parties. The Croats martyrised Raditch, their murdered leader. The Serbs replied that the Croats had done everything for independence for a thousand years – except fight for it. And the Serbs dragooned the Croats into submission.

All of this, for which both sides were at fault, was a pity. What Jugoslavia needed was forty years of peace. It needed time to develop its mines and farms and magnificent natural resources. The country is sketched out; it needs to be built up. Take Belgrade, for instance. The majority of its shops, in the main streets, are still devoted to the sale of the most primitive necessities of life, the simplest kind of manufactured goods, like pins, buttons, cotton cloth. Belgrade is blessed as few cities are with natural beauty, lying high on the confluence of two great rivers, Danube and Save; but it is like a pretty peasant girl with the carriage of a queen and the raiment of a dirty beggar.

When Alexander died the Croats did not make the revolution that many people expected. Reasons: the dissidents were, as the Serbs charged, soft folk, not given to bloodshed

[1] cf. *Subconscious Europe*, by Fedor Vergin, p. 287.

H1645-0395

or revolution; they had no arms; Croat detachments of the army had been carefully scattered in remote parts of the kingdom; the Serb police, veritable myrmidons, were watchful; above all no help came from Italy. And in homage to Alexander a political truce began. It did not last long.

Revolution in The Balkans – Why Not?

The question is often asked why the miserable Danube and Balkan folk do not rise from their poverty and squalor and make a thorough-going social revolution. There are several reasons, aside from the obvious difficulty of proletarian revolt in a country ruled by police power.

1. The basic passion of most Balkan folk is nationalism. Their primitive and turbulent energies are directed to the preservation of their own political minority or country, rather than social revolution; nationalism is the pipe through which their energies are discharged.

2. Danubia is at least three-fifths agrarian, and the majority of peasants, though poor, own their own land. The industrial proletariat is scanty. A middle class has grown up only in the last two generations, and is still very new and shaky; in Jugoslavia, for instance, as in Hungary, there is scarcely any middle class at all. The extreme primitiveness of Balkan social structures makes revolutionary propaganda difficult.

3. Social democracy, long a considerable force, has produced in most of these countries a considerable paternalism; there is a proverb in Hungary, for instance, that the state takes care of you from birth till you are fifteen, and then from sixty until you die. As long as the people get assistance from the state, in however rudimentary a form, revolt is unlikely.

4. A White Terror of terrible ferocity followed the only two attempts to introduce communism to the Danube, those of Bela Kun in Hungary and Stambolisky in Bulgaria. To justify their mass murders, the Whites kept alive the legend of communist barbarity and secret strength. Having tasted blood, the Whites would not mind tasting more. Therefore any outcropping of communism is mercilessly crushed.

5. Hunger. Prolonged misery and distress, such as have afflicted the people of Danubia, are likely, it seems, to produce not revolt but apathy and inertia, and a torpor of almost

H1645-0396

pathological quality. People do not make revolutions when hungry – at first – simply because hunger makes them weak.

Black Hand and White

General Peter Zivkovitch was a young man in 1903, a junior lieutenant in the royal guard. Mark that date. 1903 was the year in which, as mentioned above, King Alexander Obrenovitch and his wife Draga were murdered by officers who subsequently put Peter Karageorgeovitch on the throne. The officer whose special job it was to force open the palace gates was ever after nicknamed by his intimates 'Peter the Door'. His name was, and is, Peter Zivkovitch.

Zivkovitch has been a vitally important factor in Jugoslav military life ever since. For a long time he received only normal promotions, but his influence behind the scenes, as a survivor of the original murder gang, was great. In 1921, King Alexander Karageorgeovitch appointed him commander of the palace guard, a sort of army within an army, eighteen thousand strong, which garrisons Belgrade. It seemed strange to some that a witness to the murder of one king should be charged with the security of another. In 1929, when the King abolished democracy, he appointed Zivkovitch prime minister, which job the general held till 1932.

Zivkovitch's father was a blacksmith. He comes, like almost all Jugoslavs, of peasant stock. He had little schooling, and even to-day, except for a thin smatter of French, he knows no language except Serb. He has never travelled outside Jugoslavia. He lives simply and frugally, unmarried, in a small house with his mother.

After the 1903 murder the leading conspirator-officers formed the nucleus of a secret society, the Black Hand, officially called *Ujedinjenje ili Smrt*, which means Society of Union or Death. Its adventures in patriotic murder and terrorism caused, among other things, the Great War, since Princip, the Sarajevo assassin, was schooled by Black Hand men. In Sarajevo to-day there is, incidentally, a public monument to Princip, who is a national hero to the Serbs, even though he indirectly cost the loss of twenty million lives.

Zivkovitch was a prominent Black Hander for sound political reasons. The Black Hand stood for greater Serbia; it

H1645-0397

H1645-0398

sought to keep Serb chauvinism, no cool thing anyway, at fever heat; it was the military clique behind the throne. The Black Hand society was truly secret. Members knew each other only by number, and no one was sure who was not a member. The leader was a general staff officer of marvellous ruthlessness and fervour, Colonel Dragutin Dimitrijevitch. Had not Dimitrijevitch founded the Black Hand, it is quite possible that the World War would have come – in a different way.

The Black Hand was broken up during the War. This was because some of the members were believed to have turned republican. They did not trust the young Alexander. Zivkovitch, however, gambled on Alexander, and formed, so far as is known, a sort of counter-movement to the Black Hand, called – without startling originality – the White Hand. The White Hand men were those who depended for their careers on the young King.

Dimitrijevitch and the out-and-out Black Handers were eliminated by a conspiracy in which Zivkovitch, possibly with the knowledge of Alexander, played at least the role of winner. In 1917 Serbia seemed doomed. Wanting as good terms as possible, the Serbs destroyed the archives linking the Black Hand with the Sarajevo murder. It remained to put Dimitrijevitch out of the way, and direct witness to the preparations of the assassination of Franz Ferdinand would be silenced. With four fellows Dimitrijevitch was tried at Salonika, charged with an attempt on Alexander's life. The evidence was flimsy, but after a sensational trial the Black Handers were convicted, and Dimitrijevitch was put to death.

This cleared the field for Zivkovitch. The White Hand took over from the Black.

He forgot all about political terrorism and conspiracy, and devoted himself to the interests of Alexander.

And as permanent boss of the army and minister of war, he is the most important man in Jugoslavia.

Croat Crusader

The opposition leader most worth noting is Vladimir Matchek. His resemblances to Maniu in Rumania are very strong: an idealist, stubborn, Roman Catholic, a lover of the

peasants, incorruptibly honest, narrow, old-fashioned in his belief in the natural goodness of people and that right will prevail in politics, because it is right. He is a lawyer by profession. He did not, like so many leaders in the Balkans, go into politics because politics was the only way for the educated to earn a living. As with most Croats, oppositionism, particularism, is ingrained in his character.

Matchek in Croatia, like Maniu in Transylvania, is revered by his suppressed people like a messiah. He has suffered imprisonment on trumped-up charges; his best friends have been murdered by police spies; his lieutenants beaten and tortured in a manner unknown in modern Europe till Hitler took power in Germany. He is a messiah; but a messiah without much prospect of power. He is defeated by the central illogicality of his position; he does not want complete separatism for Croatia, and indeed separatism is a political impossibility; therefore, since he won't go the whole way, his opposition is permanent – and sterile.

Foreign Affairs – and Affaires

The position that will be taken by Jugoslavia in the next war is of the greatest possible importance. The army is the sixth largest in Europe, numbering one hundred and eighty-four thousand men with, according to H. R. Knickerbocker, one million two hundred thousand trained reserves; it is competently advised by the French general staff and armed by French and Czechoslovak munition companies, particularly the Skoda works at Pilsen; moreover, the fighting quality of the men is superb. The Jugoslav army is probably, man for man, the most formidable in Europe.

The chief enemies of Jugoslavia, the third country in the Little Entente, are Hungary and Italy. If Otto Habsburg should return to Austria or Hungary, Jugoslavia would bear the brunt of the armed action to get him out, because Czechoslovakia, pressed from the north by Germany and Poland, is too vulnerable. As long as Italy is occupied by the war in Abyssinia, Jugoslav hands in Central Europe are fairly free. Jugoslavia took part in sanctions against Mussolini even though Italy is her best customer: which goes to show that bad blood counts more in the Balkans than an export surplus.

H1645-0399

H1645-0400

For a long time Italy had aggressive intentions towards Jugoslavia. Mussolini coveted Jugoslav territory because the seizure of Dalmatia would make the Adriatic an Italian lake. Italian interests encouraged and probably subsidised the less respectable elements of Croat, Slovene, and Macedonian opposition to the Belgrade Government. Italy made alliances with Austria and Hungary and sought to make one with Bulgaria, thus encircling Jugoslavia. But lately Mussolini, with all his energies occupied in Abyssinia, has let Jugoslavia alone. Italy and France, both fearing Germany, worked amicably together, and this tended to relieve Italo-Jugoslav tension. In March 1935 the new Italian minister to Jugoslavia outdid himself in conciliatory messages from his government. (In contrast, think of 1927, when a Jugoslav minister to Rome had to wait seven months before being received by Mussolini.) Meantime Jugoslav relations with Bulgaria have been improving, because a new Bulgarian Government made a genuine attempt to suppress the Macedonian movement, the chief source of Bulgar-Jugoslav friction.

Jugoslavia, though a French ally, has strong pro-German feelings. Reasons: (1) Germany is the best potential customer for Jugoslav – like Rumanian – grain; (2) Good armies tend, in times of peace, to admire each other, and Zivkovitch deeply respects the Reichswehr; (3) French loans, for many years the prop of Jugoslav finance, don't flow as freely as heretofore; (4) German aims in Austria are antipathetical to a Habsburg restoration, which is Jugoslavia's chief foreign bugaboo; (5) above all, German acquisition of Austria would be a terrible blow to Italy. It would put the mighty Reichswehr instead of the weak Austrian battalions on the Brenner Pass and this would solve Jugoslavia's most pressing military problem. 'Make friends with the enemy of your enemy,' is a cardinal principle of Balkan politics. Despite the recent nibblings towards cordiality, Jugoslavia's 'permanent' enemy is Italy.

The Germans, realising this, have courted Jugoslavia hotly. Early in 1934 I met an amiable servant of the Wilhelmstrasse in a Belgrade *wagon-lit*, who made no bones about the fact that his job was passing out money to German language newspapers in the Balkans. General Goering swooped into Jugoslavia for several visits, and pleased the boy King with a

tremendous toy railway train as a birthday gift. Dr. Stoyadinovitch, the Jugoslav premier, was invited to one of the Goering-Goemboes-Polish hunting parties, but French advisers prevailed upon him not to go.

Jugoslavia is more or less in the position of a hitherto faithful husband, and a powerful young fellow too, happily married to La Belle France – who now looks northward to the big blonde German maiden, wondering if divorce and remarriage might not be a good idea if his wife persists in flirting with that dark, unscrupulous, Italian adventurer in international amour. Unfortunately, you can't be married to two women at the same time.

H1645-0401

H1645-0402

CHAPTER XXVIII

BALKAN KINGS

'Must every little language have a country all its own?'
– JEROME FRANK.

Zog of Albania

THIS picturesque sub-monarch, ruler of the smallest country in Europe, is forty and has been King of Albania since September 1928.

'Zog' is the indefinite, Zogu the definite form of his name, which in Albanian, a chaotically difficult language of Illyrian origin, means BIRD. Zog is often called 'The Bird' or 'The Big Bird'. He is a Moslem by religion, and he was born of distinguished parents, his father having been hereditary chieftain of the powerful Mati tribe, in upper Albania. He was educated in Constantinople and speaks Turkish and a little dilapidated German as well as Albanian. In Zog's homeland, remote and barbarous, law is informally administered by what is known as the blood feud. If you kill a man, his relatives kill you, and so on for a couple of generations. There are supposed to be about six hundred blood feuds out against King Zog.

He was destined to a political life. His uncle was Essad Pasha, who created Albanian independence. Zog returned to Albania after his Turkish education in 1912 and took part in the guerilla fighting of the Balkan wars. Many pleasant legends grew up about him: they tell you in Albania how at first he was so inexperienced that he could not properly tie the straps of his *opanji*, native shoes; that once he killed seven horses riding to his men; that he took over command of the district by blunt force of character and courage; that he led a sortie into Montenegro and cut his way in and out of two whole armies; and so on. There are always such stories about Balkan princelings. Not impossibly these are true.

Zog fell in love with a girl named Miriana Zougdidi, accord-

ing to one of these legends. Her father refused permission for the match. Zog swore that he would become King of Albania to prove his worth. The father, still obdurate, chased a gang of Zog's kidnappers who abducted the girl, and killed her with his own dagger to keep her from falling into Zog's hands. He then sent the girl's body to Zog as a sort of wedding present. Zog swore eternal vengeance, and never to marry. He exterminated the father and his whole family – and never married. Also, be it noted, he did become King of Albania.

The bloodshed among Albanian politicians in this period, immediately after the War, was immense. Essad Pasha, Zog's uncle, was assassinated in Paris by a compatriot, Aveni Roustemi. This Roustemi was himself later assassinated in Tirana, Albania's village capital. Tzena Bey, Zog's brother-in-law, was killed in Prague by a student, Alcibiades Bedi. Bedi was shot and killed in the court-room where he stood trial by colleagues who thought he might inform on them. There have been two attempts on Zog's life, but he escaped each time.

The way to play politics in Albania is to make a revolution. Zog has made several. He was minister of interior in an Albanian government that was forced out of office and into exile by a *Putsch* engineered by a radical priest, Monsignor Fan Noli. Zog lived in Belgrade, Jugoslavia, for a year, and then made another revolution whereby he ousted Fan Noli and became president of Albania. This was in 1925. Three years later Zog promoted himself, with Italian help, to be King.

Zog had done very well out of kingship financially. His acknowledged civil list for the year 1934–35 is the following:

Compensation to H.M. the King	300,000	gold	francs
Rent allowance	20,000	„	„
Compensation to H.M. the Queen Mother	88,000	„	„
Salary to Master of Ceremonies	4,752	„	„
Salaries, royal household	14,900	„	„
Travelling expenses	2,000	„	„
Office supplies, etc.	2,500	„	„
Salaries of the Inspectorate	22,282	„	„
Travelling expenses and supplies	9,000	„	„
	463,434	gold	francs.

which is 2.63 per cent of the total revenue of his realm.

H1645-0403

This civil list represents only a part of the King's gross income, because revenue from his investments abroad is considerable. His capital, according to conservative informants in Albania, is roughly 20,000,000 gold francs. Most of it is on deposit in banks in France and Switzerland. The King built up this tidy fortune largely, it is believed, through gifts from Italy.

The cardinal fact of the Albanian situation is this: Zog started out as Jugoslavia's man, and then sold out to Mussolini.

Both Jugoslavia and Italy are interested in Albania, because it lies at the bottleneck of the Adriatic. When Zog was a refugee in Belgrade the Jugoslavs decided to support him, because they disliked Fan Noli. From Jugoslavia Zog not only got moral and political assistance, but actually troops. Imagine, then the horror and anger of Belgrade when, having put Zog back into power, it saw him immediately turn his country over to the Italians. Zog's excuse is that he had to have money to build up the country and strengthen his position, and that Jugoslavia could give him none. So he became an Italian puppet.

Very promptly the Italians implemented their advantage. First came a series of loans whereby an Italian company, the Society for the Economic Development of Albania, received exclusive rights to build roads, dredge harbours, and undertake other public works. An oil concession was given Italy. Italian officers reorganised the Albanian army. In November 1926 Mussolini and Zog signed the first Treaty of Tirana, which virtually made Albania an Italian protectorate. A year later – just in time to stave off a revengeful Jugoslav *Putsch* – this treaty was strengthened by an outright military alliance.

Italy has poured millions of lire into Albania. The country became, in fact, a sort of bottomless marsh swallowing Italian gold. The pace of this financial debauch had to be retarded when the world economic crisis hit Italy, but even in 1931 Italy agreed to lend Albania 10,000,000 gold francs (£400,000 gold) per year for ten years, free of interest, 'in order to make the financial position of Albania sound and to facilitate development of its national economy'. In 1934 there came still another loan, in 1935 another.

Lately, however, developments in Albania have tended to

H1645-0404

discourage Italian enterprise. The Italians have threatened to cut off the stream of gold. This is because Zog, a flirtatious fellow, has begun to be friendly again with Jugoslavia. Italians – the doctors, soldiers, engineers, topographers, road builders – became increasingly unpopular in Albania. Zog quarrelled with his Italian advisers. Meantime, Mussolini had become interested in bigger game – Abyssinia.

The present situation is that relations between Albania and Italy are severely strained. Italy keeps on paying just enough to keep Albania in line, not a penny more. It cannot refuse to pay anything, or Zog will jump into Jugoslavia's waiting arms. And it cannot foreclose the mortgage, viz., demand repayment of the 'loans', because Italian occupation of Albania, the only weapon of foreclosure, might cause war with Jugoslavia. Meanwhile, Italy's dominating position rests on Zog. If Zog goes, Italy goes. Therefore, even coming to detest him, Italy must keep him in.[1]

Zog is not at all an unpleasant character, despite his tendency to flirt. If he betrayed Jugoslavia and eventually betrays Italy, he may suffer for it, but his motives were good, viz., thoroughly consistent with Balkan nationalist ideals. By playing Italy and Jugoslavia against one another, he was ensuring the one thing that mattered to him – his country's independence. A patriot, he stands for free Albania. Alexander the Great, the Albanians say, was the first Albanian. Their nationalism does not whisper because their country is small.

Boris of Bulgaria

Boris III of Bulgaria, gentle and retiring, now forty-one, is a doubter, not a man of action. Groping, honest, theoretical rather than realistic, he likes to believe the best of people. His personal charm is considerable. He is extremely obliging. The little story is told in Sofia that he was found in the palace gardens one morning, engaged in netting butterflies – because he was receiving an entomologist for lunch that day.

He and his queen, the Italian princess Giovanna of Savoy, lead a quiet life. During the first year of their marriage

[1] Albania, with Austria and Hungary, was one of the three countries in Europe to oppose sanctions against Italy in October, 1935.

H1645-0405

October 1930, they went out not at all, because Boris wanted his bride to feel at home in Bulgaria and learn a little Bulgarian before exposing herself to the rigours of Sofia society. Even now they seldom entertain or go to diplomatic functions, first because the frugality of Bulgarian character tends to discourage such displays, second because the King – incredible as this may seem – feels that he might not be able to repay the hospitality in kind. He is not so indigent that he cannot afford a few dozen cases of champagne, but the country is so threadbare-poor that he thinks any ostentatious display of luxury to be bad taste.

Boris knows an astounding number of his subjects by name and face, literally thousands, from peasant farmers in the valley of roses near Plovdiv to civil servants in government ministries. He is fond of mechanics, and his only hobby is locomotive driving. Once he jumped into the sea off Varna and rescued a villager from drowning. Frequently he himself pushes the perambulator containing his baby daughter through the modest palace gardens. After his marriage, the story goes, he would meet old friends on the streets and introduce the Queen by saying simply, 'Meet my wife.'

Boris is the worst-dressed king in Europe. He insists on wearing Sofia-made clothes. And Sofia is not exactly Savile Row. He drinks little alcohol. He knows five European languages, and in bed each morning he reads newspapers in them all: French, German, Bulgarian, Italian, English. His study is lined with photographs of his multitudinous cousins, uncles, aunts, and other relatives scattered through the reigning houses of Europe. All his instincts, his associations, are with the past.

Boris gets about £12,000 per year. This is not much for a king, but the Bulgarian Government pays most of his expenses. He has little of Zog's interest in money and nothing of the financial capacity of the late Alexander of Jugoslavia. Queen Giovanna received a dowry of 25,000,000 lire from her father, the King of Italy, on the occasion of her marriage, and the income from it should make her about as rich as Boris. In addition she gets an allowance of 950,000 leva, about £2,200, a year from the Bulgarian state. Boris should become very rich when his father, ex-King Ferdinand, 'the Old Fox', dies.

H1645-0406

King Carol of Rumania got the fright of his life when he and Boris met at the Danube town of Roustchuk in 1934. Boris greeted him, persuaded him to descend from his car, and walked with him arm in arm down the streets. Carol would never have dreamed of so exposing himself in any Rumanian town. He was alarmed at first by his unwonted proximity to the common herd, then impressed at the friendly way the crowd greeted Boris. Exactly the same thing happened when the late King Alexander of Jugoslavia visited the Bulgarian monarch. Boris drove him to Plovdiv to see the roses; they went alone, without even informing the Mayor of Plovdiv that they were coming. There were plenty of Macedonians in the crowd, and Alexander didn't like it at all, but Boris insisted on walking with him through the streets. The fact that he was in Boris's company kept him safe.

. . . . . .

In Bulgaria when villagers go on a journey they often carry their shoes in their hands to save wear and tear on the leather. Thus one knows that Bulgaria is a frugal country. Among the six million inhabitants of Bulgaria, fewer than six thousand have been divorced; thus one knows its folk are morally conventional. The Bulgars, poor, clean, intensely honest, are the best people in the Balkans.

Look at some Bulgarian salaries. A cabinet minister gets £40 per month, a tremendous sum for the country. The Rector of Sofia University gets £17, and an ordinary professor £16. Judges range from £6 to £10 a month; generals get £15, policemen £2 15s., archbishops £20, high school teachers £7, a locomotive driver £3. And there is no baksheesh – bribery – in Bulgaria.

To Bulgaria, during the worst of the economic crisis in the early thirties, went the distressing honour of owning the most tragically extreme statistics in Europe. For instance, the weight of Bulgarian exports, in 1930, increased by eighty per cent over the previous year – but their value decreased by three per cent. In 1931, again, the volume of exports went up by forty per cent – and the value fell again – by four per cent.

The depression, by emphasising economic discontent, aggravated political unrest. Boris is a pleasant man, but he is in

H1645-0407

H1645-0408

a dangerous predicament. His timidity, his lack of decision, got him into a pretty mess, and for one extensive period during 1934, he did not dare to leave his palace. The people may have liked him – but certain powerful officers in the army didn't. Three men who are real forces in the political life of Bulgaria, Professor Tzankov, Colonel Kimon Gheorgiev, and Colonel Damien Veltchev, are his potential enemies.

Tzankov is the reactionary who crushed the peasant government of Stambolisky in 1923. He was prime minister then till 1926. During the first part of his rule a White Terror, for which he was partly responsible, ruled the land. Tzankov has built up a powerful Fascist movement, and is bidding for power again.

Gheorgiev is the blunt, one-eyed colonel of reserve who performed the *coup d'état* of May 19, 1934, when the King was forced to abolish parliament and consent to the establishment of a dictatorial régime. The Gheorgiev government performed useful service, however, in bettering Bulgaria's relations with Jugoslavia. This it did by outlawing one faction of the Macedonian movement and expelling Ivan Mihailov, the chief of the Macedonians, from the country.

Gheorgiev was forced from office on January 22, 1935, when officers of the Military League, royalist in sympathy, accused him of republicanism and a plot to dethrone the King. The government that succeeded Gheorgiev was the King's government, made by his authority; this was dangerous, because Boris could be accused of taking an active partisan role in politics.

The third man of real importance is an overt republican, Colonel Damien Veltchev. He was the man behind Gheorgiev, who did little but take his orders. Veltchev was for many years the commandant of the cadet school in Sofia, and thus most of the younger officers of the army are 'his' men. He is a typical Balkan adventurer: able, unscrupulous, a fanatic nationalist. Veltchev, whose insurrectionary activity goes back a long way, organised the 1923 *Putsch* which murdered Stambolisky and put Tzankov into power.

Both Gheorgiev and Veltchev were arrested and interned late in 1935.

. . . . . .

Bulgaria, a loser in the War – the unfortunate little country always picks the wrong side in wars – was mercilessly chopped asunder, like Hungary, by the peace treaties. Rumania got the Dobrudja; Turkey got Thrace; Greece got part of Thrace and part of Macedonia; Jugoslavia got the rest of Macedonia.

The Bulgarians, decent folk, and too small and too far away to create much international noise, have not been as umbrageous as the Hungarians in demanding their territory back. But the country is officially one of the 'revisionist' powers, and, as such, has tended to associate itself with Italy and Germany.

Early in 1934 the countries surrounding Bulgaria decided to check this tendency, and so formed the Balkan Entente. The participants were Rumania, Jugoslavia, Greece, Turkey; and the diplomat who did most of the negotiating was the Rumanian foreign minister, Titulescu. Just as Hungary is encircled by the Little Entente, Bulgaria is encircled by the Balkan Entente.

It is hard luck for small and sinned-against Bulgaria; the only way out seems to be individual *rapprochement* with Jugoslavia.

. . . . . .

Can a king be a dictator? Alexander of Jugoslavia is the only one who tried it: and look what happened. Indeed, with Boris in mind, it seems a safe generalisation that royalty and dictatorship do not lie well together. There are many reasons. This is an age of *bourgeois* or proletarian adventurers, Hitlers and Mussolinis, the age of the strong man with a fist. Kings have not enough freedom of education to be good dictators. They are inveterately international, and thus cut across the deep exclusive nationality of men like Pilsudski or Kamal Ataturk. They have no real contact with the common man. And modern science, modern economics, have destroyed the will of the masses to believe in kings as kings.

Greece

In November 1935 George, King of the Hellenes, regained the throne of Greece. This amiable young man, long an exile in Brown's Hotel, Dover Street, London, had reigned for a brief period in 1922, in succession to his father Constantine.

H1645-0409

Greek politics for twenty years has been an angry quarrel between royalists and republicans. Venizelos, the great republican leader, an old and tired man, was forced to flee the country when a republican rising was crushed in March 1935. Subsequently a royalist general, Kondylis, long a bad actor in Greek politics, prepared the way for a monarchial *coup d'état*.

George, a cautious fellow, who well remembers the chequered history of his family on the throne – his father for instance had to flee the country twice – was not too eager to return. Very different from his ex-brother-in-law Carol (George and his Rumanian wife Elizabeth have been divorced), he did not itch to regain the crown, for the simple reason that he doesn't want subsequently to be pushed out again. George told his adherents that he would not return until an honest – well, fairly honest – plebiscite demanded him.

Greece lies outside the *grande ligne* of European politics, despite the Balkan Entente. Roughly speaking, the royalists are pro-ally and pro-status quo; the republicans, like Venizelos, are revisionist and pro-Italian. Venizelos bitterly opposed the Balkan Entente. Because George might be supposed to be anti-Mussolini, the British foreign office looked with cautious favour on his return, provided it could be managed without a civil war. George is, of course, a cousin of Princess Marina, the wife of the Duke of Kent, and is thus associated with the House of Windsor. Britain would find Greek naval bases convenient in the event of war with Italy. For some time there was talk that the Duke of Kent, instead of George, might become Greek king.

George's restoration was popular among the other royalties of the region. There is a fourth internationale in the world, as my friend Fodor has pointed out. Kings like more kings.

H1645-0410

H1645-0411

CHAPTER XXIX

THE TURKISH COLOSSUS

THE blond, blue-eyed combination of patriot and psychopath who is dictator of Turkey has changed his name seven times. First he was simply MUSTAFA, so called by his parents in Salonika. At school he was given the name MUSTAFA KEMAL to distinguish him from other little Mustafas, and because a teacher admired his skill in mathematics; 'Kemal' in Turkish means 'perfection'. After the Dardanelles campaign, he became MUSTAFA KEMAL PASHA, 'pasha' being a military title equivalent to general. After he crushed the Greeks in 1921 he assumed the name GHAZI MUSTAFA KEMAL PASHA; 'ghazi' means 'destroyer of infidels', an odd sobriquet for Kemal, inasmuch as he was the greatest infidel in Turkish history. Ten years later he became GHAZI MUSTAFA KEMAL when he abolished military titles. In 1934 he ordered every Turk to assume a patronymic in the western fashion and chose for himself 'Ataturk', which means 'Father of Turks'. So he was simply KEMAL ATATURK. Finally he modified this to the Turkish form of the Arabic, to become KAMAL ATATURK.

His own is by no means the only name he changed. When I went to Constantinople recently after an absence of several years I was astounded at the metamorphosis in names placarded on the streets. Kamal westernised the Turkish alphabet – quite completely! Modern Turkish is strictly a phonetic tongue. These were some of the compulsory renderings of names which greeted me:

Kahve	*instead of*	Coffee
Tabldot	,,	Table d'Hôte
Amerikan Ekspres Ko, Ink.	,,	American Express Co. Inc.
Jorj	,,	George
Moris Sovaliye	,,	Maurice Chevalier
La Jones	,,	La Jeunesse (a shop)
Dizl Enjn	,,	Diesel Engine

H1645-0412

Star Su Sop	*instead of*	Star Shoe Shop
Vagonli-Kook	,,	Wagon-Lit-Cook
Enstitu do Boté	,,	Institute de Beauté
Or Duvr	,,	Hors-d'Œuvres
Foks Film Korporeysen	,,	Fox Film Corporation
Waytaus	,,	White House (a shop)
Lozan Palas Otel	,,	Lausanne Palace Hotel

Kamal Ataturk, who strides the Turkish landscape like a colossus – significantly a bronze statue of him in a dinner-jacket (with the trousers cuffed) commands the Golden Horn – is in the position of a man with no more worlds to conquer. His reforms have been so drastic and so comprehensive that in cultural and social fields at least there is very little left to do. He has abolished the fez, turned the mosques into granaries, Latinised the language. He has ended polygamy, installed new legal codes, and experimented with a (paying) casino in the sultan's palace. He compulsorily disinfected all the buildings in Istanbul, adopted the Gregorian calendar and metric system, and took the first census in Turkish history. He cut political holidays down to three, demanded physical examination of those about to marry, and built a new capital, Ankara, in the Anatolian highlands, replacing proud Constantinople. He limited most business activity to Turkish nationals and Turkish firms, abolished books of magic, and gave every Turk a new last name. He emancipated the women (more or less), tossed the priests into the discard, and superintended the writing of a new history of the world proving that Turkey is the source of all civilisation.

Kamal Ataturk, a somewhat Bacchic character, the full record of whose personal life makes you blink, is the dictator-type carried to its ultimate extreme, the embodiment of totalitarian rule by character. This man, in personality and accomplishments, resembles no one so much as Peter the Great, who also westernised his country at frightful cost. Kamal Ataturk is the roughneck of dictators. Beside him, Hitler is a milksop, Mussolini a perfumed dandy, and Goemboes a creature of the drawing-room. At one of his own receptions Kamal, slightly exhilarated, publicly slapped the Egyptian minister, when he observed the hapless diplomat wearing the forbidden fez.

No man has ever betrayed more masters, and always from motives of his own view of patriotism. In 1918, a staff officer, he was chosen to accompany Vahydu'd-Din, the Crown Prince, to Berlin, and there assist him in consultations with Hindenburg, Ludendorff, and the German high command. Three years later Kamal booted him, as Sultan Mehmed VI, out of Turkey.

After the armistice Kamal was sent by the authorities as inspector-general of the eastern vilayets to investigate a nationalist insurrection in Kurdistan. He was ordered to find and quell these rebels. He found them all right. But instead of crushing the movement he took charge of it! Within two years he brought victory in all of Turkey to the very organisation his superiors had sent him to suppress.

In 1926, following a not very professional attempt on his life, he hanged the entire leadership of the opposition. Among those he allowed to be sentenced to death and executed were Colonel Arif, who had been his comrade-at-arms in the Greek campaign, and Djavid Bey, the best financial mind in Turkey. Kamal had a champagne party in his lonely farm-house at Chankaya, near Ankara, to celebrate the occasion, and invited all the diplomats. Returning home at dawn, they saw the corpses hanging in the town square.

(In 1930 Kamal decided that totalitarian rule to the extremity which he carried it was a bore, and, uniquely among dictators, he proceeded to *create* an opposition, naming various men to be its leaders. Somewhat timidly, they accepted. Kamal wanted to see if western democratic methods would work; he wanted an opposition bench to argue with in parliament. The system didn't work. The Turks, with the memory of 1926 in mind, didn't quite seem to understand. . . .)

His psychological history is of surpassing interest. Two things have dominated the secret springs of his life, his mother and illness. For his mother he had a typical love-hate obsession. During the early years he was continually fetching her to live with him, then flinging off alone again. Finally he brought her to the Chankaya farm-house and she died there. She was the only woman he was ever faithful to. It is possible that his merciless campaign against the Greeks was subconsciously motivated by his mother's experiences in a refugee

H1645-0413

camp in Salonika during the Balkan wars. Kamal rushed across the Aegean (he had been fighting in Tripoli against the Italians) to see her, and found her a prisoner of the Greeks in indescribable circumstances of suffering.

In 1917 Kamal took time off from the War to visit Carlsbad for a cure. A famous Viennese professor, Dr. Zuckerkandl, looked him over and told him that if he did not stop drinking he would die in a year. The illness was troublesome. Kamal returned to the Front (he had just been the most important Turkish officer in beating back the British at the Dardanelles) for service in Syria and to his well-known habits. His health remained, and has remained, about the same. The dear old Viennese professor, however, died two years after prophesying Kamal's collapse and demise.

A favourite theory is that Kamal's extraordinary bursts of reformist energy are due to chronic pain. The familiar and excruciating twinges return, and lo! the dictator abolishes the Turkish alphabet or decrees the formation of a dozen new investigating commissions; if true, this is an interesting example of what the psychiatrists call 'displacement'. Kamal punishes someone else for his own early sins, purifies a nation as a surrogate for purification of his own painful blood.

Kamal was born in 1881, the son (like Hitler) of a minor customs official. The father, Ali Risa, was nothing more than a petty and narrow bureaucrat, but the mother, named Zubeida, was, like the mothers of Pilsudski, Mussolini, and Masaryk, a woman far above the normal of her station. She wanted her son to get an education and become a priest – exactly like Stalin's mother who sent the future dictator of all the Russias to theological school in Tiflis. It is clear to the point of triteness that most of the great men of the world had remarkable mothers, and that the development of their son's Oedipus complex was of paramount importance in their characters and careers. Kamal's mother, not an unimportant point, married again after her first husband's death, and young Mustafa bitterly hated his stepfather, an interloper in the home.

Ali Risa, Kamal's father, was apparently of Albanian origin. Zubeida, the mother, was the daughter of a Turkish peasant whose wife was Macedonian. Kamal is thus far from being

H1645-0414

purely Turkish. As great an authority as Toynbee (*Great Contemporaries*, p. 291) suggests that Jewish blood may have been in the family. Salonika has, of course, been a citadel of Jews since the Diaspora; many, called 'Dönme', were converts to Islam. But Kamal's irrefragable blondness and his cold blue eyes would seem to preclude more than a hint of Jewish – or for that matter Turkish – ancestry.

Kamal's early life was that of a rebel and above all of a hater. He wrote revolutionary pamphlets and even poems. He was sentenced to jail in Constantinople but his skill as an officer made him valuable, and he was released. Although a 'Young Turk', his position was that of a suppressed oppositionist; he detested the Young Turk triumvirs, Talaat, Enver, and Djemal, a feeling which they reciprocated. But his reputation as a soldier was invincible, after service on the most remote, dangerous and hopeless fronts, and the way to his career was open.

That career is without parallel in modern times. Kamal engineered the congresses of Erzerum and Sivas and organised the nationalist movement, leading it to victory. Other people have created nations. Kamal's job was harder. He took a nation that was centuries deep in rot, pulled it to its feet, wiped its face, reclothed it, transformed it, made it work. In 1919 Turkey was so crushed and broken that it would have welcomed renunciation of sovereignty and a British mandate. In 1922 Turkey was the one enemy state so strong that it practically dictated its own peace terms.

In those three years Kamal (1) drove out the Sultan, (2) abolished the caliphate, (3) fought and won the war against the Greeks and drove them into the sea, (4) bluffed Great Britain to a standstill at Chanak, (5) negotiated, through Ismet Pasha, the Treaty of Lausanne, which ended the régime of capitulations (foreign judicial rights) in Turkey and established the new frontiers on a basis that the wildest Turkish nationalist could not have dreamed possible, (6) wrote a republican constitution and created a parliament in his new impregnable capital, (7) became Turkey's first – and only – president.

Kamal alone, it may be said, does not deserve credit for all this. The general programme of westernisation was planned by the Young Turks and he simply appropriated it. The

H1645-0415

Greeks were destroyed by the defection of the allies, also by their own incapacity, not by Kamal's armies. Sultan and caliph were doomed in any case, and it is no tribute to Kamal that he ejected them. The Treaty of Lausanne was won not by Ismet Pasha but because of jealous squabbles between the western powers. And so on.

Kamal lives nowadays in Chankaya, a complete recluse. His model farm is his avocation; a true megalomaniac, he designed the water reservoir in the shape of the Sea of Marmora! He married a woman named Latifé Hanum in 1923, but divorced her a few years later; now he lives alone. He is the most inaccessible public character in Europe. King George V himself would not be more difficult to interview. Unlike all other dictators, he keeps from the foreground; the Turkish papers do not mention his name half a dozen times a month. He has a group of soldier underlings and cronies with whom he plays poker. Rarely, he gambles at cards with foreign diplomats; he usually wins, then insists on returning his winnings. He still likes to drink.

The Turkish dictator differs from almost all others in that he had no socialist period in youth and even in maturity betrays not the faintest interest in socio-economic stresses. His only policy was Turkey for the Turks. He is certainly a revolutionary, but as far as economics is concerned he might be President of Switzerland. The theory that all nationalist dictators must bear to extreme Right or extreme Left breaks down on Kamal Ataturk, as it did on Pilsudski.

The two foreign powers that Kamal is most interested in are (except for Great Britain, which he hates), the U.S.S.R. and Italy. In the bleak year 1932 he set a new peak in picturesque achievement by procuring loans from both these countries, which are states not given to the export of credit in the best of years. Kamal plays them, of course, against each other. Italy wants Turkish support in the eastern Mediterranean, and Turkey is bound always to be an important factor in Soviet foreign policy because the Dardanelles comprise Russia's only outlet to warm seas. Kamal disliked the Abyssinian adventure. Therefore his policy took on a stronger Russian tinge. For some years the Soviet Union and Turkey were close allies at Geneva, and Dr. Tewfik Aras, the Turk

H1645-0416

foreign minister (who, incidentally, was Kamal's personal physician in Salonika many years ago), was generally recognised to be Litvinov's hand inside a Turkish glove. Meantime, Kamal has begun to refortify the Dardanelles.

H1645-0417

H1645-0418

CHAPTER XXX

POLAND WITHOUT PILSUDSKI

THE theory that nationalism is the most powerful of politico-economic forces and that nationalism is best represented politically by the power of personality is well expressed by the case of Poland. Poland, the great unpredictable in Europe to-day, was created by two factors, nationalism and Pilsudski. The dictator, Pilsudski, died in 1935, but the fabric of Polish Government to-day is based on his living character and idiosyncrasies.

On August 6, 1914, Josef Pilsudski, a Polish patriot and revolutionary, went to war against Russia with an army of – three hundred men. This was the celebrated *Kadrówka*, (literally 'cadre') and with it Pilsudski crossed the frontier and invaded the giant body of Russia. The three hundred men grew into a brigade and the brigade into three brigades. Eventually the *Kadrówka* became the Polish Legion, fourteen thousand strong, a revolutionary army for the deliverance of Poland from the enemies who had partitioned it. But until well into the middle of the War, most people – even Poles – thought that Pilsudski was a quixotic lunatic.

In 1916 the Germans captured Warsaw. They offered to permit the Polish Legion to continue operations against the Russians as an auxiliary force, but Pilsudski held out unqualifiedly for Polish independence, and he was incarcerated in prison at Magdeburg. But first he had time to transform the Legion into a secret underground organisation, the P.O.W. (*Polska Organizacja Wojskowa*), to carry on its work. In 1918 the Central Powers were defeated; Pilsudski returned in triumph to Warsaw to become head of the Polish state; and the Legions and the P.O.W. were its first armed force.

Now the points to be made are that the Legions were absolutely the single-handed creation of Pilsudski and that in 1935, seventeen years later, Poland was still the instrument of

his creation. The Legionnaires, now as then, rule Poland. A clique of the marshal's officers, fanatically devoted to him in life, reverent of his memory now that the gruff old walrus is dead, dominate comprehensively almost every aspect of Polish life.

Let us list the names that count. They are difficult names, but each man is important.

General Thaddeus Kasprzycki is the minister of war. What was he in the old days? Field chief of Pilsudski's first three hundred men.

General Jan Soznkowski, commander of an army division, will probably be the next President of Poland. What was he to Pilsudski? Chief of staff of the Legion.

General Eduard Rydz-Smigly, immediately on Pilsudski's death, succeeded him as inspector-general of the army. He had been commander of the first brigade of the Legionnaires.

Colonel Valerian Slawek, the prime minister when Pilsudski died, and still one of the three or four most important men in Poland, was an intelligence officer in the first three hundred.

Colonel Blazej Prystor, several times prime minister, one of the famous little circle of 'colonels', was special adjutant for political affairs in the Legion.

Colonel Joseph Beck, who seems on the way to be Poland's permanent foreign minister, was Pilsudski's chief adjutant in the latter period of the Legion and P.O.W.

Marjan Zyndram-Koscialkowski, who became prime minister when the Slawek-Prystor clique went out of power in October 1935, was an aide-de-camp of Pilsudski's, and chief intelligence officer during the attack on Vilna.

Among others, Colonel Adam Koc, under-secretary in the ministry of finance, was chief assistant to Pilsudski in organising the P.O.W. Boguslav Miedzinski, now the editor of the semi-official newspaper, *Gazeta Polska*, was an intelligence officer both in the Legion and P.O.W. Henri Floyar-Rajchmann, also an intelligence man in the Legion, is minister of commerce and industry. General Roman Gorecki, president of the Polish state bank, was commander of the second brigade of the *Kadrówka*. Waclaw Jedrejewicz, chief of intelligence for Lithuania in the P.O.W., is now minister

H1645-0419

H1645-0420

of education and religion. Finally, the only important opposition leader in Poland, General Sikorski, who resisted the 1926 Pilsudski *Putsch*, was a Legionnaire.

These men are the essence of the ruling power in Poland to-day. Pilsudski was Alpha and Omega to them. Only those officers who were in the original three hundred or who entered *Kadrówka* ranks immediately thereafter, who were trained by Pilsudski himself in this strange Polish equivalent of Eton and Oxford, count in Poland. Thus Pilsudski's colossal power. Like a father, he brought Poland up. And his children run it.

Grandpa

Pilsudski was usually called, in fact, not father – he was getting too old toward the end – but *Dziadek*, grandfather. He called all his men 'Du' or 'toi'; respectful, they did not respond with such intimacy, but addressed him as *Komendant*, chief. That the old dictator was a turncoat, a ruffian, a lover of scatological language, a brigand, a befuddled and idiosyncratic martinet (in his old days) was undeniable; undeniably also he was honest, capable of arousing great affection, and an implacable patriot for Poland.

The career of the *Dziadek* was one of the most extraordinary of modern times. He was what the biologists might call a 'sport' among post-War revolutionary dictators. He was not, for instance, a man of the people like Mussolini or Dollfuss or Kamal Ataturk; he was born (in 1867 on an estate near Vilna) of an aristocratic Lithuanian family. But passion for Poland drove him to revolutionary activity. Hatred of Czarist Russia, on nationalist grounds, dominated his life.

His mother a tremendous Polish patriot and Russia-hater, allowed him to desert the family tradition and become a Marxist, because at that time the only effective revolutionary organisation was socialist. As a student of medicine (Pilsudski just failed to get an M.D. degree at the University of Kharkov) he began insurrectionary activity. He was arrested in 1887 and sentenced to exile in the Siberian lead mines for participation in the plot to kill Czar Alexander III for which Lenin's older brother was hanged. One of Pilsudski's brothers was likewise executed. Motivation for a revolutionary!

In 1893 he returned from Siberia and became editor of the socialist newspaper *Robotnik*, (Workman). He flitted from place to place publishing it; the police did not find him and his secret peripatetic printing-press for seven years. In 1900 he went to jail again in the terrible 'Pavilion No. 10' of the Warsaw citadel, a dungeon reserved for the worst political offenders. He escaped – by feigning insanity! Fooled, the prison doctors sent him to an asylum in St. Petersburg. With the connivance of a Polish medical man he got away and returned to Poland.

He spent some years as a patriotic bandit, and in one coup in 1908 he robbed a mail train and got away with two million roubles. Almost at the same time another socialist revolutionary, Josef Stalin, performed almost an identical feat in Tiflis, Georgia. (When, years later, Polish-Soviet relations were straightened out, Stalin sent Pilsudski his Czarist police dossier as a memento of their comradeship.) When the War came Pilsudski dropped socialism, because he felt that the best way to resurrect Poland would be to work first with the Austrian armies against the Russians, then with a Polish army against the field. So he created the Legions; witless, the Austrians permitted their organisation.[1]

Pilsudski had by the time of the War become a potent and baffling romantic legend. One story about him, widely believed, was that he disguised himself as a Russian cavalry officer, rode up to the Warsaw jail, and ordered the release of all the Polish political prisoners! On the pretext that he had orders to lead them to a new jail he secured the freedom of the lot.

He left his first wife in 1912. His second wife was a socialist comrade. She went to work in a factory at Grochow, just outside Warsaw, when Pilsudski was imprisoned by the Germans. When he returned to Poland in 1918 his first act as head of state was to fetch the President's carriage, and, with a tremendous retinue behind silver horses, drive to Grochow, find her, and return with her to the palace. By her he had two

[1] Pilsudski in later years told a former comrade, 'My friend, you and I caught the socialist train together. I got off at "Polish Independence" station. I wish you good luck on your journey to . . . Utopia.' (*Spectator*, May 17, 1935.)

H1645-0421

H1645-0422

children. Wanda, now nineteen, and Jadwiga, sixteen, of whom he was passionately fond.

Pilsudski was the author of the *coup d'état* by which Poland seized Vilna from Lithuania. Questioned by the allied ministers in Warsaw, he staunchly denied his responsibility. Several days later (this was in 1920) he resigned office as head of state. He called the ministers together. 'Gentlemen,' he said, 'the other day I lied to you. I was a public character and I had to lie. Now I am a private individual and I can tell you the truth. I *did* engineer the Vilna coup. Gentlemen, good morning.'

Blunt, gruff, he loved mystification. As he grew older his facial resemblance to Friedrich Nietzsche was very close; there were plenty who said that he was unbalanced, who hinted that when he feigned lunacy to escape the Russians the feat was not purely histrionics. He continually perplexed his subordinates by trapping them with misleading statements; he sent Beck and Prystor to the verge of nervous breakdowns by never communicating to them the policies he held them responsible for executing.

After the War the old marshal retired from politics; he returned to power in 1926 to 'restore order' (incidentally killing six hundred men on the streets of Warsaw); thereafter he governed from the back seat, as minister of war. He was contemptuous of the deputies; the grizzled vigour of his language to them became famous. Few speeches by Pilsudski could be printed verbatim in a western newspaper. He died thinking of his birth-land, Lithuania, and whispering messages to his daughters. His last gesture was characteristic, he ordered his brain to be given to the University of Warsaw for research; his heart to be preserved in the crypt in Vilna which held his mother's ashes; and his body to be sent to a third place, Cracow, where lie the tombs of Poland's ancient kings.

The 'Colonels'[1]

Of all the Legionnaires, the man Pilsudski loved best was

[1] Most of the 'colonels', incidentally, are not colonels. Either they are beyond that and have become generals (like the minister of war Gen. Kasprzycki, who began adult life as a mathematics teacher in Paris), or (like Kasprzycki again) they were soldiers by accident, men who followed Pilsudski into the Legion from various occupations.

General Soznkowski, the comrade who shared his imprisonment at Magdeburg. This officer, ten years later, performed a feat of deeply quixotic and Polish devotion; he was a general in command of the division at Posnan when he heard that Pilsudski, his old chief, was marching on Warsaw. Soznkowski joined neither Pilsudski nor the forces of the government.

Instead – he shot himself. In shame that Poland was undergoing civil war, which might split the army, he fired a bullet in his breast, committed *hara kiri* – and recovered! By some miracle, the hole next to his heart was stitched up. Pilsudski rewarded this dramatic expression of divided loyalty by intimating that Soznkowski should be the next President of Poland. When it was known on the inside that Pilsudski was dying, a new constitution greatly strengthening the power of the executive was rushed to completion.

General Rydz-Smigly, who succeeded Pilsudski as chief inspector of the army, was not a professional soldier, but a Legionnaire. It was he, however, who captured Kiev in the wild Polish assault on the U.S.S.R. in 1921. Rydz-Smigly studied to be a portrait painter in his youth. The army is believed to be devoted to him. Therefore Pilsudski arranged that he should become its chief, so that he could bring it loyally to support whatever new civil régime took power. He was born in 1886. Cultivated, quiet, he is the student type of officer.

Colonel Slawek, a companion of Pilsudski's from the earliest revolutionary days, was a socialist conspirator; making bombs for Pilsudski in 1903, he lost one side of his face in an explosion. His origins are mysterious; no one but Pilsudski knew where he was born, or his real name. The report is that he is really a Count Czetwertynski, a scion of one of the greatest Polish noble families, who hid these connections without trace when he joined the marshal thirty-five years ago. Slawek is to-day a pet of the Polish aristocrats, the Radziwells and Potockis, who look to him as their own; and it was Slawek who was the bridge between Pilsudski and the aristocracy in the early days of the reborn state.

Colonel Joseph Beck, born in 1894, less amiable a character than his colleagues, called the 'most unpleasant foreign minister' in Europe, was nevertheless a great favourite of Pilsudski

H1645-0423

H1645-0424

in the latter days; the old man had great affection for him. Complicated, ingrown, with a snarl like Tardieu's, moody, elegant, Beck came from the low nobility in the Austrian part of Poland, and began his career as a student of economics in Vienna. He joined the Legion; after the War Pilsudski gave him regular officer's training in the new military academy he set up in Warsaw. For a time he was Polish military attaché in Paris.

The President of Poland is Ignacy Moscicki, known as 'Ignace the Obedient'. He is, of all things, a distinguished electro-physicist, called to politics from a professorship at the University of Lwow. He was also head of the Chemical Research Institute in Warsaw. He has something like five hundred inventions in the field of electro-physics and chemistry to his credit, and holds fifty-three patents. Like the pianist Paderewski, he was valuable to Poland's politics largely because his life was utterly unpolitical.

The prime minister, Koscialkowski, although a Legionnaire, was disliked by the Slawek-Prystor-Beck group, because of his reputation as a Left-winger and liberal. He was out of national politics till 1934, when the minister of the interior, Pieracki, was murdered. The colonels asked Pilsudski who was to be the successor; the old marshal replied, 'Why do *I* always have to decide everything? Can't you young fellows rule this country yet?'

The colonels retired and presented a list of candidates to Pilsudski, who glanced at it and tossed it in the waste-basket; he picked up the telephone, got through to Koscialkowski, and said, 'You are the new minister of the interior,' then rang off. Pilsudski liked him because he too was a Pole of Lithuanian origin. Koscialkowski, as minister of the interior, attempted to liberalise the treatment of minorities; the old marshal approved of this, because he knew his death would make necessary some broadening of the basis of government. Koscialkowski is very close to Rydz-Smigly, who, as boss of the army, has the decisive word.

Rzeczpospolita Polska

The nationalism of Poland, like that of Hungary, is flamboyant and tenacious. This is partly because the country, as

everyone knows, suffered the unique and terrible experience of partition. Yet when Poland disappeared from the map there were only eight million Poles; when Woodrow Wilson put it on the map again there were twenty million. Despite the supreme ordeal of concrete geographical dissolution, the country lived – and grew. Poland's resurrection has given it a sort of crucifix complex. This was the source of many of its troubles. It rose from the dead and thus there was something holy about its survival. It began a career of proselytising. It suffered from the delusion that it was not merely a succession state, but a great power.

Polish nationalism is nicely illustrated by the elephant story, which, if legend is correct, was invented in an objective moment by Paderewski.

Five men of different nationalities each write a book about an elephant. The Englishman goes to India, organises a hunt, and composes a thick illustrated travelogue, 'How I Shot my First Elephant'. The Frenchman casually visits the Zoo and promptly produces a yellow-back *'L'Elefant et Ses Amours'*. The German plunges into research and emerges some years later with a five-volume work, 'Introduction to a Monograph to the Study of the Elephant'. The Russian gets drunk on vodka, retires to his garret, and issues a slim philosophical treatise, 'The Elephant – Does it Exist?' The Pole sits down in the national library and turns out a fiery pamphlet, 'The Elephant and the Polish Question'.

Poland may not be a great power, but it is a country the physical bulk of which can hardly be ignored. Its population is thirty-two million, which increases at the tremendous rate of five hundred thousand per year; in area it is the fifth state in Europe, Russia excluded. Its first tremendous job was to amalgamate the Russian, German, and Austrian divisions of the country into a homogeneous and viable whole. Since then the chief internal problems have been two: settlement of the minorities issue, because the hungry Poles took more than their share of territory; of the thirty-two million people, between eight and ten million are not Poles at all, but Ukrainians, Germans, White Russians, Galicians, Ruthenes, Lithuanians. Second, to persuade God to raise agricultural prices.

H1645-0425

As is the case with most Central European and Balkan countries, between thirty-five and forty per cent of the budget goes to armament. A peasant country, not rich in industrial resources, it bears the burden of one of the most formidable military machines in the world. The standing army numbers three hundred and fifty thousand, the trained reserves one million six hundred and forty-five thousand; pressed, Poland could mobilise three million men. And the Poles will tell you that this is necessary because the country, without distinct natural geographic borders, lies exposed between two greater powers, Germany and the U.S.S.R.

The foreign policy of Poland since the War has been, as Knickerbocker put it, that of the nut in the nutcracker. At first the orientation, as we know, was the alliance with France and the Little Entente. Beck changed this, though the treaty with France is still operative; aware of the growing strength of Germany, and Germany's desire to recover the Polish Corridor, he took advantage of Hitler's offer for a ten-year peace pact; Germany temporarily gave up claims on the Corridor in return for Polish friendship. Germany and Poland united in what was potentially an anti-Soviet bloc; nevertheless Beck went to Moscow as well as Berlin, and a Polish-Soviet non-aggression treaty is in force. The Russians, wanting permanent peace, would like to transform this into an Eastern Locarno freezing the frontiers on the present basis; Poland refused. It is on the fence – with legs in all directions.

Eyes North

To the north of Poland are the four Baltic States, each with individual problems, but united by the same overwhelming geographical consideration: former provinces of Russia, they are now buffer states between Germany, Poland and the Soviet Union. Roughly speaking, they represent a descending order of anti-Russianism and pro-Germanism from north to south. Finland hates the Russians most; Lithuania, at the bottom, hates them least. Lithuanian policy is grounded on fear of Germany and Poland.

Two specific danger spots in the northern area are Danzig and Memel. Both are predominantly German cities separated from the Reich by the Treaty of Versailles; both have grown

H1645-0426

up under the tutelage of the League of Nations; Germany wants both back. Danzig is technically a free city, however, whereas Memel is on Lithuanian territory.

The Polish Corridor, a wedge of land which outraged the Germans by giving Poland an outlet to the sea at the cost of separating East Prussia from the rest of Germany, was not long ago the most perilous territorial issue in Europe. The Polish-German pact shelved it, and by so doing reduced much of the dangerousness of Danzig, which is the Corridor's natural port. The Nazi party in Danzig is, however, a powerful latent source of mischief. Poland, though it believes a Nazi coup to regain Danzig unlikely to succeed, has played safe by building a rival port in the Corridor, Gdynia, at tremendous expense – £20,000,000. The investment in Gdynia is such that, no matter what happens to Danzig, Poland will never give up the Corridor except by defeat in war.

Memel was detached from Germany presumably to give Lithuania an outlet to the sea; it was to be the Lithuanian equivalent of Danzig. While the allies were still deliberating how exactly to draw the frontiers, Poland under Pilsudski unconscionably seized the Lithuanian territory of Vilna; tit for tat, Lithuania then grabbed Memel. The German Nazis have violently agitated for the return of Memel to Germany; in retaliation, the Lithuanians have treated the German minority none too gently. Meantime Polish-Lithuanian relations have been broken off since the rape of Vilna; the frontier, after fifteen years, is still closed. The Lithuanians, tough folk themselves, hope that the U.S.S.R. will help them if trouble comes. But in fact Lithuania is fairly safe from aggression as long as Poland and Germany remain friends. As we saw in Chapter Seven, Hitler cannot attack the Lithuanians without losing his entente with Poland. Should, however, Germany and Poland come to an arrangement to divide Lithuania between them, then fireworks would begin. This is the kind of villainous nationalist snarl for which there seems no reasonable territorial solution.

H1645-0427

H1645-0428

CHAPTER XXXI

HALF A LEAGUE ONWARD

'Breathes there a man with soul so dead
Who never to himself hath said
This is my own, my native land.'

NOTHING is easier than to sneer at the poor old League of Nations, foisted on the allied powers by an American, Woodrow Wilson, because he happened to care more for the United States of the World than the United States of America. Like a virgin in a bawdy house, calling piteously for a glass of lemonade (as Ben Hecht put it), Wilson roamed the corridors of Versailles, emerging finally with the League as America's only spoils of war. It gives one a start to read the Covenant to-day and see that paragraph three of Article Five still says, 'The first meeting of the Assembly and the first meeting of the Council shall be summoned by the President of the United States.'

Nothing is easier than to list the charges commonly made against the League. Speaker after speaker mounts the Assembly tribune – and tells the world what everybody already knows. Nothing happens at the Council table until the powers that be have settled the business beforehand – and in secret. What the League mostly does is deliberate upon an ancient dilemma – how to lock the stable door after the horse has gone. The League does nothing but spawn a plethora of feeble committees. The League provided a means for minorities to voice their grievances; therefore minorities have been doubly nuisance-makers. The League compelled the registration of treaties; so treaties nowadays have more secret clauses than before. The League is a junta of the Versailles powers. And so on. And so on.

Some of these charges are true. But the point to make is that the countries themselves, not the League, are responsible for most of the weaknesses of the Geneva system. The League

as such has no sovereign rights. It has no authority to compel a state to follow its recommendations. The League is a pool of all the member powers, but it has no executive rights over any individual country. The League is not a super-state; it is merely the mouthpiece of member states when happily and rarely they reach agreement. The League itself decides nothing; the *individual states* bear all responsibility.

The Covenant, moreover, was written on the assumption that the United States of America would be a signatory. When Senator Lodge and his band of irreconcilable isolationists refused ratification of the Versailles Treaty, they torpedoed the Covenant almost beyond recovery. With the United States a League member, sanctions could absolutely outlaw and isolate an errant state. But American withdrawal from the League system made effective sanctions all but impossible, because America, by insisting on its neutral right of trading with an aggressor, could frustrate any League blockade. The British Navy, necessarily the chief instrument of a blockade, would not risk conflict with the United States.

In assessing the value of the League one should first separate its non-political activities from those entangled in nationalist politics. That the League has done sturdy service in extra-political fields is undeniable. In collating statistics on a reasonable international basis, in forming the nucleus of a world approach to matters of health, agriculture, the drug traffic, transport, refugees, codification of law, its value is indisputable, and only a persimmon-minded Pharisee could minimise it. One should not forget, too, the able work of the League in finance and economics, particularly the attempt to stabilise the Danube countries after the War.

As to politics, the thing to keep in mind is that the League is an admirable mechanism for settling international disputes when – and only when – the great powers agree. It is silly to say that the League, even if it has no executive authority, cannot stop wars; it has stopped at least one war which might have been extremely dangerous – for instance the Bulgar-Greek upset in 1925 – and it can stop others *provided* Great Britain, France, the Soviet Union, Italy, are united in wanting them stopped. When Mr. Eden and M. Laval see eye to eye, the Geneva system works – swiftly and well. For instance

H1645-0429

H1645-0430

the League prevented the Jugoslav-Hungarian outbreak in 1934 from developing into war. This averted a first-rate international crisis. But when the powers disagree, then the League is blocked.

The League's record as an administrator of doubtful territories is almost beyond reproach. Danzig, under the Irishman Sean Lester, the League's High Commissioner, is a case in point. And remember the Saar. The prime minister of Saarland was a tough and gallant Briton Geoffrey Knox. In his 'cabinet' were a Frenchman, a Saarlander, a Jugoslav, a Finn. They were neutral and impartial; they had no local axes to grind; they had no political ambitions; and they (their predecessors also) gave the Saar fifteen years of great comparative prosperity and peace.

Suppose Lithuania, say, or Austria, should be internationalised and placed under a completely impartial and disinterested extra-national cabinet. Suppose that the minister of finance was a Swede, because he was the best man in the world available for the post, and the minister of communications a Greek or Swiss, chosen for efficiency. Suppose the police were commanded by a Dane and his men were Indian, Italian, Uruguayan, or what you will, picked like the Saar 'Expeditionary' Force. The idea is so sensible that it is, of course, fantastic. It won't work because it strikes at the most 'precious' boast of a people, its nationalism. The only thing against it is human and political nature. Which makes evolution of the League heart-breakingly difficult.

The League is, as Edgar Ansel Mowrer put it, the product of thousands of years of slow ethical growth. Feeble as it may be, it 'speaks for a much larger proportion of the world than any other human institution'. It represents – I quote a recent letter in the London *Times* – 'man's first fumbling approach to national decency, conceived in the spiritual anguish of the War.' And it has been in operation only half a generation, which in the historical process, is a very brief interval indeed. I remember President Masaryk saying to me in Prague, 'It is only fifteen years since the War – an instant's flash. Give us time – time –'

The brief history of the League may be divided into three periods. Until the Treaty of Locarno in 1925 it was for the

most part the instrument of the victorious powers, strengthening the peace against the upward writhings of the vanquished. Then till 1933, when Germany departed, it laboriously struggled with the problem of disarmament; viz., the allied powers refused to obey their pledges and to disarm, and the disarmament conference collapsed. Since 1933 the major issue has been 'collective security'. This means an attempt to bring Germany into a security system on the basis of more or less equal rights; if it fails, the League will become the instrument of reversion to the balance of power and overt military alliances.

The Abyssinian dispute cut dramatically across this movement. The greatest day in the history of the League was October 6, 1935, when Article Sixteen was invoked and sanctions against Italy were put into motion. For the first time, a major power was formally condemned for violation of the Covenant, and by a unanimous vote of the Council – despite the prophets who never dreamed that Article Sixteen could be applied – Italy was declared an outlaw state, deemed to have declared an act of war against all League states. Shades of Wilson! The League was born!

And the blockade of Italy which then began opened paths to a 'no-man's-land' which no power in history had traversed before.

Peace Palace

The League secretariat comprises six hundred and thirty-seven men and women of forty-four nationalities, and there are some queer fish among them. All take a solemn pledge to the League, and the group represents the nearest approach to an international civil service that the world has yet seen.

The secretary-general, Avenol, is a Frenchman; his two deputies are Spanish and Italian. The under-secretary general is British, the legal adviser Uruguayan, and the chiefs of section comprise two Britons, two Italians, one Greek, one Frenchman, one Dane, one Swede, one Pole, one Dutchman, one South African, and one American, the astute and amiable Arthur Sweetser. These men are the 'cabinet' of the League. In various sections the number of different nationalities is augmented. In the information section, for instance, there

H1645-0431

are men and women of seventeen countries.[1] This mêlée does not, however, produce much discord. The late secretary-general, Sir Eric Drummond, told a friend that quarrels in the staff, when they rarely occurred, were usually between people of the same nationality.

Members of the secretariat represent a cross-section of equipment as well as nationality. There are former soldiers, professors, engineers, diplomats, newspaper men, health officers, lawyers, economists. All are strenuous idealists, and all are devoted to the League. A fair share of them entered League service, young men – in the original secretariat there were only two men over forty – fresh from the War and determined to give voice to their disillusion and idealism. Some were inveterate internationalists even then; Pierre Comert, for instance, for many years head of the information section, was a teacher of French in a German University.

The chief 'personalities' commonly associated with the League are delegates from the powers, like Dr. Beneš of Czechoslovakia, young Anthony Eden who is by all odds Geneva's star attraction, and Don Salvador de Madariaga, the Spanish professor who was head of the League's disarmament section, before becoming ambassador of Spain first to Washington, then to Paris and Geneva. Madariaga, fiercely intelligent, a bald little wasp, writes books in English in a style few Englishmen can match.

The head of the secretariat, Joseph Avenol, is French and yet has been called the Frenchman's conception of a typical Englishman. He is extremely shy, a little slow, tenacious; he never gets excited, loves England, and has a passion for bulldogs and gardening. Avenol was a financial expert, an adviser to the French treasury, who worked in England during the War on inter-ally financial problems; he was once offered the governorship of the Banque de France but he preferred Geneva.

[1] Holland, the United States, Switzerland, France, Italy, Poland, Jugoslavia, Belgium, England, Canada, Australia, Sweden, Spain, China, Hungary, India, Chile. Several individuals are, moreover, multi-national; for instance one vigorous member of the secretariat, M. Zilliacus, was born in Japan of a Finnish father and American mother; he was educated in Sweden, England, and the U.S.A.; he married a Pole and is a naturalised Englishman.

H1645-0432

Perish the Treaties?

The Treaty of Versailles, the alleged source of all our woes, is a sturdy document running to four hundred and fifty-three pages which weighs just under three pounds. You can buy it at H.M. Stationery Office for the very reasonable sum of two shillings and sixpence, and it is an interesting lot of reading matter for the money.

Some of its clauses, written in passion in 1919, seem outrageous and indefensible now, like the 'Hang the Kaiser' and war-guilt paragraphs. Large parts, you discover with some amazement, are long since out of date; the cry to revise the treaty still resounds, but as a matter of fact the document has already been so whittled down that not much except the territorial clauses are left. Reparations, Rhineland, disarmament, are no more than waste paper now. Parts VI, VII, VIII, IX, X, XI, XII, of the treaty have practically disappeared.

This serves to make more pressing the potential demand for territorial revision. The allies gave way to Germany, though with ill grace, first on the financial clauses of the treaty, then on German rearmament. Territory will not be so easy to give away.

As a matter of blunt fact, the territorial provisions of the treaties, including even those dealing with the Danube and Baltic, were not so utterly indefensible – some minor instances excepted – as is generally assumed. The basis of the settlement was self-determination; frontiers were drawn with ethnic considerations predominant. As a result, whereas in pre-War Europe something like 45,000,000 people lived under foreign domination – including the whole of what is now Poland, the whole of Czechoslovakia, the whole of the Baltic States and much of Jugoslavia – the situation to-day is that only 16,800,000 are genuine minorities. The fact cannot be denied that, as Hamilton Fish Armstrong put it, 'vastly more people on the continent of Europe live under their own national régimes than before'. The trouble was that the allied powers overstepped themselves, and created – as we have seen – new minorities by grabbing what didn't belong to them. But it should be pointed out that some frontier lines, like that between Hungary and Rumania, can never be drawn without

H1645-0433

H1645-0434

leaving some miserable folk on the wrong side of the border.

Another point should be kept in mind. If Germany had won the War, the Treaty of Versailles might not have been nearly so nice a one.

War or Peace

At the end of 1935 the gentlemen of the League were too busy catching Mussolini's tail in Abyssinia to worry unduly over storm clouds elsewhere. But the continent, shaken by political worry and economic discontent, was far from dutifully quiescent. Indeed the chief latent worry in connection with the Abyssinian war should have been its possible repercussions elsewhere. Abyssinia aside, let us look at Europe from the point of view of war or peace.

The forces making for war, the source and embodiment of all indecency and evil, are, roughly, the following:

First, rival nationalisms. We have noted *ad nauseam* the internecine hatreds of much of Europe. 'Patriotism is the last refuge of a scoundrel'; war is the last refuge of a patriot. And there are many 'profiteers in patriotism' in Europe to-day.

Second, economic stresses. The last war caused the present economic crisis (even if the crisis, at the end of 1935, was lightening); the present economic crisis will help to cause the next war. The unity and confidence of capitalism has been shaken; national poverty is unloosing unpredictable international forces.

Third, the outward push of countries like Germany and Italy who are starved for raw materials, which coincides with their political revisionism, their nationalist urge to destroy the treaties and thus expand. Five countries in the world possess about seventy-five per cent of the total of the world's key-products. Germany, Italy and Japan are not among them.

Fourth, the difficulty of localising civil disturbances; Europe is so interlocked that a revolution in Austria with 6,500,000 people, may set 100,000,000 marching; frontiers were multiplied by Versailles, Europe 'balkanised', and the whole continent enmeshed in rickety alliances.

Fifth, the incapacity of certain peoples to develop democratically.

Sixth, the growth of armament. Millions of armed men cannot sit around with billions of dollars' worth of guns and ammunition and just twiddle their thumbs – indefinitely.

Seventh, the fact that the United States of America is not a member of the League, which would be a thousand per cent more effective with American adherence.

Eighth, the spread of Fascism, and the explosive force of personalities like Hitler.[1]

The forces making for peace may similarly be outlined:

First, wars cost money, and everybody is poor. Nobody has paid for the last war – except the dead. (On the other hand, of course, domestic poverty may tempt a country – Italy for instance – to break out, both as an effort to cloak discontent at home, and, more 'legitimately', to seek wealth abroad. Also one might note that the less wealth a country has, the less it stands to lose by war.)

Second, the general tempo of the economic crisis has been an anodyne. The struggle of almost all nations to keep from drowning in the seas of their own poverty has, to a certain extent, minimised the danger of conflict. (On the other hand, note that in Austria, for instance, economic difficulties have tended to increase the chance of *civil* war.)

Third, as pointed out above, the peace treaties went a considerable way toward drawing a correct ethnic map of Europe, and thus removed many former sources of revolutionary and international friction. There are approximately thirty million fewer Europeans anxious to upset the status quo.

Fourth, in 1914 in Europe there were eighteen kingdoms or empires, four of them ruled by absolute or nearly absolute monarchs, and only two republics. To-day there are twelve kingdoms, none of them absolute, and fifteen republics. Absolutist wars in the fashion of former centuries, arranged between royal houses almost like their marriages, are out of fashion. (On the other hand, totalitarian Fascist dictators can with equal impunity throw their countries into war.)

Fifth, a general European war would probably produce revolution and communism everywhere except in England. The knowledge that the Kremlin would very likely be the

[1] See Chapter Seven above for detailed reasons why Germany may make war.

H1645-0435

beneficiary of a new world war may, conceivably, tend to prevent one.

Sixth, at the end of 1935 the League system was by no means proved to be a failure. The Locarno treaties were still a powerful guarantee of peace. The League machinery, even with the powers disagreeing, provides a valuable central clearing-house for information and negotiation. Popular pacific opinion, especially in England, was mobilised behind the League to an extraordinary extent. It is not necessarily stupid idealism to hope that the League can eventually become strong enough to stop wars.

Seventh, the unalterably peaceful policy of one great European country – the Soviet Union.

'In Vishnuland What Avatar?'

So now we come to the end of this long and crowded parade through Western Europe. War aside, what are the other tendencies made manifest? What chords, subordinate to the main diapason peace-or-war, are clear?

1. The status-quo group of powers, beneficiaries of the peace treaties, has begun to crack. Italy went wild on a particularist adventure; Poland played with both France and Germany; Jugoslavia began to wobble. The very preponderance in power of the treaty countries led to jealousies, differences, and secession. It seems clear that a new line-up is in process of formation.

2. Political nationalism, founded on poverty, hate, and economic jealousy, is still the dominant force determining the policy of every country.

3. Powerful personalities, like Hitler, Goering, Mussolini, Gil Robles, Goemboes, Kamal Ataturk, Starhemberg, Zivkovitch, Rydz-Smigly, King Zog, dominate those countries where people are too feeble or immature politically for democracy.

4. The small democratic states are those which have survived the trying ardours of the early thirties best. Scandinavia, Switzerland, Holland, have a higher standard of living than their neighbours; they are, by and large, unperplexed by threats of war; they have to support no huge armament equipments; their best brains, as Bertrand Russell pointed out, are free from the demands either of imperialism

H1645-0436

or the diplomatic chequer-board; partly because of geographic-historical considerations, they are outside the general stream of European madness – and happy for it. Of these states, however, Switzerland and Holland were seriously hurt economically, because of their allegiance, like that of France, to gold.

5. The world economic crisis, as Trotsky predicted, is lifting slightly. But the agricultural countries in Central Europe and the Baltic regions are still hard hit by the agrarian collapse and the industrial countries still find their markets shrivelled.

6. Liberal democracy was a handmaiden to private capitalism; the world economic crisis dealt private capitalism a staggering blow, and democracy innocently enough took the consequences. The party system, in any number of countries, was discredited, and in several states it was replaced by authoritarian régimes. Can an authoritarian government, replacing democracy, be made benevolent? To this question Western Europe replied with a resounding negative.

7. In Italy, Germany, Austria, and potentially in Spain, Fascism rose. (Jugoslavia, Hungary, Bulgaria, Poland, Albania, Turkey, are dictatorships or semi-dictatorships, but they are not Fascist in the sense of Fascism as a corporative reorganisation of politics and economy.) In several countries Fascism and/or reactionary dictatorship came to be linked with what was, in simple fact, a revolt against civilisation. 'Apostolic leadership, political hierarchy, and mass obedience founded on terror,' as Mowrer puts it, 'are its traits.' It established power by violence, violence which 'penetrated and corroded every sphere of human activity'.

8. The Abyssinian campaign may form a basis of understanding between the dictatorships of Germany, Italy, and Austria, though at present rival aims toward Austria prevent this.

9. Fascism, momentarily powerful, may be the convulsive last agonies of the capitalist order; in which case Fascism will have been merely the prelude of communism.

10. England replaced France as the chief 'League' power, by taking the lead for sanctions against Italy, through the agency of forces which included the British fleet, Lord Cecil, and fear of Germany.

H1645-0437

11. The great broad mass of middle liberals and democrats were almost everywhere perplexed by the painful necessity to turn sharply to either right or left. The good old comfortable middle ground was disappearing.

12. Left groups, despite immense obstacles, have sought to unite; in the Saar, underground in Austria, in Spain, in France a United Left Front was organised against reaction. Such groups lack outstanding leadership. Even dialectical materialism demands personality to assert itself. This was proved overwhelmingly in Russia.

. . . . . .

So now let us turn to that other and more powerful League of Nations – the Soviet Union.

H1645-0438

H1645-0439

CHAPTER XXXII

STALIN

'The art of leadership is a serious matter. One must not lag behind a movement, because to do so is to become isolated from the masses. But one must not rush ahead, for to rush ahead is to lose contact with the masses. He who wishes to lead a movement must conduct a fight on two fronts – against those who lag behind and those who rush ahead.'
– JOSEF STALIN.

'No revolution can be made with silk gloves.'
– JOSEF STALIN.

STALIN is the most powerful single human being in the world; and one of the very greatest. He is different from other dictators because he is not only the undisputed leader of a national state but of a movement, the Communist International, which has roots in all countries. Also he differs from Hitler and Mussolini in that he is of the second generation of dictators, having taken over authority from a predecessor, Lenin.

He was not appointed by Lenin to the job. Indeed quite the contrary. Stalin was the man whom Lenin did *not* want to be his successor. Lenin was quite explicit on this point. Listen:

> 'Comrade Stalin is too rude. . . . I propose to the comrades to find a way of removing him from that position (secretary-general of the party) and appointing another man who in all respects differs from Stalin only in superiority – namely, more patient, more loyal, more polite, and more attentive to comrades, less capricious, etc. . . .'

This was in 1924. Eleven years later Stalin was extolled by his subordinates in terms almost as extravagant as those which Lenin himself evoked. In the Soviet Press you may find him fulsomely called 'Great', 'Beloved', 'Bold', 'Wise', 'Inspirer', 'Genius'. Four cities have been named for him, Stalingrad, Stalinabad, Stalinogorsk, Stalinsk. In speeches he

had been addressed by ordinarily uneffusive folk as, 'Our Best Collective Farmer Worker', 'Our Shockworker, Our Best of Best', and 'Our Darling, Our Guiding Star'. Celebrations have concluded with the words, 'Long Live Our Dear Leader, Our Warmly Beloved Stalin, Our Comrade, Our Friend.'

Sources of Power

Guts. Durability. Physique. He suffers from a dilated heart, but otherwise his physical strength and endurance are enormous. He is no high-strung neurotic like Hitler, nor is his command of physical power closely associated with emotion, as is the case with Mussolini. Stalin is about as emotional as a slab of basalt. If he has nerves, they are veins in rock.

Patience. Tenacity. Concentration. His perseverance, as Walter Duranty says, is 'inhuman'. He is a slow builder of bricks, so slow that often his followers are impatient, because they do not see the outline of the finished structure he is building. His line is undeviating; he takes only 'the long view'. His ability to concentrate is very great. Louis Fischer, for instance, told me the following little story:

At the celebration in the Bolshoi Theatre in Moscow of the fortieth anniversary of Maxim Gorki's literary career, Stalin was observed on the stage in earnest conversation with some minor communist, possibly a delegate from the provinces, whom no one recognised. The young man – of no importance compared to the other dignitaries – asked Stalin questions. Stalin, paying no attention to the rest of the gathering, listened to the young man, then for more than a hour answered him, slowly, persuasively, absolutely oblivious to what was going on around him.

Shrewdness. Cunning. Craft. He is, of course, an Oriental; moreover he admits it. 'Welcome,' he said to the first interviewer, a Japanese, whom he ever received, 'I too am an Asiatic.'

Stalin tried to suppress Lenin's testament denigrating him. He had not quite the power to do this. But presently the U.S.S.R. was flooded with five hundred thousand copies of a photograph showing Stalin and Lenin sitting on a bench together, conversing with earnest friendliness.

Stalin's double campaign, first to rid himself of the left

H1645-0440

opposition of Trotsky, Zinoviev, and Kamenev, second the right opposition of Bukharin, Radek, and Tomsky, was a triumph not only of ruthless perseverance, but great imaginative shrewdness and subtlety.

When candour suits his purpose, no man can be more candid. He has the courage to admit his errors, something few other dictators dare do. In his article 'Dizzy from Success' he was quite frank to admit that the collectivisation of the peasants had progressed too quickly. He wrote in *Leninism*:

> 'The main thing in this matter is to have the courage to admit one's errors and to have the strength to correct them in the shortest possible time. The fear of admitting one's errors after the recent intoxication by successes, the fear of self-criticism, unwillingness to correct one's errors rapidly and decisively – that is the main difficulty.'

This book, *Leninism*, is one of the frankest – if long-winded – expositions of political philosophy ever written. In its eight hundred and twenty-five pages you may find record of things good, bad, and indifferent in the Soviet Union in illimitable profusion. Stalin emphasises the good, naturally, but he does not conceal the bad. The book had sold over two million copies in the Soviet Union by the end of 1935.[1]

Sense of Detail. This is very great. His wary eye penetrates to the smallest elements in the national life, and in general he tends to detail in a way neither Hitler nor Mussolini would dream of doing. Hitler, for instance, refuses to read even glowing samples of his fan mail. Stalin reads everything, down to the last paragraph in the *Pravda*. His day begins with perusal of local reports, carefully sifted from all parts of the Soviet Union. W. H. Chamberlin (cf. *Russia's Iron Age*, p. 187), certainly no friendly critic, notes that Stalin, by personal intervention, remedied injustices in spheres far removed from his normal business.

In the summer of 1933 Stalin wanted to see the building of Magnitogorsk, the industrial city created in Siberia during the Five-Year Plan, dramatised and made colourful in the newspapers. He remembered a bright feature-reporter on the *Izvestia* named Garry and asked what had become of him. He

[1] The complete works of Lenin, incidentally, in twenty-seven volumes, have sold four million *sets* in the U.S.S.R. since publication.

H1645-0441

H1645-0442

was found in a concentration camp! Stalin had him released, sent him to write up Magnitogorsk.

During the February 1934 congress of the communist party Stalin was listening to a speech by his first assistant, Kaganovitch. He was talking about certain text-books which had been unsatisfactory. Stalin interrupted, 'Not those text-books, but the loose-leaf text-books.'

When his friend Kirov was murdered in Leningrad, in December 1934, Stalin went to Leningrad in order personally to interrogate the assassin.

Ability to handle men. He is a consummate political tactician, a party boss and organiser *par excellence*. Friends told me in Moscow in the summer of 1935 that Stalin possessed 'ectoplasm', that you felt his antennae as soon as he entered a room. His personal as well as political intuition is very great. He has offended many; plenty of communists would deny that he had any sense of human relationship; yet his men work for him, loyally, and he chooses them supremely well.

Associates worship Hitler; fear Mussolini; and *respect* Stalin; this seems to be the gist of it.

He is no orator. His speeches are simple and business-like but long. His writing, when he tackles the dreary wastes of Marxist dialectics, particularly when he voices the ideological differences with the opposition, is heavy going; he sounds like an applicant for a Ph.D. thesis at a minor university. When, as in his recent address to graduates of the Red Army college, he avoids philosophical issues, he is much more successful – direct, simple, full of sense. Generally, he likes the question and answer method of exposition. His speeches are like catechisms. And in style he aims to hit the broad level of the masses.

His intelligence is wary, slow, thorough, rather than acute or brilliant. Yet witness his talk with H. G. Wells, wherein he more than held his own with that glib and eloquent interlocutor. And witness his remarkable interview in 1927 with an American workmen's delegation.

On this occasion he answered questions for four solid hours, and questions of great diversity and difficulty. He talked strictly extemporaneously, but with perfect organisation of material, of a kind only possible to a man completely sure

H1645-0443

of himself. The verbatim report, about eleven thousand eight hundred words, comprises one of the most comprehensive and discerning statements of Soviet aims ever made; it was a *tour de force* quite beyond the capacity of any but an exceptionally intelligent man.

When the delegation, thoroughly exhausted, had concluded its queries, Stalin asked if *he* might ask questions about America – and he did so for two hours more. His questions were penetrating and showed considerable knowledge of American conditions; Stalin, single-handed, answered the delegation's questions much better than they replied to him. During this six solid hours of talk, the telephone did not ring once; no secretary was allowed to interrupt – another indication of Stalin's habit of utter concentration to the job in hand.

Zeal. Communism is strength to Stalin, and his belief in it is that of the Pope in Jesus Christ.

Ruthlessness. He is extravagantly ruthless. It is stupid or silly to deny this. The Russian terror was a wholesale punitive assault on a class. Soviet Russia differed from other dictatorships in that it assumed from the beginning the necessity of destruction of class enemies. Stalin did not, at the moment of crisis, flinch from obliterating the recalcitrant peasants by the weapon of famine. All governments, in the last analysis, rule by force. In Soviet Russia force is applied directly, and with social aims in view which are intended to benefit not only one hundred and sixty-five million Russians, but the whole human race. The end justifies the means, in the Soviet view. Stalin is perfectly frank about this. Lady Astor asked him, 'How long are you going to go on killing people?' Stalin replied, 'As long as it is necessary.'

A Soviet worthy, absent from the U.S.S.R., was asked his opinion of Stalin. He replied, 'The man is just a little too bloody for me.' Rare burst of indiscretion!

Early Career. Stalin[1] alone had the courage to stick the game out inside Russia after the collapse of the revolution of 1905. The other revolutionaries scattered into exile, and lived, like Lenin, in libraries or coffee-houses till 1917. Stalin stayed within Russia the whole time. He did the dirty work; he was 'the hall sweeper'. Thus he built up an immense

[1] cf. *Duranty Reports Russia*, p. 234.

acquaintance with submerged revolutionaries, and profitably was enabled to transform an underground organisation into his own party structure when he needed it.

The party. The communist party is no longer divided on questions of principle, as it was during the Trotsky episode; no opposition remains; Stalin is absolutely its boss, its master. Discipline in the party is overwhelmingly severe; and Stalin controls discipline. Party and state are one, and Stalin, as Louis Fischer puts it, 'controls every wheel and screw of the party machine'.

Note well that Stalin created the importance of the post of party secretary, not vice versa. Several men were secretaries of the party before Stalin. One was Bogdanoff, now a nonentity; one was Krestinsky, now an official in the foreign ministry. Stalin alone saw the advantages to be accrued from control of the party mechanism; thus, as he packed each office with his men, friends from underground days, his power grew.

'Lenin ruled by intellect and personality, Stalin by efficient organisation,' I have heard it expressed.

Naturally Stalin's espionage within the party is of the best. The story is told that he turned to a comrade suffering from a disease of a peculiarly private and secret nature. 'Well,' Stalin greeted him, 'How's your —— to-day?'

He is not a dictator of the first generation, I have noted, but the successor to Lenin. His tactics have always been to use Lenin as a stick to beat opponents with. In his long struggle with Trotsky, Stalin pretended never to put himself forward for his own sake, but only as the 'instrument of Lenin'; he persistently accused Trotsky of 'false Leninism', the most heinous sin in Russia, thus doubly confounding him. No man ever quoted scripture to better purpose than Stalin quoted Lenin. Mussolini and Hitler can plead only themselves for justification; Stalin always had the mighty shadow of Lenin for support.

This leads to another point. The basic strength of the Soviets is that all the outside world is the enemy. Thus the Soviet State, thrown back on itself, is close-knit, cohesive, self-sufficient. It has its complete ideology, the Marx-Lenin dogma, without possibility of deviation. Stalin, representing

H1645-0444

himself as the authentic voice of dogma, is the mouthpiece not merely of the masses in Russia, but of Russians vis-à-vis the hostile world.

Finally, as Duranty says, Stalin is indispensable. 'The leader has become identical with the cause.'

Job

Stalin holds no government post, except that since January 1934 he has been one of the thirty-seven members of the Presidium of the All-Union Central Executive Committee. This is the keystone of what might be called the Soviet Parliament. The cabinet (council of people's commissars) is responsible to it – theoretically. But Stalin is not a cabinet member, commissar.

He is no longer 'secretary general' of the communist party, but merely one of five theoretically equal party 'secretaries', the others being Kaganovitch, Zhdanov, Ezhov, and Andreyev. He is, it goes without saying, one of the ten members of the Politburo, the highest party organ.

The Central Committee of the party, from which the secretaries and members of the Politburo are drawn, could – in principle – dismiss Stalin. He is theoretically subject to majority decisions of the Central Committee. In practice his dismissal is out of the question, since he controls election of the committee members.

Party and state in Soviet Russia are, I have said, one; but Stalin maintains rigid theoretical separation between party and governmental functions. Lenin was not only head of the party but chairman of the council of people's commissars – prime minister. Stalin has rejected this coalescence. He prefers to remain in the background – the party boss.

Boy of Tiflis

His real name is Yosif (Josef) Visarionovitch Dzhugashvili, and he was born in the town of Gora, near Tiflis, Georgia, in 1879. The legend is that Lenin gave him his nickname, Stalin, which is the Russian word for 'steel', as tribute to his iron durability. In reality some anonymous comrade suggested it as an 'underground' name way back in 1910 or 1911, long before Lenin knew him well.

H1645-0445

Stalin was the son of a cobbler who had been a peasant. The family was miserably poor, probably as poor as Mussolini's, but Josef nevertheless got an education. For four years, from the ages of 15 to 19, he attended the Orthodox Theological Seminary in Tiflis, training of all things for the priesthood.

His father, like Hitler's, of blunt imagination, wanted him to follow the parental vocation. But Stalin's mother – apparently like Hitler's an exceptional woman – refused to have him become a cobbler. She insisted that Josef go to school. It is commonly thought that Stalin was expelled from the Seminary for Marxist activities. This may not be so. His mother withdrew him after four years because privation had hurt his health.

H. R. Knickerbocker has interviewed this old Georgian mother of Stalin's, Ekaterina Dzhugashvili, who lives in Tiflis still, and who speaks hardly a word of Russian. She said that 'Soso', as she called him, had been quite 'a good boy' and she seemed quite bewildered at his immense success. Stalin fetched her to Moscow some years ago. She spent an unhappy month in the Kremlin, puzzled, so the story went, at her boy's prominence, because she could not discover what it was he 'did' to earn a living! Then she retreated to the Tiflis hills, morose, content.

Georgians are not Russians. Even to-day Stalin speaks Russian with a soft hint of Georgian accent. The Georgian language not only differs from Russian as much, say, as English differs from Portuguese; even the alphabets are dissimilar. The Georgians are a southern race of complex Caucasian blood; they are mountaineers, with the primitive defensive instincts of the frontiersman; tenacity, temper, are ingrained in their physiognomy; like Armenians they have their own proud national history; they have purple-black hair, and eyes black as midnight.

Stalin's motivation to revolution came first from poverty, second from his experiences in the Seminary. He detested authority as it was voiced by the cunning, dogmatic priests, who combined parochial intolerance with the backwardness of the provincial Orthodox Church. The years in the Seminary were crucially important in the formative period of

H1645-0446

Stalin's life. He left the Seminary, met Marxist friends – and his long revolutionary career began.

Those submerged nineteen years, from 1898 to 1917, were years of incessant, overwhelming labour, always to the same end – revolution; of patient, tenacious establishment of an organisation; of pain, cruelty, persecution, arrest. Both Hitler and Mussolini have seen the inside of jails. But Stalin was much more real a jailbird. Five times he was caught by the Czar's police, five times exiled. Four times, a veritable Houdini, he escaped; the 1917 revolution liberated him from the fifth imprisonment, when he was incarcerated above the Arctic circle, in the Turukhansk region.

Stalin assisted in actual terrorism. The party needed money and undertook a policy of 'expropriations', raids on banks which were pure robberies, nothing more, nothing less. As member of the Tiflis party committee he was partly responsible for an outrage in 1907 wherein some twenty persons were killed: his men bombed a shipment of currency, got away with £15,000. The casualties were embarrassing to Stalin's superiors, and on Lenin's insistence he was expelled from the party for a short period.

He found time – between jail sentences and exile – for much activity of less tumultuous nature. At Baku, on the Caspian Sea, he edited a Bolshevik paper, *Vremia*, in the Georgian language. He went to Stockholm, Cracow, and Prague, to attend party congresses. He had managed to write a book, *Socialism and the National Question*, as early as 1912. He was leader at this time of the Bolshevik section of the social democratic party in the Duma, and an editor of *Pravda*, the party newspaper; then in 1913 he was arrested and sent to his last exile.

All this was preparation. In 1917 real life began. The revolution, overnight, transformed his function – and that of thousands of others – from conspiracy to organisation, from insurrection to administration. He was a member of the Politburo from the moment of its creation, on October 10, 1917; other members, besides Lenin, were Trotsky, Zinoviev, Kamenev, Sokolnikov, Bubnov. Also he held two cabinet portfolios when the government was organised: commissar for workers and peasants inspection, and commissar for nationalities.

He was not as active as Trotsky during the civil war period,

H1645-0447

though he was a member of the revolutionary military committee, and saw service both in the Ukraine and in Petrograd against Yudenitch. In 1921 Lenin, little dreaming what use Stalin would make of it, gave him the secretary-generalship of the party.

His main work was in the sphere of nationalities. As a non-Russian, he was peculiarly fitted for this task. Soviet Russia was a *mélange* of at least one hundred quite separate races and nationalities, and the job was to combine them into a stable unity while conceding some measure of provincial autonomy, at least in spirit. Stalin, under Lenin, invented the idea of the U.S.S.R. – the convenient device by which 'independent' and 'autonomous' republics became the Soviet 'Union', surrendering central authority to Moscow, retaining local administrative privileges.

Stalin was jealous of Trotsky from the beginning, and they came into conflict early. Duranty records that Stalin, mending a breach in the front, shot a group of officers for inefficiency, and that Trotsky, as supreme War Lord, telegraphed in protest. Stalin scrawled across the telegram, 'Pay no attention,' and left it to moulder in the archives.

Another anecdote of this period shows him in different mood. He was reviewing troops near Petrograd. A sullen soldier refused to salute. Stalin questioned him and the man pointed first to his own feet, wrapped in coarse burlap, soaked in snow and dirt, then at Stalin's substantial boots. Without a word Stalin took his boots off, tossed them to the soldier, insisted on donning the soldier's wet and stinking rags – and continued to wear them till Lenin himself made him resume normal footgear.

Stalin, says Duranty, was picked by Lenin as one of his successors because he knew the Georgian could *endure*. The proverb in those days said, 'Lenin trusts Stalin; Stalin trusts no one.' Some authorities, Paul Scheffer among them, assert that Lenin and Stalin broke about four months before Lenin's death, because Lenin distrusted his ambition, and thought that Stalin was already intriguing to supersede him. Certainly we have seen that Lenin, in his testament, showed his disapproval of some aspects of Stalin's character. 'This cook,' he said, 'will make too hot a stew.'

H1645-0448

H1645-0449

The Georgian began to act the moment that Lenin died. He and Zinoviev carried Lenin's coffin. This was in 1924. It took Stalin just five years to perfect his organisation, unmercifully weed out heretical opponents – whom he attacked by accusing them of deviation from the sacred 'party line', which he alone was competent to interpret – and establish himself as undisputed dictator of the U.S.S.R.

The Struggle with Trotsky

Stalin denies (cf. *Leninism*, I. p. 377) that his differences with Trotsky were personal. Nevertheless personal differences occurred. The two leaders cordially disliked each other. They came from different worlds, and not even the bridge of Marx could link them. Stalin called Trotsky an aristocrat and an actor. And Trotsky *was* an aristocrat, in all save the social sense, i.e., he had brains, he had courage, and he had style. Trotsky called Stalin a boor, treacherous, barbarous, corrupt.

It is an odd fact that such a *bourgeois* and 'trivial' conception as personal hatred, based on the irrationality of passion, should have been an important factor in the history of the Russian revolution. But it was so – though, of course, the personal considerations were buttressed by other factors. Trotsky detested Stalin so heartily that he studiously insulted him in public; for instance, in committee meetings he would ostentatiously pick up a newspaper and begin to read to himself whenever Stalin made a speech.

The difference in their characters was, of course, profound. Stalin a passionate politician, above all a creature of committees; Trotsky, a lone-wolf, a violent individualist, who for twenty years could not bear to shackle himself with allegiance to either the Bolshevik or Menshevik divisions in the party. Stalin, patient as an icon; Trotsky, vivacious as a satyr. Stalin, immobile, silent, cautious; Trotsky a lively, frank, and inveterate conversationalist. Stalin a bomb-thrower, literally; Trotsky horrified by sporadic violence. Stalin, a hard-headed practical wirepuller, unyieldingly jealous of his career; Trotsky, lover of the abstract, impulsive, vain. Stalin, a supreme organiser; Trotsky, a bad politician, incapable of compromise, very hard to work with. Observe their smiles.

H1645-0450

Stalin smiles like a tiger who has just swallowed the canary. Trotsky smiles brightly and spontaneously like a child. Observe their escapes from Siberia. Stalin went about it sombrely, efficiently, with methodical coldness; Trotsky – puff! – has disappeared into clear air; he escapes like Ariel.

Above and beyond their personal conflict was divergence in political views of extreme importance. The passion of each came to embody cardinally opposed theories of the operation of the Soviet Union. Trotsky's 'Left Opposition' arose out of the doctrine of 'permanent revolution'. He did not believe, as Stalin did, that socialism could succeed in a single state. He believed that the Marxist régime could maintain itself in Russia only if permanent, progressive revolution took place outside.

The Trotskyists were horrified at the way things went after Lenin's death. They thought that the socialisation of the U.S.S.R. was going ahead far too slowly. They feared that Lenin's tactical and temporary concession to capitalist forces, the N.E.P. (New Economic Policy) would continue indefinitely; they thought that communism in Russia itself, with such meagre spoils of victory, would perish without help from proletarian revolution in the external world.

Stalin took the opposite view. He said, in effect, 'You boys outside cool your heels for a couple of decades, then we'll get around to you.' Trotsky said, 'Join your Russian comrades in revolution and free yourself from your chains at once.' Stalin said, 'Russia first. When we get our state in order, then comes your turn.' Trotsky said, 'Whatever country you live in comes first.' Russia, as Stalin saw it, was settling down to the prosaic ardours of married life. But Trotsky, an incorrigible romantic, wanted permanent revolution as a perpetual honeymoon.

Stalin was, of course, right. The very considerable success of the Five-Year Plan proved that. It is easy to be wise after the event. Seven years ago, before Trotsky was expelled from Russia, before the Five-Year Plan got under way, no one could have foreseen the outcome so surely. Great credit to Stalin for his prescience, his 'long view'.

Stalin broke Trotsky and his friends by the same method he subsequently employed to break the 'Right Opposition'

(which thought that the socialisation of Russia was going at too *rapid* a pace). He (1) controlled the party machine, (2) his interpretation of Leninism made all his opponents heretics, and therefore punishable.[1]

Stalin's detestation of Trotsky led him to exaggerated meanness in revenge. Yet his extirpation of Trotsky's name from the official records and school-books, so that unborn generations may hardly know his name, is not as complete as one is led to believe. In his *October Revolution*, which is purchasable anywhere in Russia, Stalin pays tribute, albeit grudgingly, to his enemy. 'Let us admit this, it is impossible to deny that Comrade Trotsky fought well at the time of October' (p. 72).

Stalin hated Trotsky partly, in the complicated way of human beings, because he, Stalin, owes him so much: he stole part of his programme. Trotsky advocated super-industrialisation in the manner of the Five-Year Plan as far back as 1921, and he wanted to expel the kulaks (rich farmers) in 1925, a task which Stalin did not set himself till almost five years later. But that was the trouble. Trotsky, impulsive, demanded these things prematurely, at the wrong time; Stalin had the strength to wait.

And Trotsky never seemed to realise that when Stalin said he could build socialism in a single country, the country was *Russia*, which is not a country at all – but a continent. Nor did it occur to Trotsky that far and away the best single advertisement for world communism, in the future, would be a Russia which was successful, stable, safe.

The Iron Will of Uncle Joe

Of course there was a famine. None can deny this any longer. It occurred in the spring of 1933, in the great grain-producing areas of the U.S.S.R., the North Caucasus and Ukraine. Communists, after preliminary hesitancy, now admit the fact of the famine, though in circumlocutory jargon. For instance, Miss Anna Louise Strong writes (*New Republic*, August 7, 1935), 'There was a serious grain shortage in the

[1] In exile Trotsky founded a 'fourth International'. Oddly enough, it was supported – inadvertently – by *bourgeois* American publishers from whom the bulk of Trotsky's income came.

H1645-0451

H1645-0452

1932 harvest due chiefly to inefficiencies of the organisational period of the new large-scale mechanised farming among peasants unaccustomed to machines.' This is quite a mouthful – a mouthful that the peasants didn't get.

The chief point about the famine is not – it might be said – that several million people died. Chamberlin puts the mortality as high as five or six million. This is too high, other authorities believe. The point is that the Soviet Government was engaged in a tremendous, epochal struggle to socialise the land, for the eventual good of the peasants; the peasants, however, resisted and – terribly enough – suffered. To balk the government, they refused to harvest grain. Therefore they did not have enough to eat. And died.

The inside story of the famine is briefly this. The Five-Year Plan included 'collectivisation' of the peasantry. Russia, overwhelmingly an agrarian country, contained in 1927 almost twenty-five million peasant holdings; Stalin's plan was to unite them into socialised collective farms. The peasants would turn over implements and livestock to a farm manager, and work in common on comparatively large rather than very small holdings, assisted by tractors furnished by the state. This was the idea. On it, the future of socialism in the U.S.S.R. depended.

What happened was that the peasants, bitterly indignant, staged two major resistences to the immense forcible process of collectivisation. First, they slaughtered their livestock, rather than turn it over to the collectives. It was an extraordinary and tragic event – though not so tragic as the human starvation later. There was no organisation among the peasants, no communication; yet in hundreds of villages, separated by hundreds of miles, a *simultaneous* destruction of animals began. Rather than turn over their precious pigs, sheep, cattle, to the collective authorities, the peasants murdered them.

The cost was terrible. Stalin – four years late – admitted it. The agrarian economy of the Soviet Union suffered a blow from which it cannot fully recover till about 1940; it will take till then to replenish the slaughtered stock. For, once the killing began, it progressed till about *fifty per cent* of the animals in the Soviet Union were killed. Official figures admit that the number of horses in the country diminished from

H1645-0453

33,500,000 in 1928 to 19,600,000 in 1932; the number of cattle from 70,500,000 to 40,700,000; sheep and goats from 146,700,000 to 52,100,000; pigs from 25,900,000 to 11,600,000.[1]

The peasants, stunned by this catastrophe, sank into temporary stupor. The government – when the worst of the damage was done – retreated hastily. Probably Stalin had not realised the formidable extent of the slaughter until it was too late. . . .[2] The tempo of collectivisation had been far too rapid. The plan called for full collectivisation only after ten years, but within two years, in 1930, sixty-five per cent of all the farms had been collectivised. So the pace was toned down.

Even so, in 1932, the peasants, stiffening into a final vain protest, rebelled again. As if by underground agreement, another psychic epidemic spread through the rich fields of the Caucasus and Ukraine. The farmers, those still outside the collectives, were paid miserable prices; either they could buy no manufactured goods at all, or goods only of indifferent quality. They hit on a plan. They had sowed the crop, which was abundant; but they decided not to harvest all of it. They harvested exactly what they calculated they would themselves need during the winter, and left the rest to rot. 'What was the use of slaving to produce a handsome crop, if the state simply seized it all?'

This was, of course, mutiny. It was not only defiance of Stalin; it was a threat to starve him into submission. The Soviet Government needed grain to distribute to the industrial regions, the great cities; it needed grain for export, to pay for the machinery it had to import for the Five-Year Plan.

Even the farmers already in the collectives let their grain rot. There were few communist overseers, few trained and loyal farm managers. Word got to Moscow that the harvest, which should have been handsome, was largely lost. Stalin saw that this was a major crisis. If the peasants were permitted

[1] Premier Molotov's speech at the 1934 party congress. (cf. *Socialism Victorious*, p. 394.)

[2] He has learned his lesson, however, and admitted his mistake. New rules introduced in the autumn of 1934 permit individual peasants to keep a limited supply of livestock: one cow, two sheep, four pigs, chicken.

to get away with this, the revolution was beaten. ('Obsolete classes don't voluntarily disappear,' he told Wells.) He had to act. And did.

Government grain collectors descended on the farms, tall with weeds, and seized that small share of the crop that the peasants had saved *for their own use*! One by one, they visited every holding, and took every bit of grain due the government in taxes. If a man's normal crop was, say, sixty bushels, the tax might be twenty bushels. But the farmer had only harvested, say, twenty-five bushels. So when the government took twenty, the farmer and his family had only five – instead of twenty-five – to live on the whole winter and spring.

Russian economy is still extremely primitive. The question of grain, of bread, is a matter of life and death. When there was no grain left, the people began to die. The government might have diverted some grain from the cities – though that was a pinched, hungry year everywhere – to feed the peasants. But the government did not do so. Stalin decided that the peasants must pay the penalty for their rebellion. They had refused, blindly, stupidly, to provide grain; very well, let them starve. And they starved.

Meantime, the kulaks had been liquidated by a more direct process. These were peasants of more than average industry or ability or wealth; the capitalist farmers, 'class enemies on the agrarian front'. In 1928 there were seven hundred and fifty thousand people officially classed as kulaks in the Soviet Union. To-day there are none. They were rooted out like trees, packed into prison trains, dispatched to labour camps in far parts of the country, put to forced labour on building railways, digging canals.

The famine broke the back of peasant resistance in the U.S.S.R. Since the famine collectivisation has proceeded slowly, smoothly. From 1930 to 1935 another twenty-five per cent of the land has been socialised. All but a small fraction of the best arable land in Russia is now organised into about two hundred and fifty thousand farms. The peasants tried to revolt. The revolt might have brought the Soviet Union down. But it collapsed on the iron will of Stalin. The peasants killed their animals, then they killed themselves.

H1645-0454

H1645-0455

Stalin the Human Being

Let no one think that Stalin is a thug. It would be idle to pretend that he could take a chair in fine arts at Harvard; nevertheless his learning is both broad and deep, especially in philosophy and history. One is instinctively tempted to consider this reticent Georgian as a roughneck, a man of instincts and muscle, not of brains. But his speeches quote Plato, Don Quixote, Daudet; he knew all about the monkey trial at Dayton and the composition of Lloyd George's shadow-cabinet and the unionisation of workers in America; in his talk with Wells he showed as much knowledge of Cromwell and the Chartists as Wells himself.

In 1893 he shocked and horrified a deputation of Bolshevik writers by telling them their work was rubbish, because it had no broad basis in general culture. 'Read Shakespeare, Goethe, and the other classics, as I do,' he said.

Nor are his manners bad. He sees visitors only very rarely, but one and all they report his soberness, his respectful attention to their questions, his attempt to put them at their ease. His speeches are full of a curious sort of sardonic courtliness; for instance he refers to capitalists usually as 'Messieurs the *Bourgeoisie*'.[1] He restrains his personal appearances to the minimum; once, during the crucial period of the Five-Year Plan, he made no speech or public appearance for eighteen months. He is the only dictator who is *serene*.

He has a sense of humour, though perhaps it is heavy to western ears; that he has a sense of humour at all differentiates him from Hitler or Mussolini. Shaw reports his keen sense of comedy. Addressing the 1930 congress of the party, he ticked off the Right Opposition of Bukharin and Rykov by asserting that if Bukharin saw a cockroach he proceeded at once to smell catastrophe, foreseeing the end of the Soviet Union in one month. 'Rykov supported Bukharin's theses on the subject,' said Stalin, 'with the reservation, however, that he had a very serious difference with Bukharin, namely that the Soviet Government will perish, in his opinion, not in one month, but in one month and two days.'

[1] Incidentally, an odd point, he sometimes speaks of himself in the third person. cf. *Leninism*, I. 300, and II, 225.

H1645-0456

At the 1934 congress he took time out to deal with those who indulge in the great Russian habit of talkativeness:

> 'I had a conversation with one such comrade, a very respected comrade, but an incorrigible chatterbox, who was capable of submerging any living cause in a flood of talk. Well, here is the conversation:
>
> I: How are you getting on with the sowing?
>
> He: With the sowing, Comrade Stalin? We have mobilised ourselves.
>
> I: Well, and what then?
>
> He: We have put the question bluntly.
>
> I: And what next?
>
> He: There is a turn, Comrade Stalin; soon there will be a turn.
>
> I: But still?
>
> He: We can observe some progress.
>
> I: But for all that, how are you getting on with the sowing?
>
> He: Nothing has come of the sowing as yet, Comrade Stalin.'

Stalin makes occasional pretences to humility. When Wells asked him what he was doing to change the world, he answered mildly, 'Not so very much.' And he concluded the interview by saying, 'Much more could have been done had we Bolsheviks been cleverer.'[1]

Stalin has, however, permitted and encouraged his own virtual deification. Pictures of him share the place of honour everywhere with Lenin. His photograph leaps at one from buildings in Moscow, illuminated at night like theatre advertisements. Worship of him is Byzantine. Obviously he could stop the public expression of adulation very easily. He does not do so. One reason may be his shrewd Orientalism; the flattery, the pictures, are a good political weapon; he knows the Russians understand a master. Or perhaps he likes them.

Private Life

He lives, as is well known, in the Kremlin when he is in Moscow. The Kremlin is not a building but a compound, a walled fortress, containing forty or fifty buildings, churches, barracks, gardens. Stalin lives in three rooms. He does not,

[1] Duranty says that Stalin made him change a phrase in their draft interview, 'inheritor of the mantle of Lenin', to 'faithful servant of Lenin'. A dictator Stalin certainly is, but not a flaming egoist.

H1645-0457

however, as is generally believed, *work* in the Kremlin. The legend that Stalin, a virtual prisoner, stays always within Kremlin walls, is nonsensical. He does much of his daily work outside the Kremlin, in the building of the central committee of the party, on Staraya Ploshad, in the busiest part of Moscow.

Also he spends much time in the country, at his *datcha*, or country villa. This is about an hour from Moscow, in the region of Usova-Arkangelskaya, near the Moskva river. The house belonged to a former millionaire, a gold miner and merchant, who had a persecution complex, and therefore surrounded the ten-acre estate with a heavy wall. Stalin has not torn down the wall.

The region of the *datcha* is, indeed, heavily guarded, and so is the Moscow road leading to it. Stalin usually drives there in three cars, Packards, going very fast; he sits as a rule with the chauffeur, and the position of his car in the procession is changed daily. Picknickers and sightseers in the vicinity are told politely to move on.

Yet Stalin is not as conspicuously guarded as Hitler or Mussolini. He exposes himself much more than they do. He has several times been seen returning to the Kremlin from the Opera on foot, walking with friends through the crowded square. And at least twice a year, on May 1 and November 7, the two great Soviet holidays, Stalin stands on the tomb of Lenin and literally several million people pass him at a range of about fifteen yards.

He cares nothing for pomp or ceremony. He does not wear a uniform, but a dark olive-green jacket buttoned at the neck, riding-breeches, and boots. When he goes out, he wears a cap with a visor. Not an official uniform, this costume has nevertheless been widely imitated throughout most of Russia; the high people in the party, all the sycophants and flatterers, have faithfully copied it, and wear it as a proof of devotion to the chief.

Stalin's usual routine is to work hard for about a week or longer, then go to the *datcha* for two or three days to rest. He has few relaxations, but he likes opera and ballet, and attends the Bolshoi Theatre often; sometimes a movie catches his fancy, and he saw *Chapayev*, a film of the civil wars, four times. He reads a great deal, and plays chess occasionally. He smokes

incessantly, and always a pipe; the gossip in Moscow is that he likes Edgeworth tobacco, but is a little hesitant to smoke publicly this non-Soviet product. At dinner he keeps his pipe lit next to his plate, puffs between courses. He is fond of alcohol, especially brandy, and holds his liquor well.

His attitude to sex is quite normal and healthy. He has married twice. He is rather naïve, apparently. One evening, dropping in to see his friend Karl Radek, he noted on the table a German pseudo-scientific picture-book cloaking pornography as science. Stalin turned the pages idly, saw one of the 'position' illustrations. He turned to his friend: 'Tell me, Radek: do people really do this sort of thing?'

Records of his first wife are lost in the mists of pre-revolutionary days. She died of pneumonia in 1917. In those days love was more or less an instrument of the class war; the old Bolsheviks paid little attention to the forms of marriage. By this first wife, Stalin had a son, now about twenty-five. He has not turned out too well. He did badly at technical school – the rumour has it that he spent most of his time playing billiards with a classmate, the son of Menzhinsky, late head of the G.P.U. – and Stalin, annoyed, packed him off to work in a factory in Tiflis.

In 1919 Stalin dropped in to see an old revolutionary friend in Leningrad, Sergei Alliluiev, (the name means Hallelujah), a locksmith. He met his daughter, a seventeen-year-old girl Nadyezhda (Nadya), and married her. By her he had two children, a boy Vassily, now fourteen, and a girl, Svetlana, nine. Mrs. Stalin entered the Promakademia, or school for industrial arts, in 1929, studying the manufacture of artificial silk. There was no publicity attached to this; she worked like anyone else, and even battled her way into the ordinary street-cars, instead of using a Kremlin Packard. Her ambition was to become head of the rayon trust.

On November 8, 1932, in sudden and seemingly mysterious circumstances, Nadyezhda Alliluiev Stalin died suddenly. She had been seen, apparently in normal health, at the Opera only a few days before. The news of her death was announced without elaboration, and she was buried (not, curiously enough, cremated) in the churchyard of the Convent of New Virgins.

H1645-0458

Reports were quick to spread that she tasted all food prepared for Stalin and had been poisoned. But the facts seem to be that she had been having acute intestinal pains for several days, and had neglected them. She did not wish to trouble her husband with what she thought was a minor ailment. Probably she was somewhat afraid of him. . . . She sought to hide her pain, keep the tough spirit of the Bolsheviks. The ailment was appendicitis, and by the time she admitted she was ill, it was too late, and she died of peritonitis.

Stalin's relation to his younger children is quite paternal, but he has taken pains that in school they are treated exactly as other children. He has never visited the school, which is one of three model schools in Russia; it is called School No. 25, and is on Pimenovsky Street, just off Tverskaya. The boy had seven fairs, five goods, on his last report-card; no very goods or excellents. His best subject was literature.

Money, Attitudes, Friends

Stalin's salary is about 1,000 roubles per month, the equivalent of which, outside Russia in 1935, was about £6 15s. He is completely uninterested in money. Like all the Soviet leaders he is a poor man; no breath of financial scandal has ever touched any of them. Salaries of communists are adjusted by category, this system having replaced the former rule whereby no man in the party could earn more than 225 roubles per month. There is no upward limit; the average is 600. No communist may accept a salary for more than one post, no matter how many he holds; and no member of the party is allowed to retain royalties from books.

On the other hand, Stalin could, like the Czars, eat off gold plate if he so wished. There is no wealth in all of Russia that he could not have, if he wanted it. He lives modestly, but his *datcha* is the Soviet equivalent of the country home of an American millionaire. He has servants, motor-cars, books.

His attitude toward conventional religion is purely negative. His religion, like that of all the dictators, is his work; communism is enough faith for him. Stalin has said, 'The party cannot be neutral toward religion, because religion is something opposite to science.' Nevertheless, it is noteworthy that he permitted his wife an almost orthodox religious

H1645-0459

burial. He is the only dictator who may be said thoroughly to have read the Bible; he did so, of course, in his seminary days.

He has few friends. Voroshilov and Kaganovitch are the two closest. He is on thee-and-thou footing with old colleagues in the party, but it is hard to address him intimately because there is no ordinary diminutive for Yosif, his Christian name. People who know him well call him 'Yosif Visarionovitch'; others simply say *Tovarish* (Comrade) Stalin. He has no title. Secretaries or interpreters show no fear of him. They are excited, perhaps, if they have never seen him before, but not afraid. There is no grovelling around Stalin. And he can stand criticism.

He seldom sees outsiders. William C. Bullitt, the American Ambassador, dined with him once. Until Bullitt arrived in Moscow, Stalin had never received a foreign diplomat; even Lord Chilston, the British Ambassador, had not met him until Anthony Eden's visit in the spring of 1935. Retiring, uncommunicative, in eighteen years he has seen only seven journalists – two Germans, two Japanese, three Americans – for formal interviews.

He 'received' Bullitt in typical and indirect fashion. Voroshilov had arranged a dinner-party, and Stalin simply dropped in. He was cheery and cordial, toasted everybody around the table, talked with great intelligence and knowledge of America, and relaxed, smoking his pipe, while the commissars sat at piano, singing songs almost like brothers in a fraternity.

Lately Stalin has given evidence that he may come out of his shell. He visited the new Metro unannounced; he spoke over the radio recently for the first time; he has even kissed babies – final concession to popularity – in the Culture Park. When he received Eden, Laval, and Beneš in the spring and summer of 1935, he jointly signed the communiqués with Molotov.

This may be partly explained by his growing popularity. He is not loved, as Lenin was loved, but as the revolution grows more successful, as the standard of living rises, even rigid non-communists are being won over. The new subway in Moscow brought forth many half-unwilling grunts of ap-

H1645-0460

proval from the population; the attitude was, 'Guess the fellow has something to him after all.'

Also, Stalin has taken a new tack lately, as defender of the people's rights, the champion of men as men – even non-party men. In May 1935, he denounced the 'heartless bureaucracy' and said that 'first of all we must learn to value *people*, to value cadres, to value every worker capable of benefiting our common cause. It is time to realise that of all the valuable capital the world possesses, the most value and decisive is people.'

As a symbol of the former contempt for men, which he deplored, Stalin told this little story:

> 'I recall an incident in Siberia, where I was at one time in exile. It was in the spring, at the time of the spring floods. About thirty men went to the river to pull out timber which had been carried away by the vast, swollen river. Towards evening they returned to the village, but with one comrade missing. When asked where the thirtieth man was, they unconcernedly replied that the thirtieth man had "remained there". To my question, "How do you mean, remained there?" they replied with the same unconcern, "Why ask – drowned, of course." And thereupon one of them began to hurry away, saying, "I have got to go and water the mare." When I reproached them for having more concern for animals than for men, one of them, amid the general approval of the rest, said, "Why should we be concerned about men? We can always make men. But a mare – just try and make a mare."'

But this concession to humanity comes very late, after terrible struggles, terrible sacrifices. If Stalin can relax now and search for human values, well and good. But his historical mission was quite different. Stalin is the man who took over the Russian revolution and made it work. Human values temporarily collapsed. He is the creator of the iron age, the genius of the Five-Year Plan, the man who, by industrialising Russia, made socialism possible in a single state.

H1645-0461

H1645-0462

CHAPTER XXXIII

MEN AROUND STALIN

'Among the masses of the people, we (the communists) are but drops in the ocean, and we will be able to govern only when we properly express that which the people appreciate. Without this the communist party will not lead the proletariat, the proletariat will not take the lead of the masses, and the whole machine will fall to pieces.'

– LENIN.

'The mills of our revolution grind well.'

– STALIN.

You may not know the names of the men in this chapter, these men around Stalin. They are not morphiniacs, hysterics, thugs, adventurers for personal power, cynics, or neurotic misfits. But Kaganovitch is as important to Russia as Goering is to Germany; Molotov, Ordzhonikidze, Chubar, Mikoyan, Voroshilov, are as noteworthy in their way as Goebbels, Himmler, Frick, or Hess. They have no genius for personal publicity. Their personalities hardly exist. They are servants of the state, able, disinterested, conscientious; they exist only for their jobs, and they do their jobs superlatively well.

Many of these men – who rule one-sixth the land surface of the globe – were workmen with their hands, manual labourers, fifteen or twenty years ago. Of the ten present members of the Politburo, four never went to school at all; not one has a university education. This may account, incidentally, for much of the subsidiary confusion in Russian business affairs – the red tape, bureaucracy, lack of technique, lack of facility. Even so, a neutral diplomat in Moscow, in a position to know, told me that he thought the members of the Politburo were personally as able as any governing body in the world.

The lives of most of Stalin's men follow a similar pattern. They were workmen who turned revolutionary, and all but the youngest of them have a history, like Stalin, of underground political activity. The most important fact in their

lives was the date when they entered the communist party; as a rule, their hierarchical position depends on this. Several have been in prison, and their prison sentences are proud badges of distinction.

'Their penal servitude is not a stigma,' wrote a well-informed anonymous commentator,[1] 'but a token of their new nobility. They are proud of their criminal record as the emblem of their new aristocracy. Yet the leaders of the Bolshevist régime are "good" men in the most ominous meaning of that word. They are fanatics with a single track mind. . . . The comparison with the early Church militant and the Jesuit order is irresistible. The Bolsheviks are latter-day saints and crusaders, but of a material not a spiritual world, and they are the most thorough-going reformers and moralists in history – in their own way. Some of them drink, some have mistresses, but their morality is of another kind. They are the first autocratic rulers in history who do not use their power for personal profit. They do not graft; those who do get shot. They have no castles, no titles, no purple robes; they live in a couple of rooms on a standard below that of an American bricklayer; they are pledged to personal poverty and service.'

Of course, careerism may become a career in itself; abolish property as a social motive, and a substitute immediately arises – power. The highest public reward a communist may receive is having a town or – more often – a factory named for him.[2] But power is dear to all men, even Bolsheviks. Instead of wealth, communists are apt to measure ambition in terms of jobs, power.

Out of the Central Committee of the party, numbering seventy-seven members and sixty-eight alternates, the Politburo is chosen, its supreme organ. There are ten regular members of the Politburo, four alternates. They are friends; they have a common background, common aims; and they are the central directorate of the Soviet Union. Technically, Stalin has no more voice than other members.

Members of the Politburo put on a sort of show at every congress of the party. They take the stage and hold a public

[1] In *Not to be Repeated*, New York, 1932.

[2] cf. Kaganovitch Ball-Bearing Plant, near Moscow; Molotov Automobile Factory, in Gorki (formerly Nizhni-Novgorod).

H1645-0463

meeting before the audience of party members. Within the iron circumscription of 'the party line', argument, disagreement, discussion may be very lively. Members of the Politburo interrupt each other vigorously; the audience is entitled to heckle, and often does. The analogy would be for a British cabinet meeting to be held in the House of Commons, with backbenchers entitled to join free and vehement discussion.

The Politburo is not, however, the cabinet. A Politburo member may also be a cabinet member. But most cabinet ministers have not reached the dizzy height of Politburo membership. Cabinet ministers are *government* officials; Politburo members are *party* officials. Cabinet ministers in the Soviet Union have purely administrative functions, with no voice in the general sphere of political policy and management, unless they are members of the Politburo too.

Trotsky, Zinoviev, Kamenev, Bukharin, were all members of the Politburo – once. But these flaming names have crumbled into party dust. The age of the intellectuals is over, the age of brilliant but doctrinaire visionaries. The men whom Stalin wants are technicians, organisers, men of practical action.

Two Politburo men are Georgians (Stalin and Ordzhonikidze); one, Mikoyan, is an Armenian; one Kaganovitch, is a Jew; one alternate member (Rutzutak) is a Lett; the others are Russian, of various breeds. It is frequently alleged that Russia is run by Jews. Nothing could be further from the truth. All the Jews except Kaganovitch (a comparative new-comer) are out: Trotsky (whose real name was Bronstein), Zinoviev (Apfelbaum), and Kamenev (Rosenfeld). Litvinov is a Jew, but he is not a member of the Politburo.

The Politburo is assembled with great care and skill, so that its members form a sort of interlocking net over Soviet activity. No neater system of ramifying authority has ever been devised. This was part of Stalin's slow, laborious effort to get all the threads in his own hands. Every member of the Politburo is a member of the Central Executive Committee of the U.S.S.R. Suppose we go through the Politburo man by man, and see how it is 'packed'.

First there is Molotov. He is president of the council of people's commissars, in other words prime minister. Thus

H1645-0464

the functions of the cabinet are focused from the Politburo. He is also president of STO, the Council of Labour and Defence, probably the most powerful official government organ in the U.S.S.R.

Next there is Kalinin. He is the president of the central executive committee of the R.S.F.S.R. (Russia proper) and senior president of the central executive committee of the U.S.S.R. – thus the top dignitary of the country. He carries to the Politburo the outward symbol of government.

Next – my order is purely arbitrary – there is Voroshilov, the minister of war. He brings to the Politburo the Red Army. Ordzhonikidze, another member, is commissar of heavy industry, which likewise fits neatly in the Politburo fold. Mikoyan is food commissar. Kaganovitch is boss of transportation. Chubar, forecast as Molotov's eventual successor, is vice-president of both the cabinet and STO.

Kossior, another member, is predominantly a party man, and a very important one, because he is the boss of the Ukraine. Zhdanov, an alternate, is party boss in Leningrad, in succession to Kirov, who was murdered. Another alternate, Eikhe, was boss of East Siberia. And Andreyev, another party man (though for a time he was commissar of railways) is, like Stalin, a secretary of the party, and – if necessary! – can bring the machine itself into line.

Attention to this list shows two strange omissions. No man from the G.P.U. (secret police) is in the Politburo, and no man representative of the field of foreign affairs. Another point is the comparative youth of all the members except Kalinin, who is sixty. Kaganovitch is forty-two, Voroshilov fifty-four, Molotov forty-five, Chubar forty-four, Andreyev and Mikoyan only forty. The average age is 46.7.[1] It is far and away the youngest group of men of such illimitable power in the world.

White Hope of the Jews

Toward the end of 1935 the greatest shortage in the Soviet Union was not of bread, or houses, or newsprint, or textile fabrics – but of railway tickets. A British diplomat I know was stranded in the Crimea and unable to return to Moscow for some days, simply because he could not buy transportation

[1] Compare average age of the British cabinet, which is 55·5·

H1645-0465

H1645-0466

on the trains. The reason was that Lazar Moiseyvitch Kaganovitch had been appointed by Stalin to reform the Soviet railway system, expedite essential shipments of grain and freight. Kaganovitch did the job with his accustomed thoroughness. Passengers may have to wait, but daily freight loadings increased thirty-one per cent, from fifty-six thousand in February to seventy-four thousand at the end of August.

The railways were in such a mess because the rolling stock was antiquated, trackage – over such enormous distances – was insufficient, and the personnel slovenly. In 1934 there were sixty-two thousand 'mishaps', some of them serious wrecks, on the Soviet railway system. Engineers and switchmen convicted of carelessness were shot. This was no remedy – it simply made the survivors nervous and caused more wrecks – and Kaganovitch stopped it.

It is quite a habit of Stalin to give Kaganovitch all the hardest jobs. He was appointed head of the Moscow Soviet and also chief of the party organisation in Moscow to clear this most important of Tammany Halls of Trotskyists: his Moscow machine became the strongest in the Soviet Union. He built the Moscow Subway, a feat of no mean substance. And it was he who was charged by Stalin with enforcing the grain collections in the tragic autumn of 1932; he took city workers and Red Army men out into the fields, seized every *pood* of wheat the government could claim.

Kaganovitch is black-haired, black-moustached, tall and powerful in physique, somewhat melodramatic in facial features. He is the best orator in the Soviet Union, and he inherits something of Trotsky's magnetism. He is the only member of the Politburo the report of whose speeches are punctuated with the remarks 'Laughter', or 'Loud Laughter'.

He has, indeed, a considerable gift for pungent comedy. His speech to the last party congress was devoted largely to an attack on faulty management, bureaucracy, inefficiency. He mentioned that the People's Commissariat of Agriculture had twenty-nine boards and two hundred and two sectors. (A voice: 'Oh! Oh!') Kaganovitch went on, 'That's nothing. Each sector manages the whole of the U.S.S.R.' (Laughter.)

He made great play by describing two officials in a rope

factory, one named Neoslabny (the word in Russian means 'indefatigable'), the other Prelestnikov ('charming'). One was in charge of the knot-tying department, the other of the knot-untying department. As one tied knots, the other untied them (laughter). . . . And he mentioned a government department known as the Sector for the Supervision of Fulfilment of Decisions, which took five months to perform a job it should have done in five days. The initials of this department form the Russian equivalent of the word S.L.E.E.P. Kaganovitch mentioned this, and brought the house down.

'The plan for the Red Dawn Knitted Goods Mills,' said Kaganovitch, 'was examined in five different commissariats and boards, and also in forty-six sectors. The mills received nineteen different sets of instructions every one of which contradicted all the others. The plans were altered over and over again. The result was that the factory worked without any plan. The plan for 1933 was finally endorsed on January 4, 1934. The plan for 1933 was only one year and four days late.' (Laughter.)

He is merciless in flaying inefficiency. On one occasion he caustically described an order for 'haberdashery' which included dog-collars – and enough dog-collars 'to clothe all the dogs in the region in collars from head to foot' – and a shipment of tons of lamp burners without lamp glasses, lamp glasses without lamp burners.

Kaganovitch: 'And so the red tape is spun out.'

Stalin (interrupting): 'And then the document is put in the files.'

'The Central Committee, the members of the Politburo, the leader of our party, Comrade Stalin, do not criticise in order that after the congress things may remain as they were before,' Kaganovitch concluded. 'Either you really manage to mobilise the apparatus in order to fulfil the task set by the party, or the party will do it over your head.'

The details of Kaganovitch's life are interesting in that they so typically represent the careers of many younger communists. He was born in the Ukraine in 1893, and had only two years of elementary school, then went to work for a living, first as an ordinary factory labourer, then as an apprentice saddler. He entered the party in 1911, and fought through the civil wars.

H1645-0467

He held party posts in Samara, Nizhni-Novgorod, and Turkestan, and in 1922 attracted Stalin's attention, to become chief of the party organisation in the Ukraine. Stalin brought him to Moscow in 1928.

When he became commissar for ways of communication (the official name of the railways job) he had to give up his presidency of the Moscow Soviet. But he has plenty of other positions. He is a member of the Politburo of the party, of the organisation bureau, and of the central committee. He is on the presidium of the Central Executive Committee of the U.S.S.R. and of the R.S.F.S.R. And he is an executive of the Red Trade Unions, and of STO, the council for labour and defence.

His sister is – or was – a close friend of Stalin's, not an unimportant point.

Boss of the Red Army

Kleminti Efremovich Voroshilov, the chief military man of the Soviet Union, is minister of war. He was born of a workman's family, like Kaganovitch, and he went to work in a mine at the age of *six*. He never went to school. Talk of self-made men! Born in 1881, he joined the party as early as 1903, and thus ranks among the veterans. As a boy he was arrested for refusing to take off his hat to a Czarist officer. Then began his career as an active revolutionary; in the revolution of 1905 he was chairman of the soviet of workers deputies in Lugansk.

He lived, like Stalin, half underground till 1917. Then he organised the first red detachments in the civil wars in the Ukraine. He became commander first of the fifth Ukrainian Army, then of the tenth, and in 1919 was appointed leader of cavalry for the whole Soviet Union. In 1924–1925 he was commander of the Moscow military district. He was on Stalin's side, not Trotsky's, and when the war commissarship became vacant, Stalin saw that Voroshilov got it. His country house is in the neighbourhood of Stalin's, and the two are very close friends.

Voroshilov is the most popular leader in the Soviet Union. He is not ambitious, not a politician, and his personality is pleasing. He is blond, short in the waist, and looks almost like a cherub. He is not an intriguer, not a wirepuller; no fanatic,

H1645-0468

no intellectual; an idealist: the most personable of the commissars.

When Trotsky, mounted in the Red Square, reviewed troops, the crowd cried 'What a man!' When Voroshilov does it, they cry, 'What a horse!' So the joke goes. But in fact Voroshilov is very popular in the army. He is not a notably strict disciplinarian, but his men respect him because he allows no cliques or favouritism; he is the guardian of fair play. Also, he is a crack shot, and his sharpshooters like to think that their chief is as good as they are.

He is too easy-going to be very quick-witted. At the last party congress he rambled on, speaking of difficulties in transport. 'Which difficulties are greater,' he asked, 'the subjective or the objective? Undoubtedly the subjective ones are greater. In what do they consist? In disorganisation and in the absence of elementary discipline. I don't know if I am revealing secrets. . . .' (Laughter and applause.)

Quick as a bee, Kaganovitch, on the platform, caught this break. He interrupted: 'Even if you did reveal something, we would not have the right to forbid revelations at the party congress. . . .'

Voroshilov may be slow in speech, but he has all the jargon pat. He calls the kulaks working at forced labour the 'army of heroic canal diggers'.

His main difficulty as the man responsible for the defence of the Soviet Union is transport. Thus it is a good thing that he works on terms of the greatest cordiality and intimacy with Kaganovitch, though they might easily be rivals. Backwardness in transportation is one of the reasons for the abnormal size of the Soviet army, nine hundred and forty thousand men – the largest standing army in the world. It is really two armies, one in the east (Manchuria), one in the west, on the Polish border. Both armies are necessary, because in the event of war the immense distances in Russia and Siberia, plus inefficiency and inadequacy of the railway system, would make the transfer of even one division from front to front a long, laborious process.

The Red Army is one of the ablest in the world. It is strong in man power, full of gusto and spirit, well equipped, well led. It is more highly mechanised than any army in Europe. In

H1645-0469

1929 its average mechanised horsepower per man was 2.6; in 1930, 3.7, and in 1933 – 7.74. This figure beats those of France, Great Britain, and, it is believed, Germany. Moreover, according to Voroshilov, seventy per cent of Red Army personnel are 'technicians'.

The Other Incomparable Max

'When Litvinov comes here, Roosevelt must stand firm on one point. We cannot recognise Soviet Russia until it acknowledges and repudiates its debts in the good, sound, capitalist way.'

– (HOWARD BRUBAKER – before American recognition of the U.S.S.R.)

This unpluckable burr in the flesh of western Europe, this man who had the temerity to go to a disarmament conference and really suggest disarmament, has become such a stable citizen in the past few years – so portly, so well-groomed, so worldly-wise and diplomatically substantial – that one is apt to forget his origins and early years. Maxim Maximovitch Litvinov has not always been known as Maxim Maximovitch Litvinov. At one time or other he owned the following *noms de révolution* – Papasha; Felike; David Mordecai Finkelstein; Litvinov Harrison; Luvinye; M. G. Harrison; Gustav Graf. And his real name is Moysheev Vallakh.

Litvinov, the cleverest foreign minister alive, was born in 1876 in Bialystok, then in Russia, now part of Poland. He came of a *bourgeois* Jewish family and received a regular high school education. He was drafted into the Czarist army – a little known fact – and served five years as a common soldier. His army experience turned him into a revolutionary, and in 1901 he was arrested and sentenced to exile in Siberia. As slippery physically then as he is diplomatically now, he escaped while *en route* to prison and fled to Switzerland. He met Lenin, and in 1903 joined the party.

For a considerable interval his life was, like that of Stalin, compact of revolutionary adventure, lucky escapes, long and patient hours of research and preparation, political conspiracy, wile and counterwile, and enough colourful episode to fill a movie. He returned illegally to Russia and after the collapse of the 1905 revolution was entrusted with shipping contraband arms to a secret depot on the island of Nargan, near Reval.

H1645-0470

1906 he spent more tranquilly editing the legal newspaper *New Life* in St. Petersburg. In 1907 adventure called again; he was the agent sent abroad by the revolutionary party to market the notes and bonds Stalin had procured for the movement in the bank raid at Tiflis. Litvinov got to Paris with the revolutionary booty, disposed of it, and later was expelled from France. He returned to Russia briefly. Then he went to London and lived in exile, close to Lenin, for almost ten years.

His life was brilliantly dual. By day he was a publisher's clerk, seemingly absorbed in the highly *bourgeois* routine of reading manuscript, correcting proof, making out accounts; by night a philosopher, a revolutionary, amongst the *émigrés*. He earned his living first in the publishing house, then as a purchasing agent for – of all things – a German electrical and munitions firm, the Siemens-Schuckert Company. So came his bread and butter. The food of his soul came from Lenin.

Immediately the Bolshevik revolution occurred in 1917 Litvinov was appointed the plenipotentiary representative of the Soviets in Great Britain. But in August 1918 he was arrested and imprisoned as hostage for Bruce Lockhart, the British Agent whom the Bolsheviks had jailed in Moscow. Lockhart was presently released, and Litvinov returned to the U.S.S.R., becoming a member of the collegium of the Narkomindel (foreign office). He was assistant commissar under Chicherin till 1930, since then commissar.

Litvinov's years from 1918 to 1935 were packed with incessant travel, incessant negotiation. The record of his trips and treaties is prodigious. In 1918 he visited Stockholm. in 1919 Reval, in 1920 Copenhagen, in 1921 Reval again, arranging shrewd post-War settlements. He went to Genoa and the Hague in 1922, as member of Soviet delegations, and also made the agreement with the American Relief Commission. In 1925 he concluded commercial treaties with Germany and Norway; in 1926 he began his annual explosive visits to the disarmament *pourparlers* at Geneva, and provoked the successive amusement, indignation, rage, and finally respect of the western powers. He went to Washington in 1933 to negotiate recognition between America and the U.S.S.R.; and in 1934 he saw Soviet Russia into the League of Nations.

Litvinov is fat. He speaks English with a heavy accent.

H1645-0471

His chief quality is an inveterate stubbornness in argument, which arises from his unvaryingly consistent point of view, plus an elasticity and sense of style in negotiation that few statesmen in Europe can equal. More and more, he is sought on Geneva commissions for all sorts of business, because his stubborn and wary intelligence makes him useful in every kind of tangle.

In 1915, while he was in exile in London, Litvinov married the celebrated Ivy, niece of Sir Sidney Low. She is the first lady of the Soviets, hostess at the official receptions which Litvinov gives as foreign minister. It is not an asset to him that his wife is an Englishwoman. She caused a minor tempest when, some years ago, she wrote for a Berlin newspaper a feuilleton describing with admiration some of the pleasant things about Berlin – the wide clean streets, bright shop-windows, and so forth. The Bolshevik Press in Moscow saw it and stormed at Litvinov for harbouring a little *bourgeois* in the home.

Their family life is happy, if record of the telephone conversation he had with her from Washington to Moscow is any indication. Let those who believe that Bolsheviks eat babies for breakfast listen in:

L. Hello.
Ivy. Hello, darling. I can hear you beautifully.
L. Speak slowly, will you?
Ivy. Where are you?
L. In the White House. . . . President Roosevelt asked me to give you his regards.
Ivy. Thank you very much, regards to him. . . . Mischa would like to say a word to you.
L. Mischa is with you? Hello, Mischa. How are your studies?
Mischa. Very nice. How are you, papa?
L. What kind of weather are you having?
Ivy. Beautiful, clear snow. . . . How is everything in the delegation – all well?
L. Yes.
Ivy. When shall we see you? . . .
L. Love and kisses. Good-bye.

Litvinov is not as important inside Russia as out. He is regarded as a technician, almost as an engineer; a man whose knowledge of foreign affairs and skill and experience in nego-

H1645-0472

tiation make him indispensable as a specialist. He is not, as I have mentioned, a member of the Politburo. In fact, he did not even become a member of the Central Committee of the communist party till the eighteenth party congress, in February 1934. There are seventy-one members to this committee. So, from the strict hierarchical point of view, Litvinov was, until last year, not one of the seventy-one men who really rule Soviet Russia.

Females of the Species

Ivy Litvinov is rather untypical of Soviet women, because she has no job herself. Stalin's wife worked. So do several other important men's wives, and many women, quite in their own right, have established successful careers. In no country in Europe is it so easy for a woman of intelligence and character to make good outside the home.

The wives of Rosengoltz (head of the foreign trade commissariat), Bubnov (minister of education in the R.S.F.S.R.), and Krylenko (minister of justice) have jobs. Madame Bubnov is a saleswoman in a Torgsin store, i.e. shop where goods are sold for foreign currency. The wife of Kalinin, president of the U.S.S.R., is manager of a state farm near Novosibirsk. Molotov's wife, Pauline Semyonova Zhemchuzhna, is head of the Soviet trust which manufactures powder, rouge, lipstick.

Nadiezda Kroupskaya, Lenin's widow, lives and works in the Kremlin still; she is assistant commissar of education in the R.S.F.S.R. Madame V. N. Yakovleva is minister of finance in the R.S.F.S.R. – one of the most important and strenuous jobs in the world to be held by a woman. Pelegeya Yakovlevna Voronova, a party member since 1917 and a former textile worker, is assistant commissar for light industry for the U.S.S.R. A veteran Bolshevik, Klavdiya Ivanovna Nikolaeva, formerly a workwoman in a factory, member of the party since 1909, is chief of division of propaganda and mass work of the central committee of the party. Madame Alexandra Kollontay is Soviet minister to Sweden.

As a rule leading Bolsheviks do not, except among intimates, go out with their wives; for that matter, they seldom entertain or receive formal entertainment themselves. Women do not participate in social activity unless by reason of their own

H1645-0473

H1645-0474

merit of position. No outsider can recall ever having seen Kaganovitch's wife, or Voroshilov's. No one pays attention. The matter of marriage is not of sufficient importance to be inserted in the party Who's Who.

Kalinin

Michael Ivanovitch Kalinin, born in 1875 in the province of Tver, son of a peasant, was sent off to work for his living at the age of sixteen, as a stable boy and second footman on the near-by estate of a wealthy aristocrat. He migrated to St. Petersburg, became a factory workman there. He joined the party in 1898. To-day he is chairman of the All-Union Central Executive Committee, and thus 'President of Russia'.

His titular importance is greater than his actual power. Yet his influence, particularly on Stalin personally, is apt to be underestimated; his opinion carries weight, especially in matters concerning the peasants. Kalinin, a peasant himself, who still wears peasant clothes, is an authority on agrarian life, and the peasants trust him. It is Kalinin who, as formal head of the Soviet Union, receives diplomats when they present themselves at the Kremlin.

Kalinin announced Lenin's death. Duranty's description of his speech and the emotion it evoked should be imperishable.

Molotov

When I was in Moscow in 1928, Molotov had recently become a member of the Politburo, and scarcely anyone knew his name. He was predominantly a party man, 'Stalin's shadow', and his function in the Politburo seemed to be to watch party affairs. One by one the giants of those days, Rykov and Bukharin and Tomsky, were dismissed; and in the twinkling of a shadow, it seemed, the inconspicuous Molotov had become chairman of the council of people's commissars, the job he still holds – prime minister.

Rykov, his predecessor as premier, was the single leading Bolshevik with a university education; and Molotov never went even to grammar school. Bukharin[1] was a dazzling

[1] Rykov and Bukharin have been reinstated to important jobs, but they have not been readmitted to the Politburo. Rykov is a cabinet minister; Bukharin is editor of *Izvestia*.

theoretician, orator, writer of polemics; and Molotov, as Lenin called him, was 'the best filing clerk in the Soviet Union'. But Stalin knew the kind of man he wanted. He liked Molotov for several reasons. For one thing, he had like Stalin himself, stuck it out inside Russia during the long underground period, never once having retreated to easy exile.

'Molotov' is a pseudonym, like Stalin; it means 'hammer'. His real name is Vlacheslav V. Skriabin. He was born in 1890 of a workers family, and entered the party in 1906. In February 1917 he was chairman of the Bolshevik faction of the Petrograd soviet. From that time on he has had the full confidence of Stalin. It is quite likely that he might take precedence over Kaganovitch or Voroshilov if Stalin died, and so – behind his back – people call him 'the Czarevitch'.

He has a fine forehead, and looks and acts like a French professor of medicine – orderly, precise, a bit pedantic. His importance is sometimes not appreciated; he is by no means a mere figurehead, but a man of first-rate intelligence and influence. Molotov is a vegetarian and a teetotaller. Stalin gives him much of the dirty work to do.[1] He had the nasty job of admitting how many cattle and hogs were killed by the peasants before the famine.

Other Leaders of the Soviets

Grigori (Sergo) Konstantinovitch Ordzhonikidze is a Georgian, close to Stalin, and commissar of heavy industry. He was born in 1886, and educated in the primary schools of Tiflis; he joined the party in 1903. His department bore the brunt of the industrial end of the Five-Year Plan; for that reason, perhaps, it housed more jealousy and bureaucracy than other ministries; it suffered from lack of experts, a shortage in personnel. Next to Voroshilov, he is the most personable of Stalin's men. On one of his Siberian imprisonments, he met and married an Eskimo woman, and still lives with her. He and Voroshilov are very close friends. He is a good organiser, and has held an unusual number of important jobs: commissar of labour and peasant inspection, vice-president of the

[1] As Hitler, for instance, made Hess give the first apologia for the events of June 30.

H1645-0475

H1645-0476

cabinet, president of the supreme council of national economy, chairman of the control commission of the party.

Quite a different type of personality and career is represented by Karl Benardovitch Radek, the best known Soviet writer on foreign affairs. He was dismissed from the party in 1925 for Trotskyism, and only readmitted in 1930. He is not a member of the Politburo; nevertheless his influence in his field is considerable – Stalin, for instance, consults him often on foreign issues. Radek is a Pole, born in Lvov, Galicia, in 1885, who began party activity in 1901. After the usual vicissitudes in Russia he settled in Berlin in 1907 and with Rosa Luxembourg founded the left wing of the German social democratic party. He laboured for international communism in Switzerland, Berlin, and Stockholm.

Most of the other leaders follow the same pattern. Poverty in youth; self-education; manual labour; revolutionary activity; punishment before 1917 and success thereafter, plus murderously hard work and untiring, unfaltering devotion, obsession, to the cause. Any of a dozen men deserve detailed mention – but their careers vary only in detail. Let us give a line to one or two.

A. A. Andreyev, youthful and energetic, is a Politburo member and also one of the secretaries of the party; he is only forty. He has been on the central committee of the party since 1922. His father was a janitor; he had only two years of schooling.

Andrei Sergeievitch Bubnov was the man who organised the work of education in the Red Army, so that it is now only one per cent illiterate. V. V. Chubar, once a mechanic, a party member since 1907, is vice-president of the cabinet. Robert Indrikhovitch Eikhe has been a farm hand, ship's stoker, miner, and locksmith – and is now an alternate in the Politburo. Anastasi Ivanovitch Mikoyan, an Armenian, member of the Politburo and people's commissar for the food industry, was the son of a Tiflis labourer.

And look at Y. E. Rudzutak, son of a peasant worker in Latvia, once a full member of the Politburo, now an alternate, and still very close to Stalin; he was a mechanic in a tool factory. P. P. Postyshev, an alternate in the Politburo and a party member since 1904, is an electrician by trade. Stanislav Kossior, the boss of the Ukraine, was a manual labourer. Russia

is a workman's state, and workmen make it work. Andrei Alexandrovitch Zhdanov, in the party since 1915, new head of the Leningrad organisation, was born in 1896, son of a school-teacher. Finally one should mention V. I. Mezhlauk, president of the state planning commission, the man behind the Five-Year Plans, and one of his first assistants, V. V. Osinski, a brilliant economist and organiser. They are not yet in the Politburo, but Mezhlauk especially – an attractive personality – is one of the most important men in Russia.

The Gay-Pay-Oo.

A vast lot of nonsense has been written about the G.P.U. Of course, terror played a considerable role in the evolution of the U.S.S.R., and the Gay-Pay-Oo, the secret police, was the instrument of terror. Stalin himself has defined its function in no uncertain terms:

> 'The G.P.U. is the punitive organ of the Soviet government: it is more or less similar to the Committee of Public Safety which existed during the great French revolution. It punishes primarily spies, plotters, terrorists, bandits, speculators, forgers. It is something in the nature of a military political tribunal set up for the purpose of protecting the interests of the revolution from attacks on the part of counter-revolutionary bourgeoisie and their agents.'
>
> – (*Leninism*, I. p. 419.)

Note well that the G.P.U. has powers, not merely to arrest, but, as Stalin admits, to punish. It is judge, jury, executioner, all in one. And, as Fischer says, it possessed rights and prerogatives within itself like no other Soviet body, and sometimes 'used them to excess'.

But, on the other hand, the G.P.U. is not exclusively a political police. One hears mostly stories of its melodramatic activities. It is much more, however, than a force that engages in espionage and shoots traitors. The G.P.U. numbers about two hundred thousand picked men, and is in a sense a superior cadre of the Red Army; it guards frontiers, patrols railways, and the like. Probably not five per cent of the entire organisation is utilised in secret service.

The terror in Russia is an agent of social aims, as the Bolsheviks put it. Better to kill a few people – even if by chance they

H1645-0477

are innocent – than risk a counter-revolution in which many thousands may die, and which might kill the Soviet experiment. There is a big streak of the Oriental in Russians, with a concomitant Oriental contempt for the value of individual life. Moreover, one should not forget that the Bolsheviks drew a terrible lesson from the Paris Commune, when thirty thousand communards were executed by the reaction.

Provided you were not, in the pre-1932 days, a kulak, or today an obvious counter-revolutionary, the G.P.U. will pay little attention to you. In many cases, communists are more afraid of the G.P.U. than non-communists. The G.P.U. watches comrades within the party, checking their every thought and gesture, more closely than the ordinary law-abiding citizen outside the party. But if you are a member of a 'condemned class' – you are out of luck.

The first leader of the G.P.U. was a friend of Lenin's named Dzherzhinsky, a Pole of enormous ability and fanaticism. He was a policeman-mystic, one of the most extraordinary characters of modern times. He died, to be succeeded by a more commonplace man, Menzhinsky. When Menzhinsky in turn died, his place was taken by G. G. Yagoda.

This Yagoda was – and is – a dangerous wirepuller and careerist. A watchmaker by trade, and a party member since 1907, he is the least attractive of the commissars. He has been in the G.P.U. from the beginning. Stalin had no special fondness for Yagoda. Fischer (see the *Nation*, 'Behind the Kirov Executions', two remarkable articles, May 8 and 15, 1935), says that Stalin disliked him, tried to sidetrack him, and only reluctantly acceded to his appointment. Stalin is all powerful – yes – but sometimes he has to use men he would rather be without.

The G.P.U. had become a bit of nuisance to the Kremlin. It had stupidly arrested foreign engineers, and shocked foreign public opinion by wanton slaughter of Russian professors and intellectuals accused of 'sabotage'. It had failed to uncloak for many years the activities of a remarkable spy named Konar, a Polish agent who, miracle of miracles, succeeded in becoming Soviet Assistant Commissar of Agriculture. Stalin, swallowing Yagoda, decided to curtail the powers of the G.P.U. Therefore, on July 10, 1934, it was reorganised with considerably restricted authority; the name G.P.U. disappeared; it was

H1645-0478

no longer allowed to impose the death penalty without trial; and its title was changed to 'Commissariat of Home Affairs'.

Six months later, on December 1, 1934, Stalin's best friend Sergei Mironovich Kirov, member of the Politburo and boss of Leningrad, was shot and killed by a communist assassin – the first assassination or attempted assassination of a Bolshevik notability since Fanny Kaplan's shooting of Lenin in 1918. This gave the G.P.U. chance to reassert itself – unpleasantly.

. . . . . .

Stalin heard the news and took the first train to Leningrad, Voroshilov accompanying him. Panic struck Moscow. The Soviet Union had a bad attack of nerves. Kirov's assassin, it was discovered, was not a 'White', but a communist himself, a young man named Leonid Nikolaiev. The heads of the G.P.U. in Leningrad were jailed for negligence. Nikolaiev was questioned, tried, and with thirteen alleged accomplices, shot.

The reason for Kirov's assassination was a confused *mélange* of personal and political forces. Nikolaiev had been dismissed from the communist party in one of its periodic purges, then, after a brief stay in the wilderness, reinstated. He was a theorist, a radical, and apparently he had objected with some heat to the growing development of 'socialist inequality'. This item we shall discuss in the next chapter. Besides he had personal differences with Kirov, who, it seemed, did not keep a promise to get him a better job.

Kirov was an extraordinary person. He was an orphan. The legend is that he was suckled by a sow. He was born in 1886, brought up in an orphan asylum; he joined the party in 1904, and after the revolution became one of Stalin's first henchmen; he was entrusted with the clean-up of Zinovievists in Leningrad, as Kaganovitch swept the Trotskyists out of Moscow. He was harsh, vital, impressive, cunning, uncouth, bold – a great leader of men; and his death removed a powerful figure from the party.

The G.P.U. resumed its usual capers after Kirov's death. It was the 'Commissariat of Home Affairs' in name, but the good old G.P.U. in spirit still. One hundred and three persons were summarily executed, as well as the thirteen said to have been Nikolaiev's accomplices. It was not pretended

H1645-0479

that the hundred and three had anything whatever to do with the Kirov case. They were, however, not innocent men and women picked off the streets, as was alleged. All were in prison at the time Kirov was shot; all were accused of some crime or other, from conspiracy to assassinate Stalin to espionage on behalf of foreign powers; all had been convicted of some offence.

The G.P.U. promptly utilised the occasion to get rid of several personal enemies including a once-powerful leader named Yenukidze, who was banished from the party. Yenukidze, a Georgian, had been Stalin's first mentor in revolutionary work. As a member of the central committee, he had once – bad luck! – exercised his right of pardon to reprieve Nikolaiev, Kirov's assassin, from punishment for a minor previous offence; had this not happened, Nikolaiev might have been in Siberia and Kirov still alive.

Stalin then dissolved the Society of Old Bolsheviks, an organisation founded by Lenin's friends in 1922 and including only the party fathers, those with more than eighteen solid years in the revolutionary movement. These Old Bolsheviks, 'radicals', were a nuisance to Stalin. The Kirov murder was a perfect pretext for wiping up old scores. On a quite different level, Stalin followed the technique of Hitler after June 30; he made use of an artificial panic in the country to undertake Draconian steps for which otherwise he had no excuse.

The hundred and three in various jails were shot frankly to scare the country. Let it be known that reprisals would instantly follow an act of violence, and acts of violence would cease. Aside from the shootings, several thousand 'class enemies' who had somehow survived the rigours of 1932–33 were exiled to Siberia. Making a very broad ideological jump, the G.P.U. decided that Nikolaiev had represented both 'right' and 'left' tendencies. He had been in association, it was said, with the Latvian consul in Leningrad, and the Whites. Also the two veteran 'leftist' leaders, Zinoviev and Kamenev were finally removed from any remnants of authority. It was odd to recall, early in 1935, that they still had jobs. They had nothing to do with Nikolaiev. But they were put on trial and sentenced to exile to get rid of them for ever. 'It was as if their graves were being stepped on.'

H1645-0480

Succession

Kirov was the man being trained by Stalin as his successor. He is dead; and the succession would now seem to be between Kaganovitch, Voroshilov, and Molotov. Neither is a satisfactory candidate: Kaganovitch is a Jew, Voroshilov is too limited in interests, Molotov not big enough a personality.

If Stalin should die, the *party*, not one man, would take over. Personal rivalries, like those that followed the death of Lenin, are perfectly possible, but it is extremely unlikely that they could disrupt the régime. Discipline is strict, and the party is unanimous within itself on major issues. There is no obvious candidate for power in Russia, like Goering in Germany, simply because no man in the U.S.S.R. can be unduly prominent if he is conspicuously ambitious. The party is the great leveller. The Soviet State could hardly be more affected by the death of Stalin than it was by the death of Lenin. The régime will carry on.

H1645-0481

H1645-0482

CHAPTER XXXIV

'DURANTY'S INFERNO'

'Give me four years to teach the children, and the seed I have sown will never be uprooted.'

– LENIN.

THE things that one most objects to in the Soviet Union are, as a rule, *Russian* and not communist characteristics – cruelty, slovenliness, crudity in mechanical technique, espionage, red-tape, dirt, backwardness, administrative inefficiency. It is interesting to read Baedeker's 'Russia', the 1914 edition. You will find that you had to leave your passport with the police in those days too, and that to depart the country you had to have an exit visa. The communists have done their best to eliminate some of the tedious and cumbersome nuisances that have always disfigured some aspects of Russian life. But even the whole weight of the Kremlin cannot, apparently, make the porter of any Moscow hotel efficient – or his telephone. The late Frank Wise, M.P., brought back a pleasant story from one of his Russian trips; he visited the central headquarters of the supreme electricity board of the U.S.S.R. and found the electric bell outside the offices marked 'Not Working'. It is the despair of many communists that Karl Marx had his first try-out in, of all countries, Russia; that *Das Kapital* had to undergo its first concrete translation into a language as formidably difficult as Russian.

I visited Moscow in the summer of 1935, after seven years away. Stupid bureaucracy delayed my visa. Infuriating collapse of the entire telephone system seemed to attend my every effort to get a number. (But I don't know Russian, and the fault was maybe mine.) The derogations of the preceding paragraph were often in my mind. I saw plenty of crudity, squalor, and confusion. But these were pin-pricks. Moscow was, in 1935 as well as 1928, the most refreshing city in Europe. Outside of Russia, Europe is gripped by a neurotic madness, a combination of frivolity and masochism: a continent sagging

with decay, which seemed unable to control its suicidal tendencies, its delirious march to self-destruction. In Russia – compared, say, to the morbid, febrile hysteria of Germany – there was order, direction; instead of the muddled self-doubt of the western democracies, there was clear brain, hard sight.

The things I most noticed must have been obvious to any other non-Russian returning after a comparatively long absence. First, the considerable increase in the standard of living. It is still, it goes without saying, low compared to that of any western country – miserably low – but the factor of *advance* since 1928, despite the intervening rigours of the Five-Year Plan, impressed me. Better clothes on the people; well-stocked shops; the food better and more abundant; automobiles on the streets – even traffic lights! In 1928 an automobile was a rare sight on the streets of Moscow. Since 1928 the Gorki factory has turned out about 100,000 Fords – which run.

Second, one was bound to notice an advance, not merely in the physical appearance of the people but (so far as an outsider could judge) in their morale, their spirit. The *Park Culturi* was jammed with young men and women, brightly dressed (compared to 1928) and with brighter faces, all of them with eager and in fact tempestuous vitality experimenting in ways of relaxation in this Bolshevik version of Coney Island. Amazing place! When the Russians decide to build an amusement park the flood-gates of the fanatic open wide. The three most popular side-shows were (1) the parachute jump, (2) the tear-gas booth, (3) the rickety wooden dance-hall where good Consomols – members of the youth organisation – spent a rouble each learning 'western' dances like the rumba. And I saw a performance of *Carmen*, in the open air before twenty thousand people, with eighteen live horses and one dead bull in the cast, that was as completely exhilarating an adventure in *rapport* between actors and audience as anything I have ever witnessed.

Third, the impression was quite general that the purely revolutionary phase of Soviet activity was slowing down. The revolution is over. The régime is stable. One of my best-informed friends said that Soviet Russia had become the dullest country on earth; it was charted, organised, planned out to

H1645-0483

the last detail, and thus perfectly predictable; it was cut, dried, and bound – a ham in a sack.

Closely associated with this was a fourth point, the gradual emergence of Russia, in the view of Russians, as a national state. Be it remembered that the official name of the country, adopted after the revolution, is still U.S.S.R. – *Union* of Soviet Socialist Republics – a name with a profoundly centripetal connotation, a label envisaging the permanent possibility of expansion outside Russia, of merger with other states. But more and more the present forces are centrifugal. Russia is being thrown in on herself. The Red Army may be taught to fight – eventually – for the international proletariat, but it is the Soviet State, the Russian Fatherland, which it must first of all defend. 'Patriotism', in the crass sense of the term, hardly existed in the U.S.S.R. ten years ago. It does now. Even the *Pravda* runs editorials on 'Mother Russia'.

Fifth, no one can fail to appreciate Soviet – or Russian – vitality. Perhaps the most important single point to make about the U.S.S.R. to-day is that it is the only modern dictatorship which has survived a tremendous internal crisis. Neither Mussolini nor Hitler has suffered such a crisis yet, though the Abyssinian adventure may be Mussolini's. And the Soviet crisis – the resistance of the peasants to industrialisation – was none the less severe in that it was self-inflicted. The Soviets have survived seventeen terrible years. Despite civil wars, despite two major famines, the population has *increased* by twenty-three million people since 1918, and is increasing now at the rate of almost three million per year. In a generation, in other words, the Soviet Union, in its present borders, will be two hundred million people strong.

Piatiletka

The Five-Year Plan was not a Five-Year Plan at all. This is the 'low-down' on it. I have alluded to the plan several times in these chapters; let us spare a paragraph or two in brief description of the way it works and what it means. The fact is that all economy in Russia is regulated by planning, to infinity and beyond; successive plans, spaced into five-year periods for convenience, are, as Duranty says, parts of a single programme, which is continuous.

H1645-0484

The Plan was the invention of no single man, though Stalin is fond of pointing out that he suggested an electrification programme to Lenin as far back as 1921; it grew naturally and inevitably out of the nature of the Soviet system; and it was put into effect so gradually that even well-informed correspondents in Russia did not know that the first Plan had begun until it was under way. The theoretician most largely responsible for its origin, as far as any one person can take the credit, was probably Osinski; the practical man of affairs who most decisively executes its workings is Mezhlauk, often called the 'ablest man in the Soviet Union'.

Stalin announced that the first plan was 93·7 per cent successful. He was referring to industrial results, and probably he exaggerated. Even so, it was a tremendous, unprecedented effort; the only thing in the world quite to be compared to it was the expansion of the United States in the frontier period. Industrial output quadrupled in four years, an 'outstanding and unsurpassed achievement'. The production of steel increased forty per cent in four years, of pig iron eighty-four per cent. Tractor, automobile, engineering, aviation, industries were created out of nothing. Entire new cities were built on the Siberian steppes, or in the Urals, like Magnitogorsk, an industrial colossus that will probably become the largest steel plant in Europe. Enough machinery was imported to enable the U.S.S.R. to maintain succeeding five-year plans without any but a small share of foreign aid. Mines were developed – with the not unimportant result that the U.S.S.R. now possesses the third largest gold reserve in the world. Unemployment ceased. All this, too, at a time when the capitalist powers were ravaged by an economic crisis of unprecedented severity and scope.

The Plan had important political results, because it helped to make Russia a strong national state, and as Chamberlin points out, it thrust the Soviet centre of gravity eastward. The object of the Plan was to industrialise a largely agrarian country. Nicely, the greatest mineral deposits were found in regions hitherto almost inaccessible, tucked away in remote parts of Siberia. Here the heart of new Russia throbs – geographically impregnable. This is important from a military point of view.

The costs of the Plan were of course enormous. Tens of

H1645-0485

H1645-0486

millions of people did not have enough to eat; the cruel hungry bottom of subsistence was reached. Human values were utterly replaced by industrial values; when human beings resisted, they were ruthlessly destroyed, as we have seen. In communist jargon, the first Five-Year Plan was a period of 'postponed consumption'. Sacrifice, in other words, had to precede sufficiency. Also, great as was the success of the Plan, it by no means produced enough material to satisfy the people. Domestic production was intensified, but Russia still remains the largest market in the world.

In the second plan, now in progress, the tempo of activity is very much relaxed. The second plan is not so much publicised as the first. Its aim is to complete the collectivisation of agriculture by 1937, and to stress the production of consumers' goods, rather than heavy industrial products, in order to lessen the terrible need in Russia for such items as – to choose at random – nails, decent paper, rope, kitchen-ware, plumbing utensils, scientific and medical supplies, boots, metal-ware. It hopes to double the food supply in the cities and reduce retail prices something like thirty-five per cent. And it may – pray the Soviet lord – contain provision for housing, because the outrageous and appalling condition of housing in Moscow and the bigger cities is a disgrace to the Soviet Union – and honest sovietites admit it.

'I Contradict Myself? Very Well, I Contradict Myself!'

The basis of Soviet economy is production for use, not profit. 'Each man shall work according to his abilities, and receive according to his needs.' The communist party considers itself a sort of central organisation with authority over the whole nation to distribute both activity and rewards according to this formula. It mercilessly extracts profits from labourers and peasants – for instance Knickerbocker has calculated that the profit of the government on grain is one thousand per cent – but these profits are all ploughed back into the business. There are no private gains. The interests of the country as a whole, as determined by the communist party, are the only criterion. The communists accept nominal managerial salaries for their labour. These salaries are minuscule.

Communists, as a rule, get much less than non-communist technicians whom they hire. The theory is that all fruits of production are pooled for redistribution to the common good. Political democracy is extinct. But economic democracy – theoretically – is complete.

Naturally the operation of this process and modifications to it made necessary by temporary contingencies have produced a considerable number of paradoxes, of contradictions. Ferreting them out is a favourite Moscow indoor sport.

For instance, Soviet citizens may inherit private property – although Soviet law[1] limits the heirs-presumptive to direct descendants of the deceased, or persons in direct connection by marriage or adoption. Disinheritance of minors under eighteen is not allowed. The testator may, if he wishes (it doesn't happen very often) leave his property to the state.

Soviet citizens may, another point not generally known, own property in the form of houses – though under severe restrictions. Small houses in towns and also *datchas* in the country, may be bought (if there are any buyers) and are absolute individual property of the purchaser, but one person may not own more than one house and one *datcha*. *Land* may not be owned. The land of the U.S.S.R. is nationalised, the property of the state.

A Soviet citizen may buy the ownership to an apartment in a co-operative house, but he is subject to eviction if – I quote Barnes – he 'commits a crime, indulges in illicit private trade, or becomes a priest or counter-revolutionary'. He may, in certain rare cases, lease land from municipal authorities if he uses it for building purposes.

A Soviet citizen may own a library or art collection, if he registers it with the authorities. He may buy an automobile – if he can afford it. He may own a sail-boat, yacht, or launch. Theoretically, he may own an aeroplane, but in practice it is virtually impossible for a private individual to obtain one.

A Soviet citizen may even hire the services of another. Personal servants – domestics – are allowed. He may, with great risk, go into private business and employ labour (for instance a neighbourhood cobbler may have one assistant) but in such cases his business is so heavily taxed that profits are virtually

[1] For the background of this section I am indebted to Mr. Ralph Barnes.

H1645-0487

H1645-0488

impossible. A professional man, doctor or lawyer, may have a private practice provided he is not in state service.

There is no limit – in theory – to the salary anyone may receive, nor to the amount of capital anyone may accumulate. There are no opportunities for investment, however, except in state bonds. These bonds pay interest, exactly as do bonds in capitalist countries, and a good rate too – eight per cent. Savings banks are encouraged, and in 1935 no fewer than forty-three million depositors throughout the Soviet Union used them. They pay eight to ten per cent interest.

Above all, sharp differences are possible in earning power. The janitor in Sovkino – the movie company – gets, perhaps, 150 roubles per month; the star may get 15,000. Piece-work exists in factories, in order to encourage production. Artists, literary men, may earn very large sums for Russia, though there is very little they can do with their incomes – in paper roubles – after they get it. A playwright, Vasily V. Shkvarkin, author of a *bourgeois* comedy *Another Man's Child,* which swept the provinces, earned 200,000 roubles in royalties in 1934. A journalist named Michael Koltzoff, editor of the comic paper *Oganok* (Little Light) is reputed to earn 30,000 roubles per month. *Izvestia,* the chief Soviet newspaper, pays 500 roubles each for feuilletons.

One should keep in mind, however, that incomes such as these are still extremely rare. Earning power may vary in the Soviet Union, according to artistic or technical proficiency, but the extremes, as Fischer points out, are very close. No such 'spread' is conceivable in the U.S.S.R. as exists in Britain or America between say, a clerk in a factory and its owner. Among all the one hundred and sixty-five million Russians, there are probably not ten men who earn £5,000 per year.

And two vitally important elements in this issue of 'socialist inequality' should never be forgotten.

1. No man in the Soviet Union has any individual control of the means of production. A man may accumulate and transfer wealth, but not the means of producing wealth.

2. No man in the Soviet Union may exploit labour for private profit. Interest may be paid on bonds, yes, but this interest does not represent private dividends on the use of labour.

These safeguards, as may readily be seen, are so potent that Stalin has no reason to worry from the 'contradictions', which affect only a comparatively small percentage of the population, and which were, in fact, deliberately introduced as a spur to production.

'Stampede to Common Sense'

Perhaps as a result of relaxation from the extreme ardours of the Five-Year Plan, a considerable revaluation of old Soviet values is going on. At the end of 1935 it seemed that the government was sure enough of itself to permit some slight deviation from the early 'party line', which was broad and rigid enough to include extravagances in many besides purely politico-economic fields.

The *Pravda* (shades of Lenin!) has come to print touching editorials about mother-love. Divorce is still easy, but a strenuous effort is being made to improve the level of family life. Abortions, formerly encouraged, are now frowned upon. Children, once taught to pretend complete independence of their parents, are being encouraged to attitudes of filial duty and devotion. Alimony payments for the support of children of divorced parents are strictly enforced. A new law inflicts imprisonment of one year for desertion of a child, and cases of 'sexual hooliganism' may be severely punished.

In education, a movement led by Stalin himself (who has insisted on standardised text-books) has restored examinations in schools and universities; teachers and professors are encouraged to enforce discipline, instead of the opposite; degrees like Ph.D. once abolished, are now granted again. It was impossible ten years ago to get a liberal education in the Soviet Union. The whole emphasis was on economics from a strictly Marxist point of view and on natural science. Now history is being taught objectively, geography also, and there is a powerful movement to revive interest in study of the classics. The University of Moscow has courses on Shelley and Keats.

In regard to the arts, too, something of a counter-revolution has taken place. In June, 1935, a musical conductor of the extremist type now considered old-fashioned cut two movements from a symphony on the ground that they were '*bourgeois*'. He was severely rebuked. Shakespeare had a good

H1645-0489

H1645-0490

season in Moscow in 1935. A company of Bashkirs from Orenburg dazzled Moscow with a performance of *Othello*. And the Theatre of the Revolution, for the benefit of the Consomols, put on *Romeo and Juliet* to show the youthful audience what true love should be. The text was not mutilated. But servants of the Montagues and Capulets were made to fraternise in the first act – to illustrate proper proletarian solidarity!

1935 was, in fact, for Moscow, a giddy year. The G.P.U. arrested its first two theatre-ticket speculators. A fashion designer from New York, Elizabeth Hawes, superintended the first Soviet fashion show. In the *Park Culturi* the first Bal Masqué in the history of the Soviet Union was a baroque success. Playthings for children were manufactured without benefit of propaganda. A foreign ambassador played tennis with a Soviet-manufactured racket, and introduced the game of baseball to the Soviet Union. A shop on one of Moscow's main streets, Kuznetzky Most, displayed a gown priced at 1,000 roubles – seven months pay for a Soviet workman. And more and more the importance of the individual came to be stressed, even in collective work.

What the Boss Thinks

Stalin's own considered definition of the Soviet system is perhaps worth quoting:

'The Soviet economy,' he writes in *Leninism* (II. p. 307), 'means that:

'1. The power of the capitalist class has been overthrown and has been replaced by the power of the working class.

'2. The tools and means of production, the land, factories, etc., have been taken away from the capitalists and handed over to the working class and to the peasantry.

'3. The development of production is subordinated, not to the principle of competition and the safeguarding of capitalist profit, but to the principle of planned guidance and systematic improvement of the material and cultural level of the toilers.

'4. The distribution of the national income takes place – in the interests of systematically raising the material position of the workers and peasants, and extending socialist production in town and country.

'5. The systematic improvement of the material position of the toilers and the ceaseless growth of their requirements (purchasing power) – guarantees the working class against

crises of overproduction, against the growth of unemployment, etc.

'6. The working class is the master of the country, working not for the capitalists, but for its own class.'

Stalin is very eager to point out that the Russian revolution of 1917 differs from all other revolutions in history in that not a mere transfer of political sovereignty occurred, not the substitution of one party for another, but the replacement of one economic order by an entirely different one on an international, not a national, basis. This, Harold Laski has said, is the 'seminal' fact of modern history.

Stalin thinks that a communist society will eventually have the following results:

'*a*. There will be no private ownership of the means of production, but social, collective ownership;

'*b*. there will be no classes or state, but workers in industry and agriculture managing their economic affairs as a free association of toilers;

'*c*. national economy will be organised according to plan, and will be based on the highest technique in both industry and agriculture;

'*d*. science and art will enjoy conditions conducive to their highest development;

'*e*. the individual, freed from bread and butter cares, and of necessity of cringing to the "powerful of the earth", will become really free.'

– (*Stalin On Technology*, p. 13)

Stalin considers that the problems of production in both industry and agriculture have been solved. Now facing him are two other issues – distribution and transport.

Democracy

Radicals enamoured blindly of the Soviet cause do it more harm than good by wantonly inaccurate colouring of information. Recently I read an argument, citing figures of the Soviet 'elections', designed to show that the U.S.S.R. was more of a democracy than the U.S.A. All the article omitted to mention was (1) the 'vote' was not by secret ballot, but by show of hands, (2) it 'elected' men to serve on a body which by no conceivable stretch of the imagination could be said to have legislative powers.

H1645-0491

It is true, however, that as the régime grows stronger, tentative approaches to something like democracy, with secret ballot, are being made. Stalin himself took the chairmanship of the new commission for Constitutional Reform which, on July 7, 1935, began work which will doubtless last several years. The ten vice-chairmen comprise a formidable list of Soviet chieftains: Litvinov, Radek, Vyshinsky (the public prosecutor), Voroshilov, Molotov, Bukharin, Akulov (a close associate of Stalin's, who once attempted to 'reform' the G.P.U.), Chubar, Kaganovitch, Zhdanov. It has been accepted in principle that the commission shall explore the following objectives: (1) equalisation of voting rights of city workers and peasants – at present the basis of representation in the rural districts is one delegate for every one hundred and twenty-five thousand voters, in the cities one for every twenty-five thousand; (2) introduction of secret ballot in elections to the Soviets – not, of course, to the *party*; (3) substitution of direct elections for the present indirect system.

It is incorrect, incidentally, to repeat the usual assertion that communists form only two per cent of Russia's population. The proper figure is nearer ten per cent. In estimating the total population, one includes babies, children, women; one should do likewise in numbering the communists. There are only 1,872,488 full adult party members, and 835,298 candidates. But the Consomols, of whom there are about 4,000,000, the Pioneers, about 6,000,000 and the Octobrists, the children, like Mussolini's Wolf-Cubs, of kindergarten and early school age, should be included as communists. The general opinion is that the number of party members is bound soon to be widened, as more and more Consomols reach party age.

More important than the issue of 'democracy' throughout the broad spaces of the Soviet Union is that of exclusive control by Stalin and his men at the top in Moscow. The ruling directorate is small enough to run a terrible risk of losing touch with the country as a whole. No man could say that they have betrayed their guardianship so far; but as the present hierarchy hardens, congeals, into a permanent pyramidal structure, the chance increases of its isolation from the masses. Russia is ruled by a party machine. It may become,

H1645-0492

as someone put it, a dictatorship not of – but *over* – the proletariat.

Jokes

A peasant queues up to see Lenin's body in the Red Square mausoleum, comes out again. 'What did you think of him?' a friend asks. Reply: 'He's just like us, dead but not yet buried.'

Another peasant watches the construction of a new short-wave radio station. The technician explains that any voice in the microphone will be heard over the entire world. The peasant pleads to be allowed the supreme thrill of trying it. He asks to be permitted to say just one word – only one. Permission granted. The peasant steps up to the microphone and shouts – 'Help!'

The G.P.U. was 'liberalised'; all agents were instructed to show the greatest courtesy to the common folk. A man in a street-car sneezed. A G.P.U. agent on the platform, peering into the car, snorted angrily, 'Who did that – who was it who sneezed?' Terror in the car. Friends urge the luckless fellow who sneezed to give himself up, confess his sin, in order to save the whole car from arrest. He speaks up, quavering, '*I* sneezed.' The G.P.U. man bellowed: '*Gesundheit!* Your good health!'

Stalin had lice in his hair. No means, mechanical, medicinal, chemical, could extirpate them. Desperate, Stalin called Radek into consultation. Radek said: 'Simple. Collectivise one louse. The others will run away.'

When the intelligentzia and the old 'technical bureaucracy' were being severely scrutinised and punished the joke ran: 'My wife and I have three sons. One is an engineer. The other is a professor of bacteriology. The third is also in Siberia.'

A horde of rabbits jumped out of the Soviet Union across the Polish border. The Poles expressed surprise and consternation. 'Ah,' the rabbits explained, 'the G.P.U. has issued orders to arrest all giraffes in Russia.' 'But,' remonstrated the Polish customs officers, 'you are not giraffes.' The rabbits replied: 'Yes, but try to prove it to the G.P.U.'

A terrible turmoil was heard outside Stalin's private office.

H1645-0493

H1645-0494

The boss was denouncing someone with a tornado of violent epithets. Fifteen minutes it lasted. The terrified doorman peered within. He looked for the comrade whom Stalin must have been chastising. No one except Stalin was there. 'Where is the man you were denouncing?' timidly inquired the doorman. Stalin replied: 'I have just finished my daily quarter of an hour of self-criticism.'

Foreign Affairs

The foreign policy of the Soviet Union can be expressed in one word – peace. As well as anybody, Karl Radek has elaborated this word into a paragraph:

> 'The object of the Soviet Government is to save the soil of the first proletarian state from the criminal folly of a new war. To this end the Soviet Union has struggled with the greatest determination and consistency for sixteen years. The defence of peace and of the neutrality of the Soviet Union against all attempts to drag it into the whirlwind of a new world war is the central problem of Soviet foreign policy. The Soviet Union follows the policy of peace because peace is the best condition for building up a socialist society.'
>
> – *Foreign Affairs*, January 1934.

Stalin himself is even more forthright:

> 'Our foreign policy is clear. It is a policy of preserving peace and strengthening commercial relations with all countries: The U.S.S.R. does not think of threatening anybody – let alone of attacking anybody. We stand for peace and champion the cause of peace. But we are not afraid of threats and are prepared to answer blow for blow against the instigators of war. Those who try to attack our country will receive a stunning rebuff to teach them not to poke their pig's snout into our Soviet garden.'
>
> – *International Conciliation*, December 1934.

The Soviet Union has two potential enemies, Japan and Germany, and its concrete policy, severely realistic, is designed to check danger from these countries. The Russians made every kind of concession to appease and mollify the Japanese, for instance the sale of the Chinese Eastern Railway in Manchuria for about one-eighth its value. When pressure from Japan was particularly acute, the Soviets offset it by establishing friendly relations with the United States. When

the Japanese danger receded, the U.S.S.R., though eager for friendship with America, and delighted at American recognition, tended to neglect the new *rapprochement* with Washington, because it was not so pertinently valuable.

The United States, likewise nervous following Japanese inroads into China, found the resumption of Soviet-American relations a political convenience. When, some weeks after recognition, the relations between Japan and Soviet Russia tended consequentially to improve, the Americans in Moscow found themselves greeted less cordially by the Russians. 'The Japs,' one American put it, 'have let us down.'

On the other front the Soviet Union is faced by the relentless hostility of Germany. Their territories do not adjoin, but Poland, which fills much of the space between them, is – for the time being – a German ally. The Baltic states are similar buffers between the Soviet Union and Germany. Therefore it is of great consequence to the U.S.S.R. to see that these small states, especially Lithuania, retain their independence.

For a long period the policy of the Soviet Union was predicated on friendship with Germany. In Germany the Soviets hoped for communist revolution; Germany, like the U.S.S.R., was practically an outlaw state; the Russians sympathised with Germany's struggle to free herself from the shackles of Versailles; above all, France and Poland – back in the neolithic middle '20's – were allies, and allies presumably against the Germany and the Soviet Union. The four countries stretched across Europe, France-Germany-Poland-Russia, mutual and successive checks against each other.

It was very neat. It was too neat. It did not last. Hitler ended it. From 1933 on, Germany under Hitler became Russia's enemy, mortal and implacable; therefore the Russians had to make a quick and profound *bouleversement.* A complete and drastic turn-about was essential. This they accomplished with the realism, the finesse, of a Napoleon on a battlefield.

First, the Russians, by surviving the Five-Year Plan, made themselves valuable militarily as allies. Second, by allowing the Communist International to languish forlorn, they achieved a sort of spasmodic respectability. Recognition by the United States, in November 1933, was an important

H1645-0495

step. Recognition by other last-ditch countries followed. Then Litvinov contrived to bring Russia into the League. There followed the treaties with France and Czechoslovakia. Anthony Eden visited Moscow and shook hands with Stalin. Litvinov declared, 'Peace is indivisible,' and Russian commissars drank the health of George V of England. God Save the King! The job was done.

Russia, the outcast, the pariah, the chief of revisionist powers – certainly the idea of world revolution connoted revisionism! – thus became, in the short space of three years, the newest addition to the countries in the status quo group. Not only this. The treaties signed with Laval of France and Beneš of Czechoslovakia were virtually military treaties. No one knows the terms of the military protocols, but the idea was to surround Germany, as far as possible, with a ring of steel.

If Germany should attack France, would Russia give complete expression to the alliance and invade Germany? Impossible: the frontiers do not adjoin. But this is exactly the importance of Czechoslovakia in the arrangement. Prague could be utilised as a base for Soviet aeroplanes bombing the industrial regions of Saxony and Berlin. If Germany should, through Lithuania or Poland, attack Russia, would France march to the aid of her Russian ally by invading the Rhineland and Ruhr? No one knows. But the Russians hope so.

Communists in Britain to some extent, in France more so, were worried and alarmed following the Stalin-Eden-Laval-Beneš conversations. Stalin told French communists to cease attacking French institutions, in fact to support the French army. This meant, for the time being, the collapse of French communism as a militant opposition. Stalin felt that this price was worth paying. The first duty of communists everywhere – according to his reasoning – was to protect themselves from Fascism. Hitler was the greatest of all menaces to communism. The first bulwark of communism was the U.S.S.R. Therefore, French communists had to sacrifice their local position, and their hopes of revolution in France, to insure action by France and the French army against Hitler to protect the Soviet Union.

Because communists the world over felt short-sighted alarm and dismay at these manœuvres, Stalin decided to convoke a

H1645-0496

congress of the Communist International in Moscow in the summer of 1935. This was the first congress since 1928. It was tossed by Stalin as a sop to world revolution extremists. It did not do much, except appoint Georgi Dimitrov, hero of the Reichstag fire, general secretary – and advise British communists to unite with the *bourgeois* labour party, and American communists (in order to avoid Fascism) to vote for Roosevelt.

Metternich, Bertrand Russell says, persuaded Alexander I that the principle of legitimacy was more important than Russian national interests. Hitler – indirectly – has persuaded Stalin that Russian national interests are more important than communist internationalism.

Just the same, one should under no circumstances assume that Stalin has given up the idea of world revolution *ultimately*. Far from it. World revolution is basic and fundamental in communist policy; pressure of events has made it necessary to postpone consideration of it; that is all. It lurks in the hinterpart of every Russian's mind. The 'stampede back to common sense' should not blind one to the essential socialist nature of the Soviet Government. The treaties with *bourgeois* states should not blind one to the fact that the Soviet revolution will not be considered complete by Moscow till it has spread beyond Russian frontiers.

Coda

'It is easier,' Fischer has written, 'to shake the world in ten days than to remould it in fifteen years.' The most violent communist could not claim that even in Russia Stalin's programme has been fulfilled. Russia is not a communist state yet; it is not even a socialist state. It is very far from having produced a classless society. But the advances, both in pointing the way to socialism, and in achieving stability politically, have been enormous. Give Russia ten years of peace, and it will be the most powerful country in the world.

THE END

H1645-0497

H1645-0498

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS AND BIBLIOGRAPHY

ABOUT two-thirds of this book, I should think, is the result of direct evidence accumulated by my own eyes and ears. For the rest I have a hundred sources to thank. It is difficult to list them. If this book dealt with a dead instead of a living period, I should have had merely to consult books and documents in the regular manner of research. But I have been dealing with very contemporary figures and the best information to be had about them can be collected only by word of mouth. A book may be written about Napoleon purely from written records. A chapter about Mussolini, it is obvious on the other hand, should be based partly on written records, but also on the evidence of people who know him, have talked to him, and can report their observations first-hand.

In every capital I have written about, friends and acquaintances have generously collaborated by giving me a word-of-mouth treasury of intimate material and ideas. I have winnowed and checked this material as carefully as possible. The friends who helped me may be counted by the score. I cannot mention their names, because many are residents of countries ruled by dictatorship, and it would be invidious to mention some, who might be named freely, and not others. In addition, other friends have carefully read and checked every part of the manuscript.

To these loyal and generous colleagues in twenty countries, *salaam*!

As to books and documents, I have referred to hundreds – and I must have read several thousand newspaper and magazine clippings on each important country – but I don't want to burden this long manuscript with a formal bibliography. However, the following books have been particularly valuable, some of them in fact indispensable:

Anonymous: *Recovery Through Revolution*, New York 1933.
Anonymous: *Not to be Repeated*, New York 1932.
Anonymous: *Heil!* Bristol 1934.

Anonymous: *The Secret International*, London 1932.
Anonymous: *Patriotism, Ltd.*, London 1933.
Armstrong, Hamilton Fish: *Europe Between Wars?* New York 1934.
Armstrong, H. C.: *Grey Wolf*, London 1934.
Baldwin, Stanley: *On England*, London 1926.
Bauer, Otto: *Austrian Democracy Under Fire*, Prague 1934.
Beneš, Eduard: *My War Memoirs*, London 1928.
Broad, Lewis and Russell, Leonard: *The Way of the Dictators*, London 1935.
Čapek, Karel: *President Masaryk Tells His Story*, Prague 1934.
Chamberlin, W. H.: *Russia's Iron Age*, Boston 1934.
Cole, G. D. H.: *Intelligent Man's Review of Europe To-day*, London 1933.
Crane, John O.: *The Little Entente*, New York 1931.
Cripps, Sir S.: *Problems of Socialist Transition*, London 1934.
Dalton, Hugh: *Practical Socialism for Britain*, London 1935.
Duranty, Walter: *Duranty Reports Russia*, New York 1934.
Duranty, Walter: *Europe – War or Peace*, London 1935.
Dutt, R. Palme: *Fascism and Social Revolution*, New York 1934.
Eden, Anthony: *Places in the Sun*, London 1926.
Fischer, Louis: *Soviet Journey*, New York 1934.
Finer, Herman: *Mussolini's Italy*, London 1935.
Fortune, Italian Number, (July 1934) New York 1934.
Gedye, G. E. R.: *Heirs to the Habsburgs*, Bristol 1932.
Harris, H. Wilson: *What the League of Nations Is*, London 1925.
Heiden, Konrad: *A History of National Socialism*, London 1934.
Henri, Ernst: *Hitler Over Europe*, New York 1934.
Hitler, Adolf: *My Struggle*, London 1933.
Horrabin, J. F.: *An Atlas of Current Affairs*, London 1934.
Horrabin, J. F.: *An Atlas of European History*, London 1935.
Howe, Quincy: *World Diary, 1929–1934*, New York 1934.
Jackson, J. H.: *The Post-War World*, London 1935.
Jerrold, Douglas: *England*, Bristol 1935.
Kaganovitch, L. M.: Various Pamphlets, Moscow 1932–35.
Keyserling, H.: *Europe*, New York 1928.
Knickerbocker, H. R.: *Will War Come in Europe?* London 1934.
Krutch, J. W.: *Was Europe a Success?* New York 1934.
Landau, Rom: *Pilsudski, Hero of Poland*, London 1930.
Laski, H. J.: *Communism*, London 1927.
Laski, H. J.: *Politics*, Philadelphia 1931.
Lefebure, Victor: *Scientific Disarmament*, London 1932.
Livingston, A.: *The Peace Ballot*, London 1935.
Ludwig, Emil: *Talks With Mussolini*, London 1933.
Madariaga, S. de: *Spain*, London 1931.
Markham, R. H.: *Meet Bulgaria*, Sofia 1932.
Martin, William: *Europe as I See it To-day*, New York 1931.
Masaryk, T. G.: *The Making of a State*, London 1927.
Messinger, J.: *Death of Dollfuss*, London 1935.

H1645-0499

Mirsky, Dmitri: *The Intelligentzia of Great Britain*, London 1935.
Morrison, Herbert: *Practical Socialism in Great Britain*, London 1933.
Mosley, Oswald: *The Greater Britain*, London 1934.
Mowrer, Edgar A.: *Germany Puts the Clock Back*, New York 1933.
Mussolini, Benito: *My Autobiography*, New York 1928.
Mussolini, Benito: *Political and Social Doctrine of Fascism*, New York 1935.
Reed, Douglas: *The Burning of the Reichstag*, New York 1934.
Rintelen, Capt. Von: *The Dark Invader*, New York 1933.
Rudlin, W. A.: *Growth of Fascism in Great Britain*, London 1935.
Russell, Bertrand: *Freedom Versus Organization, 1814–1914*, New York 1934.
Schevill, F.: *A History of Europe*, Chicago 1926.
Siegfried, A.: *France, A Study in Nationality*, New Haven 1930.
Siegfried, A.: *England's Crisis*, London 1933.
Simonds, Frank H. and Emeny, Brooks: *Price of Peace*, London 1935.
Stalin-Wells: *Stalin-Wells Talk*, London 1934.
Stalin and Others: *Socialism Victorious*, Moscow 1934.
Stalin, Joseph: *Leninism*, Moscow 1934.
Stalin, Molotov and Litvinov: *Our Foreign Policy*, Moscow 1934
Stalin, J.: Various Pamphlets, Moscow 1932–35.
Steed, Wickham: *The Real Stanley Baldwin*, London 1932.
Strachey, John: *Menace of Fascism*, London 1934.
Thompson, Dorothy: *I Saw Hitler*, New York 1932.
Trevelyan, G. M.: *History of England*, London 1927.
Trotsky, Leon: *Where Is Britain Going?* London 1926.
Trotsky, Leon: *History of the Russian Revolution*, London 1934.
Various Authors: *Great Contemporaries*, London 1935.
Various Authors: *What Would be the Character of a New War?* London 1933.
Vergin, Fedor: *Subconscious Europe*, London 1932.
'Vigilantes': *Inquest on Peace*, London 1935.
Wells, H. G.: *Outline of History*, London 1932.
Werth, Alexander: *France in Ferment*, New York 1934.
Wheeler-Bennett, J. W.: *The Disarmament Deadlock*, London 1934.
World Committee: *Brown Book of the Hitler Terror*, London 1933.
Zimmern, A.: *The Third British Empire*, London 1926.

As to pamphlets, those of the Foreign Policy Association (New York), and of the Royal Institute of International Affairs (London), were most valuable. Among newspapers, I used most the *Manchester Guardian*, *The Times*, the *Evening Standard*, and the *Daily Telegraph*. The diary columns of the latter two were very helpful. And my debt to the *New Statesman* in the English chapters is manifest.

This book has been written fresh and as a whole, and all

H1645-0500

from a consistent point of view. I had, of course, covered some of the same ground in magazine articles, as well as in dispatches to the Chicago *Daily News*. Thus I should mention that *Vanity Fair* gave hospitality to some early views of Madame Lupescu, Mr. Eden, General Goering and others; *Foreign Affairs* allowed me to discuss in its pages Dr. Dollfuss and the Habsburg problem; the *Nation* let me say what I thought about Central Europe for many years. *Harper's Magazine* published some of the material in this book on Spain, the Reichstag Fire trial, and the arms traffic, as well as an essay called 'Policy By Murder'. I have also used a few passages from sections I wrote of an anonymous book on Europe, called *Not to be Repeated*.

I have my newspaper, the Chicago *Daily News*, to thank for the wide opportunity it has given me the past dozen years to work in almost every country in Europe. The *News*, with its admirable tradition of foreign news reporting, gave me a free hand from Scandinavia to Palestine, from Moscow to London and back again, and I spent five eventful years in Vienna as *Daily News* correspondent in Central Europe and the Balkans. Of course the *News* is not responsible for any sentiments or opinions in this book. Nor, except for an occasional sentence, is there any reproduction of *Daily News* material. But, for the opportunities they freely gave me, I have the publisher and editors to thank.

Finally, this book would have been impossible to write except for the patient and generous collaboration of my wife.

H1645-0501

H1645-0502

H1645-0503

INDEX

Abereger, 308
Abyssinia, 216-29, 422
Action Française, 142 *passim*
Adamic, Louis, 378
Adams, Henry, 45
Adler, Viktor, 285, 330
Agricultural Policy, German, 95
Alamor, 175
Alba, The Duke of, 178
Albania, 390-3
Albrecht, 63
Aldermann, 63
Alexander of Jugoslavia, King, 35, 179 et seq., 372-8, 395
Alexander III, Czar, 408
Alfonso, King, 172-4
Ali Risa, 402
Alliluiev, S., 446
Aloisi, 196, 213
Alpine Montangesellschaft, 136
Alvarez, 176
America and Russia, 483
Amery, L. S., 281
Amman, Max, 21
Andreyev, A. A., 433, 453, 464
Anglo-French Alliance, Offer of, 125
Anglo-German Naval Pact, The, 263
Anglo-German Naval Treaty, 105
Angriff, The, 84
Annunzio, d', 200
Anschluss, Effect of, 286
Antal, Stephen, 343
Aosta, The Duke of, 211
Araquistáin, 175
Arbeiter Zeitung, 298, 300, 303, 330
Arif, Colonel, 401
Armament Firms, Inter-relations of, 135
Armament Manufacture, International, 136
Armaments, Profits on, 134
Armstrong, Hamilton Fish, 421
Assassinations, 380
Astor, Lady, 235, 258, 431
Attlee, G., 276-7
Austria, 285-332
Austrian Aristocratic Families, 338
Austrian Civil War, 26
Austrian Democracy Under Fire, 302
Authority Complex, 34, 35
Avanti, The, 188-9 et seq.
Avenol, 126, 419-20
Averescu, General, 365
Ayala, de, 175
Azaña, 172-81
Baar, Major, 315
Badoglio, 212
Baeza, 175
Balabanov, Madame A., 187
Balance of Power, The, 261
Balbo, 191, 207, 210
Baldwin, Alfred, 243
Baldwin, Mrs., 247
Baldwin, Oliver, 248
Baldwin, Stanley, 227, 234-7, 239, 242-53, 257
Balkan Entente, The, 397
Balkans, The, 354, 384
Banque de France, 128-34
Barnes, Ralph, 475 *passim*
Bartlett, Vernon, 223
Barthou, 124, 180
Bauer, Otto, 296, 298, 300-3
B.B.C., The, 270
Beaverbrook, Lord, 235
Beck, Colonel Josef, 263, 341, 407, 411
Beck, Dr., 66
Bedi, Alcibiades, 391
Bela Kun, 340, 341, 384
Beneš, 337, 345 et seq., 420, 448, 484
Bergery, 170-1
Bernacek, 302-3
Bernays, Robert, 255, 281
Bethlen, Count Stephen, 339, 342
Bevan, Aneurin, 263
Bevin, Ernest, 279
Bianchi, 209
Bianu, 369
Bibliography, 486 et seq.
Birth-rate, French, German, etc., 137
Bismarck, 44, 345
Black Hand, The, 385-6
Bloc National, 145
Blomberg, Von, 45, 70, 76, 78, 96-8
Blum, Léon, 156
Bogdanoff, 432
Bohlen, Krupp von, 116
Bolsheviks, Society of Old, 468
Bonar Law, 244-7
Boncour, Paul, 125, 144, 151-2
Borah, Senator, 348
Boris of Bulgaria, King, 374, 393-5
Bosch, 116
Bose, Von, 66
Bouisson, 122, 144
Boulanger, 126
Bratianu, George, 365
Bratianu, Jon, 355 et seq.

H1645-0504

Braunau, 29
Braunthal, 304
Bredow, Von, 67
Briand, 118, 120, 123, 139, 140, 141, 146, 190
British Imperialism, 224, 228
Brown Book, The, 61
Brubaker, Howard, 57, 354, 458
Brückner, 18, 24, 92
Brüning, 46, 49-53, 67, 133
Bubnov, A. S., 464
Bukharin, 429, 443, 462
Bulgaria, 393-7
Bulletin of International News, The, 104, 297
Bullitt, William C., 448
Bundeskanzleramt, Seizure of the, 313
Buresch, Dr., 290

Caballero, 175
Cachin, 171
Cadere, 369
Caillaux, 120, 144, 151
Canterbury, The Archbishop of, 93, 239
Čapek, Karel, 348 et seq.
Capitalism and Fascism, 205
Capitalism, Hitler and, 116
Carbuccia, H. de, 168
Carnarvon, Lord, 200
Carol of Rumania, King, 355-70, 395
Cartel des Gauches, 145
Casas Viejas, 178
Castiglione, 324
Castlerosse, Lord, 264
Cecil, Lord, 227, 229, 252, 425
Centre in France, The, 154
C.G.T., 169
C.G.T.U., 169
Chamberlain, Neville, 239, 266, 273
Chamberlain, Sir A., 141, 221, 229, 252, 260
Chamberlin, W. H., 429, 440, 473
Chambrun, R. de, 124
Chautemps, 144, 146, 149, 162
Chenier, André, 260
Cheron, 152
Chiappe, 150, 152, 162, 168
Chilston, Lord, 448
Chubar, V. V., 450, 464
Churchill, Randolph, 238
Churchill, Winston, 238, 249, 250, 252, 258, 259
Ciano, Constanzo, 210
Ciano, Galeazzo, 209
Citrine, Sir Walter, 279
Citroën, 130
Clemenceau, 123, 152-5, 381
Clynes, J. R., 255
Codreanu, C., 364
Coigny, Aimée de, 260
Cole, G. D. H., 232
Collective Security, 140, 419
Comert, Pierre, 420
Comité des Forges, 132-5
Commons, English House of, 231
Communism and Private Property, 475
Communism in England, 280
Communist Methods in Germany, 86
Communists in Russia, Number of, 480
Condescu, General, 368
Confederación Nacional de Trabajo, 180
Constantine of Greece, King, 357
Cot, 150-1
Coty, 129, 167
Coward, Noel, 175
Credit Anstalt, 287
Creusot, 131
Cripps, Sir Stafford, 263, 276, 277
Critchley, General, 238
Croats and Serbs, 381
Croix de Feu, 163-6
C.U.A.A., 170
Cummings, A. J., 276, 279
Curtius, 286
Curzon, Lady Cynthia, 282
Curzon, Lord, 234, 247, 282
Czar of Russia, The, 356
Czechoslovakia, 345-54

Daily Express, The, 193
Daily Herald, The, 255, 283
Daily Mail, The, 16
Daily Telegraph, The, 24
Daladier, 144, 148-51, 161-3, 170
Dalimier, 152
Dalton, Hugh, 230 *passim*
Danzig, 25, 415
Danube Pact, The, 353
Darbley, R., 131
Darré, 27, 78, 94-5
Daudet, L., 167
Davidson, J. C. C., 244
Dawes Plan, The, 147
Dawson, Geoffrey, 236, 239, 262
Dawson of Penn, Lord, 238, 239
Déat, 157
De Bono, 207, 208, 212
Deflation, German, 46
D'Eichtal, A., 130
D'Eichtal, W., 130
De la Rocque, Casimir, 133, 163 et seq.
De la Rocque, Pierre, 164
Dell, Robert, 120, 133
Del Sarte, 167
Democracy in France, 144
Democracy in Russia, 479
Denain, 141
Derby, Lord, 240
Deutsch, 296 et seq.
Deval, Jacques, 23

De Vecchi, 207
Dictators, 29-36, 214
Diehn, 116
Dietrich, 18
Diez, 314
Dimitrescu, Poui, 359
Dimitrijevitch, Colonel D., 386
Dimitrov, 61, 62, 485
Disraeli, 94
Djavid Bey, 401
Djemal, 403
Dobler, 309
Dollfuss, 26, 33, 35, 36, 288-306
Dollfuss and Mussolini, 293-5
Dollfuss and Naziism, 306
Dollfuss Murder, German Co-operation in, 17, 308-9
Dollfuss, Murder of, 307-25
Domingo, 183
Dopolavoro Movement, 209
Dorgères, 169
Dostoevesky, 348
Double Cross, The, 339
Doumergue, 131, 144, 145
Drexler, 15, 37
Drummond, Sir E., 196, 420
Dubarry, 160
Duca, Jon, 359
Duchemin, R., 131
Duff Cooper, 238, 248
Duranty Reports Russia, 431
Duranty, Walter, 261 *passim*
Dzherzhinsky, 466
Dzhugashvili, Ekaterina, 434

Ebert, 50
Eckhardt, 339
Economic Position of Germany, 111
Eden, Anthony, 41, 124, 227, 238, 248, 264-6, 417, 420, 448, 484
Eden, Sir William, 265
Edge, Walter, 142-3
Edinburgh, Duke of, 356
Education, German, 90
Eibel, Captain, 315
Eikhe, R. I., 453, 464
Elections, German, 25
Elena, Queen, 208
Elizabeth of Rumania, Princess, 357
Ellenbogen, 189
Elliot, Walter, 238, 267, 278
England, Ruling Classes in, 230-41
Enver, 403
Epstein, 80
Ernst, Karl, 65, 66, 71
Esperey, F. d', 341
Essad Pasha, 390
European Trends, 424
Evening News, The, 210
Evening Standard, The, 260

Ezhov, 433

Fabre, Emile, 161
Fabry, 154
Faranacci, 191, 209
Fasci di Combattimento, 189
Fascism and Labour, 205
Fascism in England, 278, 281
Fascism in France, 133, 157, 159
Fascism, Policy of Italian, 204-6
Fascism, Rise of, 190
Fascist Party, Secretaries of the Italian, 209
Fascists, British Union of, 283
February 6 in France, 161-3
Feder, 15, 36-7
Federación Anarquista Ibera, 180
Ferdinand of Rumania, King, 356
Fey, Major, 294, 298, 305, 311 et seq., 315-22
Fiedler, 65
Financial Crisis of 1931, English, 256
Financial Crisis of 1935, French, 132
Finer, Dr., 189, 193, 196, 199, 210-1
Finland, 414
Fischer, Louis, 428 *passim*
Fisher, Sir W., 236
Five-Year Plan, The, 438 et seq., 472 *passim*
Flandin, 131, 132, 144, 154
Flanner, Janet, 161, 169, 224
Floyar-Rajchmann, H., 407
Foch, 138, 155
Fodor, M. W., 311
Foreign Affairs, 482
Foreign Policy, British, 260
Foreign Policy, French, 140 et seq.
Foreign Policy, German, 99
Foreign Policy, Russian, 482
France, 128-71
France, Anatole, 123
France in Ferment, 150
François-Marsal, 144
Frank, Dr., 293
Franz Eher & Co., 21
Frauenfeld, 307, 308, 323
Freemasonry in France, 146
Freemasonry in Spain, 181
French Fear of Germany, 137, 140
French Hitler, The, 163
French Psychology, 126
Frick, 27, 38, 78, 89, 90, 108
Fritsch, Von, 97
Front Paysan, 169
Front Populaire, 149, 170
Frot, 150
Führer Prinzip, 42-3
Funder, Dr., 322

Gallagher, 280
Gandhi, 259, 291
Garrigue, Miss Charlotte, 348

H1645-0505

H1645-0506

Garry, 429
Garvin, J. L., 236, 252, 263, 269
Gasset, O. Y., 175, 177
Gauch, 87
Gazeta Polska, 407
Gdynia, 415
Gedye, G. E. R., 297, 313, 376
General strike, Austrian, 298
George, King, 240
George of Greece, King, 357, 397
Georgians, The, 434
Georgiev, V., 378-9
Gerl, Josef, 306
German Republic, Causes of downfall, 46
German Steel Trust, 136
Germany, 13-117
Germany and Jugoslavia, 388
Germany and Russia, 482
Germany, Future policy towards, 103
Gheorgiev, Colonel K., 396
Gibson, Miss, 198
Giolitti, 190, 208
Giovanna of Savoy, Princess, 393
Giunta, 209
Giurati, 209
Gläsl-Horer, Anna, 31
Goebbels, 18, 27, 41, 71, 77 et seq., 83-90, 286
Goebbels, Frau, 20, 83
Goemboes, 333, 339, 341-3
Goering, 18, 27, 42, 62, 72, 73, 79-83, 388
Goering, Frau, 80
Gollancz, Victor, 238
Gorecki, General R., 407
G.P.U., The, 465-8, 481
Grand Fascist Council, 207
Grandi, 214, 222
Graziani, 213
Great Britain and Abyssinia, 221
Great Britain and Italy, 228
Great Contemporaries, 255
Greece, 397
Gringoire, The, 168, 224
Groener, 51
Guerard, Albert, 144-5
Gunther, Frances, 40 *passim*
Guzman, 173

Habicht, 293, 295, 307, 308, 323, 324
Habsburg, Archduke Anton, 362
Habsburg, Dr. Otto, 332 et seq.
Habsburg, ex-Emperor Karl, 333
Habsburg, ex-Empress Zita, 332
Habsburgs, The, 333, 336
Hackett, Francis, 188, 196, 200-1
Hadzidimov, 379
Hailé Selassié, 221, 223
Hailsham, Lord, 266
Hammerstein, Von, 47
Hammond, J. L. and Barbara, 282
Handelsblatt, Amsterdam, 314
Hanfstaengl, 17, 86
Hankey, Sir M., 236, 240
Hard, Bill, 348
Harvey, George, 247
Hawes, Elizabeth, 478
Hayn, 66
Hecht, Ben, 416
Hedvicek, 319
Heiden, 16, 22, 36, 40, 42, 66, 83
Heimwehr, The Austrian, 287, 294-8
Heines, 42, 66, 72-3, 78
Heirs to the Habsburgs, 297
Helene of Greece, Princess, 357
Helldorf, Von, 94
Henderson, Arthur, 238, 255, 275, 281
Henderson, Sir Nevile, 375
Henlein, Konrad, 352
Herald Tribune, The, 314
Herriot, 122, 125, 144, 146 et seq., 255
Hess, 18, 27, 78, 91, 92
Hiedler, Johann Georg, 30
Himmler, 68, 91
Hindenburg, 46, 47, 75, 324
Hindenburg, Oskar von, 48
History, Personal element in, 9
Hitler, 13-43, 52 *passim*
Hitler, Alois, 30
Hitler, Paula, 31
Hitler and Austria, 292, 323
Hitlerism, Industrial support of, 46
Hoare, Sir S., 126, 223, 225, 228, 249, 259, 260, 264
Holzweber, 315, 323
Homosexuality in Germany, 73, 104
Hoover, 121
Horst Wessel, 80, 85
Horthy, Admiral, 334, 338, 340
Hottingeur, 130
Houston, Lady, 254
Hudl, 317, 320-1
Hugenberg, 55, 58, 59
Humanité, 142
Humpel, 316
Hungarian Nationalism, 343
Hungary, 337
Hungary and the Habsburgs, 338
Huxley, Aldous, 175

Iglesias, 183
Ileana of Rumania, Princess, 362
I.M.R.O., 379
Independent Labour Party, The, 274, 280
Industrial Power in France, 133
Inflation, German, 46
Inge, Dean, 227, 238
Inquest on Peace, 225, 269
International Conciliation, 482
Iron Guard, The, 364-5
Irwin, Lord, 259

Italo-Turkish War, Mussolini and the, 192
Italy, 186-217
Italy and Albania, 392
Italy and Jugoslavia, 387
Italy, Austria and Germany, 293
Italy, The King of, 208
Izvestia, 429, 462, 476

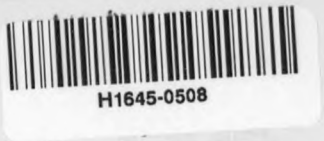
Jackson, J. Hampton, 381
Japan and Russia, 482
Jaurès, 126
Jeans, Sir James, 267
Jedrejewicz, W., 407
Jeritza, 288
Jerrold, Douglas, 232
Jeunesses Patriotes, 167
Jews in Germany, 82
Joffre, 155
Jones, Bettina Shaw, 170
Jorga, Professor Nicolas, 362
Judenkenner, 88
Jugoslavia, 372-89
Jugoslavia and Germany, 388
Jugoslavia and Italy, 387
Jung, Edgar, 66, 106

Kadrówka, 406
Kaganovitch, 430, 433, 448 et seq.
Kahr, Von, 67
Kalinin, 453, 462
Kamal Ataturk, 29, 33, 36, 186, 399-405
Kamenev, 429, 468
Kaplan, Fanny, 467
Karageorgeovitch Family, The, 375
Karolyi, Count Julius, 339
Karwinsky, 313, 318
Kasprzycki, General T., 407, 410
Kellogg Pact, The, 252
Kent, The Duke of, 398
Kerensky, 253
Keynes, J. M., 128, 238
Kings and Dictators, 397
Kipling, Rudyard, 252
Kirov, S. M., 430, 453, 467-9
Klagges, Dietrich, 38
Klausner, 66
Knickerbocker, H. R., 28 *passim*
Knox, Geoffrey, 418
Koc, Colonel Adam, 407
Koerner, General, 303
Koltzoff, M., 476
Konar, 466
Kossior, S., 453, 464
Krausser, Von, 66
Krestinsky, 432
Krupp, 136
Kunze, 307, 320-1

Labour and Armaments, English, 275
Labour Government in England, The, 274
Labour in Spain, 180
Labour in Italy, 190
Lafayette, de, 124
La Lotta di Classi, 188
Lambrino, Zizi, 356
Lansbury, George, 156, 263
Laski, Harold J., 238, 242, 248, 262, 479
Lateran Treaty, The, 195
Latifé Hanum, 404
Lausanne Settlement, The, 147, 403
Laval, 118-27, 229, 264, 417, 448, 484
Laval, José, 123
Law, Bonar, 244, 246, 247
Lawrence, Colonel, 198, 281
Layton, Sir Walter, 238
League of Nations, The, 140, 176, 221, 226, 261, 350, 416-26
Lebrun, 158
Leiter, Levi, 282
Lenin, 274, 427, 428, 432, 436, 450, 470
Leninism, 429, 437, 443, 465, 478
Le Populaire, 156
Lerroux, 179, 182-3
Lester, Sean, 418
Lewis Sinclair, 175
Ley, 27, 94-5
Lindbergh, 24
Lippmann, Walter, 23
Lithuania, 102, 414
Little Entente, The, 344 et seq., 352, 414
Litvinov, 280, 405, 458-61, 484
Litvinov, Madame, 460, 461
Lloyd, Geoffrey, 248
Lloyd George, 190, 225, 238, 246, 266, 268, 443
Lloyd, Lord, 281
Locarno, Treaty of, 141, 252, 261
Lockhart, Bruce, 459
Londonderry, Lord, 249
Longworth, Clara, 124
Los Rios, de, 178
Lothian, Lord, 262
Low, David, 238
Low, Sir Sidney, 460
Lubbe, Van der, 59-64
Ludwig, Emil, 195, 196, 200, 208, 381
Lupescu, Magda, 355 et seq.
Luquet, 129
Lutgebrune, 67
Lutze, 71, 94
Lyautey, 164, 167

Macdonald, G. B., 243
MacDonald, Jimmie, 255
MacDonald, J. Ramsay, 147, 227, 235, 251, 254-9, 274
MacDonald, Malcolm, 250
Mackensen, Von, 68
Madariaga, Don S. de, 175, 420
McPherson, Aimée Semple, 42

H1645-0507


H1645-0508

Malet, E., 130
Maltoni, Rosa, 187
Manchester Guardian, The, 71, 175, 214, 219, 278, 311
Mandel, 153
Maniu, 357, 360, 365-9
Manolescu, Colonel, 368
Marañon, 173, 175
March, 183
March on Rome, The, 191
Marek, 310
Maria of Italy, Princess, 335
Marie of Rumania, Queen, 356, 363, 372
Marina, Princess, 398
Marinetti, 219
Marquet, 157
Marxism in Spain, 180
Marxist Vote in Germany, 25
Masaryk, President, 197, 345 et seq., 418
Masaryk, Jan, 348
Matchek, 366, 377, 386
Matsoaka, 269
Matteotti, 191, 276
Matzelsberger, Franziska, 31
Maud'huy, De, 165
Maurras, 167
Maxton, J., 280
Mein Kampf, 19, 21, 22, 23, 42, 45, 94, 103, 292
Meissner, 48
Memel, 101, 415
Mencken, H. L., 175
Menzhinsky, 446, 466
Mestrovic, 348
Mezhlauk, V. I., 465, 473
Michael of Rumania, King, 357, 373
Miedzinski, B., 407
Mihailov, I., 379
Miklas, President, 303, 318
Mikoyan, 450, 464
Millerand, 144
Mirabaud, Paul, 130
Mirabaud, Pierre, 130
Mircea, 357
Mirsky, 274
Mohrenschild, 65
Molotov, 441, 448, 450, 452, 462-3
Moret, C., 129, 132
Morning Post, The, 223
Morrison, Herbert, 276-7
Moscicki, I., 412
Mosley, 248, 281-4
Mowrer, E. A., 43, 126, 127, 418, 425
Müller, Ludwig, 22, 97
Munich Revolution, 37
Mussolini, 33, 36, 40, 124, 186-229, 264, 293, 323, 328, 388, 392
Mussolini, Alessandro, 187
Mussolini, Arnaldo, 193-4
Mussolini, Donna, 193
Mussolini, Edda, 194
Mussolini, Romano, 215
Mussolini's Italy, 189
Mustafa Kemal, *see* Kamal Ataturk

Nation, The, 466
National Government, The English, 256
Necker, 130
Neoslabny, 455
Neo-Socialists in France, 157
N.E.P., 438
Neudeck, 48-9
Neuflize, De, 130
Neurath, Von, 79, 104-5
Neustädter-Stürmer, 316 et seq.
New Bases of Racial Research, 87
New Leader, The, 225
New Republic, The, 220, 439
New Life, The, 459
New Statesman, The, 160, 231, 270, 275
New York Times, The, 313
News Chronicle, 25, 276
Nicholas of Rumania, Prince, 361
Nikolaiev, L., 467-8
Noli, Monsignor Fan, 391
Norman, Montague, 240, 271-3
Not to be Repeated, 152, 451
N.S.D.A.P. Foundation, 37
Nypels, George, 197, 314

Oberfohren, 61
Observer, The, 252
Occupation of the Factories in Italy, The, 190
October Revolution, The, 439
Oganok, 476
Olga, Princess, 376
On England, 235, 253
Ordzhonikidze, 450, 453, 463
Ormsby-Gore, 238
Ortega y Gasset, 175, 177
Opera, German, 85
Osinski, V. V., 465, 473
Oxford, Lady, 251
Oxford, Lord, 234

Pacific Character of French, 137
Paderewski, 148, 413
Paganism in Germany, 22
Painlevé, 120, 122
Papen, Von, 46, 47, 51-3, 55, 56, 67, 106-8, 323, 330, 331
Parmoor, Lord, 277
Parrott, 372
Paul-Boncour, 125, 144, 151-2
Paul of Jugoslavia, Prince, 373, 376-8
Pavone, 213
Peace Ballot, The, 227
Peace, Forces making for, 423
Perovitch, I., 377 et seq.

Pétain, 141, 156
Peter II of Jugoslavia, King, 372-6
Pieracki, 380
Pietri, 154
Pilsudski, 29, 33, 35, 406-12
Pilsudski, Jadwiga, 410
Pilsudski, Wanda, 410
Planetta, Otto, 319, 323
Plebiscites, German, 25
Poelzl, Klara, 31
Poincaré, 120, 121, 123, 133, 146
Poland, 406-15
Polish Corridor, The, 415
Politburo, Members of the, 450
Political Parties, French, 145
Politics and Religion, German, 35
Pollitt, H., 280
Polska Organizacja Wojskowa, 406
Pommer, Josee, 29
Popolo d'Italia, 189 *passim*
Popov, 61-3
Postyshev, P. P., 464
Poulenc, C., 131
Pravda, 429, 435, 472, 477
Precup, Colonel V., 360
Prelestnikov, 455
Pressard, 150, 160
Press in France, The, 142
Press, Control of the German, 86
Price, Ward, 223
Prince, Dr., 161
Probst, 66
Pro-German Influences in England, 261
Propaganda, Nazi, 84
Proust, Marcel, 260
Prussian Social Democrats, 52
Prystor, Colonel B., 407
Pujo, Maurice, 167
Putsch, Failure of Austrian, 323

Radek, K. B., 429, 446, 464, 481-2
Raditch, 383
Rathenau, 342
Raupel, Angela, 31
Ravag, 309 et seq., 312, 322
Reading, Lord, 23
Real Stanley Baldwin, The, 244
Rearmament, German, 96
Red Week, 189
Reed, Douglas, 57
Reichert, Von, 342
Reichspost, The, 300, 322
Reichstag, Dissolution of the, 50
Reichstag Trial, The, 57, 61-4
Reichswehr, 26, 65, 70-1, 98
Reinhardt, Max, 325
Reith, Sir John, 270
Religious Issue in France, 145
Renner, Dr., 291, 303
Renoult, 160
Rentenmark, 114
Revolution in a Police State, 26
Rheinmetall, 136
Ribbentrop, Von, 18, 105, 330
Rickett, F. W., 220
Rieth, Dr., 317 et seq.
Rintelen, Von, 107, 307, 310 et seq., 321, 322, 324-5
Ripoldi, 324
Rist, C., 129
Rivera, Primo de, 173
Robles, 179, 184-5
Robotnik, 409
Roehm, 18, 40, 66-74
Romanones, 173
Roosevelt, F. D., 124
Rosenberg, 78, 90, 108-11, 122
Rossoni, 210
Rothermere, Lord, 101, 235, 284
Rothschild, A. de, 130
Rothschild, E. de, 130
Roustemi, Aveni, 391
Royalists, French, 167
Rudiger, 328
Rudzutak, Y. E., 452, 464
Rumania, 355-71
Russell, Bertrand, 9, 186, 424, 485
Russia, 427-85
Russia, Advances in, 471
Russia and America, 483
Russia and Germany, 482
Russia and Japan, 482
Russia, Chief Men in, 480
Russia, Hitler's enmity to, 102
Russian Cabinet Ministers, 452
Russian Characteristics, 470
Russian Ministers' Wives, 461
Russian Railways, 454
Russia's Iron Age, 429
Rust, 90
Rydz-Smigly, General E., 407, 411
Rykov, 443, 462

Saar, The, 418
Salter, Sir Arthur, 238
SA, The, 37, 65, 69, 92
Samuel, Sir Herbert, 268
Sanctions, 225-29, 263
Sander, 73
Sarateanu, 368
Sarfatti, Margherita, 195
Sarraut, 144, 152
Sarte, Real Del, 167
Saturday Review, The, 254
Saveanu, Madame, 361
Schacht, 18, 27, 78, 110, 112-7, 272
Schaub, 24
Scheffer, Paul, 436
Schicklgruber, Maria Anna, 30
Schlamperei, 285

H1645-0509

Schleicher, Von, 48, 51, 53, 55, 67, 73
Schleicher, Frau von, 67, 73
Schmidt, Theresa, 33
Schmidt, Willi, 67
Schneider, E., 129, 134
Schneider et Cie, 131, 134
Schneidhuber, 66
Schober, 286, 290
Schreck, 24
Schroeder, Von, 55, 106, 116
Schuschnigg, Frau, 327
Schuschnigg, K. von, 29, 318, 320, 323, 326 et seq., 336
Schutzbund, 287, 296
Seeckt, Von, 51
Seignobos, 138
Seipel, Monsignor Ignaz, 289, 296, 300, 326
Seis Dedos, 178
Seitz, Karl, 304
Seldes, George, 203
Servent, 129
Shaw, Bernard, 263, 443
Shirach, Von, 94
Shkvarkin, V. V., 476
Siegfried, A., 144, 154
Siemens, Von, 116
Sikorski, General, 408
Simon, Sir John, 249, 265, 268-70
Simonds, Frank H., 41
Sinclair, Upton, 175
Skoda, 136
Slawer, Colonel V., 407, 411
Slocombe, George, 197
Smith, F. E., 243
Smuts, General, 228
Snowden, Philip, 152, 254, 269, 272
Socialism and the National Question, 435
Socialism in England, 274
Socialism Victorious, 441
Socialist Revolution in Austria, 296
Solidarité Française, 167
Sonnemann, Emmy, 80
Soviet Economy, The basis of, 474
Sovietism, Changes in, 477
Soviet System, Stalin's Definition of the, 478
Soznkowski, General Jan, 407, 411
Spain, 172-85
Spectator, The, 409
SS in Austria, The, 307
SS in Germany, The, 71, 92
Staendische Front, 294
Stalin, 29, 33, 36, 125, 170, 194, 207, 402, 409, 427-49, 450-69, 478-9
Stalin, Madame, 446
Stambolisky, 384, 396
Stamp, Sir Josiah, 238
Stankovitch, R., 377 et seq.
Stanley, Oliver, 268
Starace, 208 et seq.
Starhemberg, Countess Franziska, 328
Starhemberg, Prince, 282, 294, 305, 326, 327 et seq., 336
Starhemberg - Schuschnigg Dictatorship, The, 329
Stavisky, 159-61
Steed, Wickham, 242, 244, 247, 248, 252
Steeg, 144
Steel Trust, The German, 108
Stekel, Dr. W., 33-6, 202-3, 380-1
Stelescu, 365
Sterilisation in Germany, 82
Stewart, Lady Maureen, 268
Stirbey, Prince, 356 et seq.
Stoyadinovitch, Dr., 389
Strachey, John, 283
Strachey, Lytton, 138
Strasser, 15, 18, 40, 53-4, 67
Streicher, Julius, 15, 78, 93-4, 283
Stresa, 125, 140
Stresemann, 100, 139, 141
Strong, Anna Louise, 439
Stürmer, Der, 93
Sturmscharen, 306
Sun, The New York, 223
Sunday, Billy, 42
Sunday Express, The, 231, 249
Suvitch, 214, 295
Swing, R. G., 46

Talaat, 403
Tanev, 61, 63
Tardieu, 121, 144, 152
Terror in Russia, The, 431, 465
Terror of June 30, 66
Teruzzi, 213
Tewfik Aras, Dr., 404
Thomas, J. H., 283
Thomé, 161
Thompson, Dorothy, 21, 41, 115-6, 122, 217
Thorez, 171
Thyssen, 46
Time, 84, 93
Times, The, 73, 198, 227, 236, 238, 239, 244, 418
Tirana, Treaty of, 392
Titulescu, Nicolai, 360, 369, 370
Tomalevsky, 379
Tolstoy, 347
Tomsky, 429, 462
Torgler, 61
Torlonia, Prince, 193
Totalitarian System, The, 206
Toynbee, 403
Trade Unions, British, 279
Trevelyan, G. M., 233, 260
Treviranus, 74-5
Trotsky, 45, 199, 201, 258, 425, 432, 435-9, 457

H1645-0510

T.U.C., 279
Turati, 209
Turkey, 399-405
Turkey, Foreign Policy of, 404
Turkey, Reforms in, 400
Turkish Words, Changes in, 399
Tyrell, Lord, 239
Tzankov, Professor, 396
Tzena Bey, 391

Uhl, 66
Ujedinjenje Ili Smrt, 385
Umberto, Prince, 211
Unamono, 175, 183
Unger, Madame, 342
Union Européenne, 136
Unión General de Trabajadores, 180
Union Nationale, 145
Union Nationale des Combattants, 167
Union of Democratic Control, The, 137
United Front in France, The, 169
U.S.S.R., 436

Vahydu'd-Din, Prince, 401
Vaida, M., 369
Vajo, Del, 175
Vansittart, Sir R., 236, 260
Vaterlaendische Front, 294
Veltchev, Colonel D., 396
Venizelos, 354, 398
Vergin, Fedor, 383
Vernes, F., 130
Versailles, The Treaty of, 14 *passim*, 421
Victoria, Queen, 356
Vienna and Hinterland, 287
Viennese Socialism, 287
Vittorio Emanuele, King, 208
Vogler, 116
Vogüe, De, 131
Voigt, F. A., 41, 198
Voroshilov, 448, 450, 453, 456-8, 467, 469

Wages in Germany, 112
Wales, Prince of, 281, 361
Walwal, 222
War, Forces making for, 422
War, Hitlerism and, 101
Warwick, The Countess of, 265
Webb, Sidney, 268
Weil, D., 130
Wells, H. G., 175, 267, 281, 430, 442-4
Wendel, F. De, 131, 132, 134, 165
Werner, 314
Werth, A., 122, 150, 157, 160, 163
Weygand, 154-6, 167
White Hand, The, 386
White Terror, The, 340
Wiener Zeitung, 308
Wilhelm II, Kaiser, 104
Wilson, Woodrow, 262, 347, 381, 413, 416
Wise, Frank, 470
World Revolution, 485
Wrabel, Major, 310, 320

Yagoda, G. G., 466
Yakovleva, Madame, 461
Ybarnégary, 167
Yenukidze, 468
Yudenitch, 436

Zaharoff, 136
Zamora, 173-5, 185
Zehner, General, 317
Zhdanov, A. A., 433, 453, 465
Ziegler, 80
Zinoviev, 429, 437, 468
Zivkovitch, General, 385
Zog of Albania, King, 390 et seq.
Zographos, 168
Zoug Didi, Miriana, 390
Zubeida, 402
Zuckerkandl, Dr., 402
Zyndram-Koscialkowski, M., 407, 412

H1645-0511

H1645-0512

12-1645

H1645-0513

H1645-0514

Frick Exhibit No. 12 H.C

Original Document Frick No. 39

"Vorgelegt von der Verteidiger"
des Angeklagten Frick
Rechtsanwalt

"Inside Europe" Filed pidgeon hole
H C